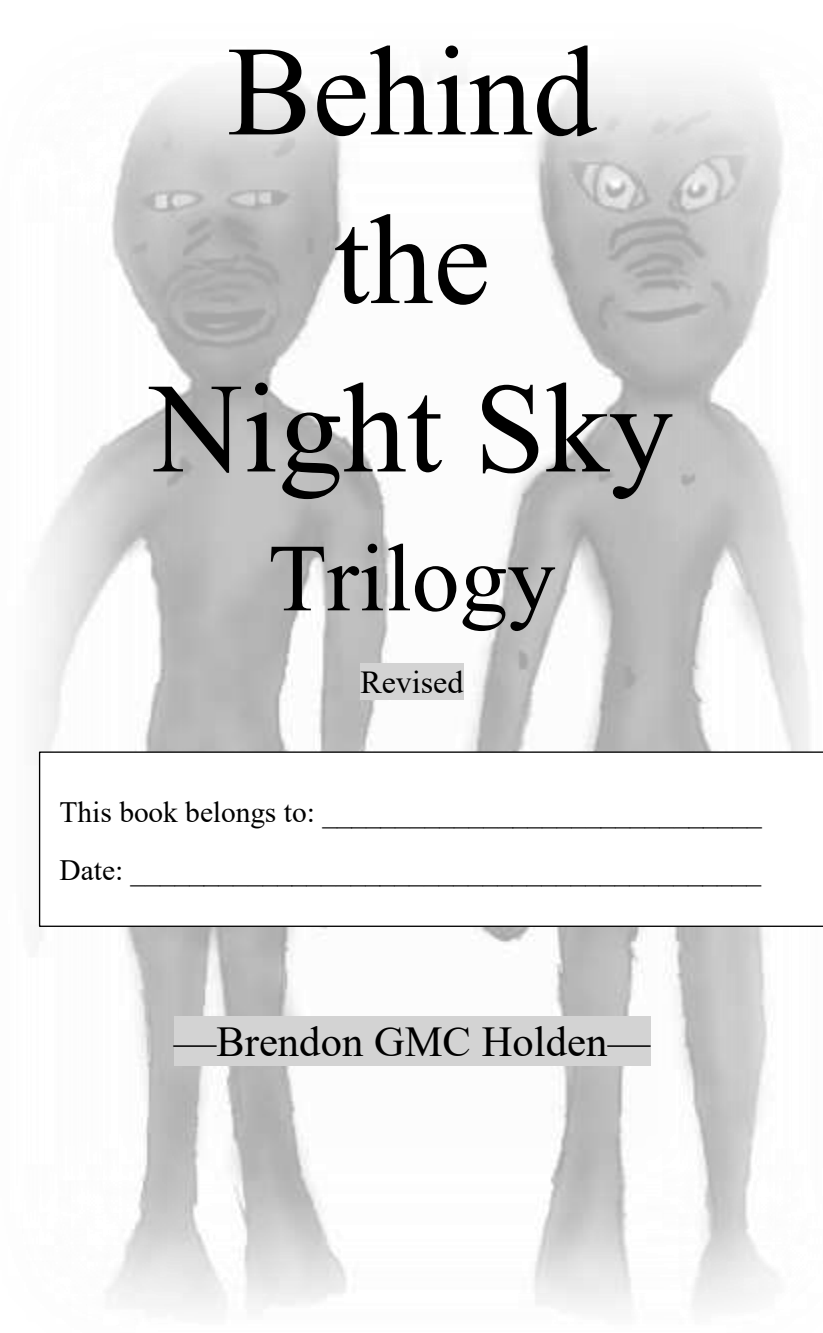


Behind the Night Sky



Trilogy



Behind the Night Sky Trilogy

Revised

This book belongs to: _____

Date: _____

—Brendon GMC Holden—

Introduction

Behind the Night Sky is fiction

Behind the Night Sky is fiction based on real possibilities. As Brendon once had said and or written, “quantum possibilities are very real possibilities,” besides this the book is entirely fiction; claim anything else is and can be sort of ridiculous. The truth is and having so much of it; to use the privilege of *free speech*, to explore outside the truth — I will state *Behind the Night Sky* is based on possibilities but besides this the book is fiction.

BTNS Insert 1

Behind the Night Sky exert, or rather insert. This should go somewhere in the beginning of the trilogy edition maybe, even if it might be a regular trilogy edition. But it it's like.

Dear reader, when reading this marvelous book *Behind the Night Sky*, think and read from the perspective of a complete universe, and consider evolution in the universe. Consider the enemy, the word enemy and or evil, in front and use understanding. And not just an enemy, but a question, and not just a question but a search. *In perfection a question, in perfection!* This now our minds in evolution, not perfection, but imperfection striving to reach a type of perfection. Now stroll back to all as perfect, it's perfect. So now jump out of perfect and go search. And search...

2.) The universe had asked the question.

3.) Can the universe ask a question?

4.) Maybe, most likely not because it's perfect. But is a question in the universe perfect?

5.) Yes!!

6.) In the question some beings came into evolution in perfection and found one of the stars that had evolved that had covered itself, it was perfect, it was producing energy for a perfect universe. So, this is a slip up in an evolution of perfection: *they thought they got to perfection and then let go of perfection back into evolution.*

7.) They open a star, gathered a couple rocks from the neighboring, giant computer which is this guy's personal computer PBR. And so, in that giant computer system they opened one of the stars that was capturing the energy and producing energy to keep everything running perfectly. They open one up, put a couple rocks together some of which creatures were already living in perfection. So, this is a situation where it is perfect and then suddenly, they are all launched out into this scene where things begin rapidly growing and evolving, trying to find out what had happened, why do they feel threatened, why are objects out of place and what is the burning lamp high above us.

8.) Why are we not perfect anymore?

9.) So, one of the suns opens, you know, and this was billions of years ago. This goes into the story with Tronne, [*Tronne would be the name of the city before ORION; they came out asking the question to why the universe.*]

10.) Their superiors, you know, and how they got their power...

11.) Had they evolved to get their power? Or were they just given their powers?

12.) So, the entire storyline behind this is fictional, this about evolution, which is possibly even a true idea, in the question, you know, how... how we came to be, whether it was evolution of perfection end of the story, or perfection at start, this we still don't know.

13.) And we might never know because perfection needs evolution and evolution must gain perfection.

14.) So, the two ideas work hand in hand.

15.) So, they open the sun, everything starts growing on earth and roundabouts.

16.) So originally this was not the home of the people that were born here. And this is a good thing to remember when reading the story, because the story will inspire your mind as it inspired mine to not only write it but continue thinking about what-is-what.

17.) And so, I mean if something comes up and speaks, you know in, in the fiction story, you know that you are not part of the Earth. *What does that mean to not be part of the Earth?*

18.) There were, there were chunks of rock that were imperfect, that are now evolving, that that, you know, certain creatures didn't belong to certain rocks, giant rocks, large rocks. It is like, you know, for instance, if the moon and Jupiter's moons kind of came together, I mean, they're different creatures, you know, they're different creatures that live there, but you know, all bottled up, smashed together under the sun, we make you know a new type of evolving type creature and once arrived in perfection, I mean it's pretty much a whole new type of thing.

19.) So, there is those ideas that there, that this, the earth is literally the home of something that was on these rocks and their children's children would know that anybody that was born on these rocks is just not going to be part of these, of some of those rocks. But they can evolve into it, you know, into perfection and in some way, some way they can evolve in it, you know, to have had that experience; to deny the experience would be wrong.

20.) So, they evolved in a direction somehow, but it was not their, the newborns, it was not their home. It might have been somebody's home. Some of them, you know; say some of the apes came together and had children, it might be their home, but it might not be... um, you know, so it it's not the people's home that came out of Tronne. The city of Tronne, you know, and if they had kids, maybe the monkeys. If the monkeys mated with a god, it is possible they were children, but still in evolution, to grow up to perfection, to make it all one, the history was...it was not the home of some of the gods that came here, which is embarrassing and insulting. But you know, that's how the story goes in perfection. *Yes, it's everybody's home, but when we come down to the evolving facts it was not, you know, it might have been the monkey's home, but the evolving humans mixing with them or even the gods of the planet, it was not in the beginnings their home!*

21.) It was not in the beginning necessarily their home, I mean even looking back in history, you have the dinosaurs, and you have the apes and then you have you know what I mean... This idea is that some people came from the stars that are more human than and more alive and more planet-like than these creatures.

22.) So, I mean even some of the ancient references in this fiction story. I mean if you look back on the ancient references, I mean look it appears this is their home, and you know you go to these ancient references and you and you start feeling like an alien and a foreigner and the fact is, the truth and the fiction story is evolution. This is that it was not their home, but they are most likely in perfection for having a question, you know too where we are going, we must answer this you know to how this came to be.

23.) You know but, in the truth, the written truth is it wasn't but then again... they were already perfect beforehand and so were we all. But you know it's just not you know there's some history to it and it can be a little bit bitter in thought, but you know, I mean the best bet with this is kind of just to, you know, in my mind, just to evolve with the understanding and the knowledge, *it's kind of a sacred knowledge in a sense*. It's a peaceful knowledge. It's a way to bring, you know, both the wild creatures and the god's kind of in a household that is more perfect than you know fighting and feuding, it's peaceful because without there's a bit of rage and jealousy when it comes to the wildlife in my eyes, you know, you find one of these natural... um wonders, these creatures in the world and you just kind of want to be that, you want to live in their home, you want to spend time in their forest, you want to walk their path and there is... it's not a reality that you know you just take their seat and kill them and push them off the earth. It's just not... It might have been away for a moment, it might have been something like that, but it's not really a good way to go about establishing peace.

24.) I feel peace in my heart just knowing that we can, you know have them alive. You know and look, you know, have gardens, public gardens that we can walk through. We both participate! Whether it's the wild and the gods and we just we make peace that way to make kind of almost a giant museum in a sense, where you know, you have the wild kingdom, which we don't enter and then there's the cities of the gods and they, the animals might not enter.

25.) But yeah, we can have a nice park where we can get together or a nice, you know, museum type setting, kind of drama. You know like *Jumanji* and or *Jurassic Park* where we come together and kind of exist to rest and give one another gifts and in the most loving manner; you know with power and stuff over us to make sure everything's safe, try to read from this perspective when it comes to, because, like I wrote in the book *Behind the Night Sky*, it is fiction, but it's based upon possibilities that have yet to be proven as fact. I hope you enjoyed reading it.

Playful Laws

How to rest, to play, to work according to the human schedule and be successful?
Laws can give life, yet they also may kill.

Behind the Night Sky Kids Clubs, a sustainable economic idea!
Savings account and gaining 0.17% interest.

- A Given lot of riches:

To get \$68,000.00 per year in Savings in interest at 0.17% we would need
 $40,000,000 \times .0017 = 68,000$

\$68,000 per year with \$40,000,000.00 in the bank!

So, the idea here is to prove to the bank we are worthy of \$40,000,000.00 each:
 $\$40,000,000.00 - \$40,000,000.00 = \text{Economy}$

We borrowed the money therefore we have an economy, {borrowed meaning minus.}

Yet, as the money stays in the bank, we each roughly get \$68,000.00 per year of which we can pay \$10.00 per day to one of the Behind the Night Sky Kids Clubs to work, to eat, to sleep, to play on the computer, {sounds like a club of millionaires, does it not?}

The first couple of years in training most of what you get per year is saved in your personal bank account, this to buy a land-lot.

This is where SSI becomes a \$100,000.00 land-lot and \$68,000.00 per year, this to spend as you please!

- Behind the Night Sky Kids Club:

A Behind the Night Sky Kids Club is anyone, like gas stations, stores, malls, anyone who would like to facilitate, a few beds, a play area, computers, cheap food, and smokes, this for a club member to pay \$10.00 per day or \$300.00 per month, \$3,600.00 per year to eat, drink, smoke, sleep, and work on their career, {an extended family.} A cyber cafe, musical instruments, people, and a good time, almost soup kitchen style. Travel the country and never have to leave the workplace!

A Behind the Night Sky Kids Club should have the Behind the Night Sky Trilogy Kids Club Edition, this for its members to grasp gravity in the club, for inspiration and direction in doings.

- Owning a bank:

This is where you come in — in the beginnings of the buildings of the clubs, we need a voice to ask government to ask the banks; ultimately it is up to them: *do they believe we are an economy, that the idea will live, a sustainable economy? We must ask the bank to freely give us \$40,000,000.00 each!!!*

[This proof to the bank might just be what the actual clubs of the millionaires do, and these hoops we/they must jump through are the proof to the bank per se., that they are an economy, that they are worth the money, millions of dollars! Yet maybe not! Let us check?]

We could create our own currency, yet the bar to be is needed!

Find your part Behind the Night Sky! ...for we all may be millionaires if we do our part!

Behind the Night Sky

Trilogy

Revised

—Brendon G.M.C. Holden—

Three books in one:
Finding Run Personal Computer PBR
Clutter in my Closet
ION

GMC Drawings by Brendon Publishing, thus Self-Published (2024)

Full Theater Script on the inside

Over 60 hidden Illustrations, and hidden works of music.

Art and Sheet music © 2020, 2021, 2022, 2023 by Brendon Holden

This book is slightly altered from the original prints; thus, it is revised.

Copyright © 2021, 2022, 2023, 2024

Brendon GMC Holden

All rights reserved.

First Original Prints were self-published through:

Blurb, INC.

600 California Street

11th Floor

San Francisco, CA 94108

The division of this book into verses is simply because it is smart, technical, and this makes it structured, finding and remembering important parts easily. This book is not to be compared with those that have used verse numbers before me, this story is what I know of as fiction, an untrue story I made it up; knowing this I believe reading in this context with the amount of structure can make truth readings that much more fun to read. A practice book, a play book, a book that can make “thinking out of the box fun”. The NOTES¹ in the back of the book are not to be taken complete but rather an unfinished ongoing conversation, purposely left unfinished.

No part of this book may be used commercially, sold, or re-produced for the intent of money without written consent from the author.

Printed in the USA

¹The note section at the back of the book ought to be blank, sorry I got carried away; use plain paper as bookmarks if needed and or write on the back of some of the blank pages.

About the 1st book

Maple could not comprehend the earth, what is it, where did it come from? With the help of her new friends Max, Bam, Brenda, Alice, and Brendon she uncovers the knowledge of all things, hidden by the earth. An untrue story told by Brendon Holden as the main character Maple.

About the 2nd book

Jill is an average young girl, or at least she thinks she is, never recalling the pain she buried deep inside, presenting herself to be flawless.

During a pandemic, she helps some of her newer friends escape the sickness happening on the outside world—and in doing so she uncovers some new things about the new mansion her family just moved into.

Bizarre things begin to take place within the mansion, including traveling to other realms within the closets—of the mansion; some she goes on by herself and some her friends experience with her. On one of these journeys, she meets a critter named Clutter that begins to threaten her and her friends, saying, “I will burn down your house.”

She, her siblings, and friends must stop Clutter and save their fortune—to have a family and normal life once again.

Clutter in my Closet is fictitious and not to be taken in any other way. I was inspired to write this story based on small experiences that I personally experienced that I never could quite put into words—to share them with friends. An example of that would be Clutter creating gas in the closets—causing the children to behave in ways not common to their normal behaviors. I have had such an experience and wondered, *what was the cause of such strangeness?* Although it was not as apparent as it is in this story, it was enough to make me wonder how I would put that into words!

About the 3rd book

Geoffrey is an average young adult: cars, school, business and making life work. He recently purchased a home, financed by his small business: *a gas/candy stop*.

Geoff being over excited about his new purchase invites some of his friends—from his younger years to visit.

While they are there, they decide to do something new, something that only children would do—and this is to—explore the world of make believe, this Geoffrey calls the ancient quantum system, tying into Brendon’s written book, *The game*. As they explore, they find a game show, there they win thirty thousand dollars, exciting all five friends.

Months go by the five friends play, as they play in the ancient system, most of the five friends that had visited Geoffrey’s home that fall day—begin to experience negativity, mostly from reading paranormal writings that appear on a bridge wall, one of which effects Geoffrey’s mind to a point of a psychotic psychosis.

Are we on the earth, their minds scream—creating reason, asking many questions. Geoffrey must fix this error to save him and his friends.

Is this the end of Geoffrey, his mind and his friends or will the five friends find a way out of ION?

Written by the author of *Behind the Night Sky*, Brendon Holden, making ION the third book to *The Behind the Night Sky Trilogy*.

If you would like to contact the author, Brendon G.M.C. Holden, one can write me here:

Drawings by Brendon

P.O. Box 175

Lyndon, Vermont 05849

www.drawingsbybrendon.com

Table of Contents

<i>Finding Run Personal Computer PBR</i>	11
<i>Life in 1999</i>	13
<i>An open door</i>	37
<i>Reality</i>	55
<i>Do I love</i>	67
<i>An honest marriage</i>	79
<i>Self-discovery</i>	89
<i>What is the Earth?</i>	99
<i>The child, the question.</i>	117
<i>The revelation</i>	127
<i>Life behind the Night Sky</i>	141
<i>Clutter in my Closet</i>	149
<i>The Mansion down the street</i>	151
<i>Dad's Big Buy</i>	163
<i>Making Home</i>	177
<i>Extra Space</i>	191
<i>Empty space making space</i>	207
<i>Lost in a closet.</i>	221
<i>Clutter/Buried Trash?</i>	235
<i>Clutter must be stopped</i>	247
<i>We must save the house, we must stop clutter.</i>	259
<i>The root to us</i>	269
<i>Where are my parents?</i>	279
<i>Ms. Rug Hug</i>	289
<i>ION</i>	293

<i>Game Show</i>	295
<i>Blind Rhyme</i>	307
<i>Cut it out Geoff</i>	315
<i>Matthew reads loss</i>	329
<i>Running Geoff</i>	341
<i>ION</i>	349
<i>ION Lunatic Break</i>	357
<i>My TV?</i>	367
<i>What could this be, a baby?</i>	373
<i>Life Behind the Night Sky</i>	381
<i>PBR Theater Script</i>	399
<i>Act 1</i>	407
<i>Scene 01</i>	409
<i>Scene 02</i>	419
<i>Scene 03</i>	423
<i>Scene 04</i>	427
<i>Act 2</i>	433
<i>Scene 05</i>	435
<i>Scene 06</i>	438
<i>Scene 07</i>	443
<i>Scene 08</i>	449
<i>Scene 09</i>	453
<i>Scene 10</i>	457
NOTES	463





Behind the Night Sky
Finding Run Personal Computer PBR

Holden

Chapter 1



Life in 1999

Life in 1999

Chapter 1

"I need to know! I need to know, but I am too young to know, how do I understand my surroundings—if one word can have several meanings? I must find the knowledge of all things, and I did!"

...This is my journey, my journey finding: Run Personal Computer PBR."

—Maple Jess Bark

When I was young, about twelve, I started *Northdale Middle School*, my mom and dad, had just bought a small house in a small town, so that—my dad could work at a paper mill; according to him jobs were hard to find, and not only hard to find, but if one job was unfair—life demanded that one is, and one was, expected to stick with. This would shape you, and your family, whether for good or for bad.

2. His job at this new and researched job was to apply the glue to the paper—while it was still in dough form; this would, if *pressed and let to dry* make sheets of paper. He did not get paid very much, but it held the family together...and most importantly it gave my father the hope, and his *Firm Demand*, for his child to have a better life, and much deserved education.

3. The beginning of exploring knowledge in my youth was the year *nineteen eighty eight*, this was the same year that we moved, and I was given a strong lecture, after my father's breakdown, and after my mother exposed her ability to abandon all, and I was forced into a new school; the same year I began to go to *Northdale-Middle-School*, the year nineteen eighty eight...the year I started the eighth grade, and had high hopes, because I would be on *TOP* of the younger kids. Us being all crunched into one environment normally, now I would be without the oppressive nature of the older kids—that might have insulted my growth in leadership; those were in a separate school, in a separate town named, *West Dale*, and the yet to be explored similar name, *West Dale High School*.

4. My first day of school was exciting, I felt amazingly comfortable, and the food was exceptionally good!

5. As I was comfortably sitting in the cafeteria, eating pizza, and drinking chocolate milk—I met another boy at the lunch table, a boy named Bam.

6. He walked over as if he were new in the school and did not know “what was what,” and wanted to know if he could eat with me. He seemed very shy, and I being shy myself was happy to welcome him; he was a little taller than me, five foot in height, slender build, but he had purposely glorified black-hair and brown-eyes, compared to my stunning, trance like, dark-gloriously-sparkly-lit-ocean-blue-eyes and dirty-brown-hair. I felt a bit insecure about myself...he was an impressive guy to look at, I had to wonder why he was acting out of character...

7. As we ate our lunch together, he mentioned that he had been attending this school since the fifth grade, but at that time, it was not in the same building, it was in temporary trailers; this was due to the school needing more space. I could visually get a sense, *as if I were there myself*, of the cramped environment, and uncomfortable feelings of being out of place.

8. As Bam explained, I picked up on a quiet little laugh that Bam exposed, as if he never passed the fifth, sixth, or possibly even the seventh grade. For fifth and sixth grade, Bam was forced to school in temporary trailers, called mini classes; mini meaning lack of a normal school classroom.

9. As the conversation continued, I explained to Bam: my family has just moved to the area, and it was my first year at *Northdale Middle School*, that my old school was bigger, and not only bigger, but it was attached to a high school. Because of the maturity of the older teens, the food was lacking taste, but not only lacking, but the lack messed with my mind, as if the authority of the older children, and the principle—were denied the lack of a privilege of a good taste, and they passed that down to the rest of the students.

10. Bam thought that was funny, we got along well, and slowly became good friends.

11. Eighth grade quickly, and when I say quickly, *I mean quickly* came to an end, as if my authority to express my creativity over the younger kids gave TIME—the right to skip school. What

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

I do remember was: going on field trips, class trips, school dances and at the end of the year we took a big trip, this trip was to New York State, to a theme/waterpark. We, the eighth grade-class, spent two days there to express our growth out of Middle School, and into the future *West Dale High School*. My favorite part of the end of the year School trip, was the hotel; I rarely, if ever get a hotel room because of my dad's income, but I would enjoy this one, because it had a swimming pool, gaming hall, and the liberty of becoming a young adult!

12. I vividly remember, as I was freely exploring the water/theme park, how happy I was, to graduate from eighth grade, and to be moving on to High School.

13. At some point in my exploration of the theme/waterpark, as I was gaining education—that I purposely, and slowly tried to grasp in my hand—which were things like: how do I read the park maps, park maps that were posted throughout the theme/waterpark, and how do I express my sense of belonging in public places...well, Bam and I met some new friends, some I introduced to Bam, and some Bam introduced to me.

14. At some point while we were talking to some of our new friends, a young girl named Lizzy, expressed verbally, “in the new high school we are going to: *West Dale High School*, it is going to be a challenge, this is one of the *Top* schools in the country, all the teachers believe computers will be the future!”

15. Bam and I laughed it off, we did not take much out of it; we with similar minds, thought—if computers were going to be the future, then why are they not everywhere! Now that I am older and wiser, I was wrong about computers; that is what *West Dale High School*, the school we are going to be going to, would correct...the ignorance of our youth, and prepare us for the future of technology, and the evolution of humanity!

Life in 1999 2

The summers before the first day of high school was something to talk about, especially at the end of summer. I quickly, energetically, ran around, verbally expressing my happiness around town... “I go to the beach a lot,” I would

say.

2. Bam did not live far from where I lived; his mom owned a little country store in her house, they lived about a mile from the beach; I was always in there—financially growing her business!

3. On one of those days—that summer, I would disregard the amount of money one could spend publicly; I walked to Bam’s house, bought ten bags of chips from his mom’s store, and walked to the beach.

4. That summer and especially this day it was all about meeting people, and we met a lot. On this day, one of these people we met was a sheriff of a nearby town, he owned a beach house on the lake, and was very friendly with us. He offered to take us boating. We quickly said yes, went, but this boating trip was not just a boating trip, it was a boating trip with a tube tied to the back. Bam and I would get on the tube while the sheriff pulled us around...this boat was a fast boat, and us being tied on to the back, he would pull us around; we would go speeds of up to twenty to thirty miles an hour, the *sheriff* called it tubing.

5. “Paul,” I said to the sheriff, that was is name, Paul, “if you get board in the winter, try tying a sled to the back of a snow machine, it’s as much fun as tubing.”

6. “My son would love to do that I will mention it to him. Thank you, Maple,” Paul says.

7. After our tubing adventures we had a campfire, ate hamburgers, and took a late-night walk.

8. Soon I realized I must walk back home, so I began walking back home. Reflecting on the time I had at the beach, I hoped to have similar adventures once I started school, meeting people and being taken on new adventures!

Life in 1999 3

The *West Dale High School* bell rang; I glanced over at the clock hoping the day had suddenly come to an end; my eyes saw eight o’clock, and that started the first day of *West Dale high school*. I said to myself, hoping that somehow, I did not get the sick eight o’clock feeling in my stomach, it was a big school, and I had another fresh start!

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

2. As I was getting through the first half of the morning, I noticed the schools' unique structure, like that of a boarding school; and I heard from Bam it was...it was a boarding school for rich foreign students. Although I did not believe Bam—I was convinced Bam was right—once I noticed the students needed a lot of manuals and books.

3. As my mind gets occupied in the activities of the morning, and I began to get super excited—and dug into some of the material for my classes, the lunch bell rang.

4. At lunch, opposed to *North Dale Middle School*, I had a lot of options, respectively I chose pizza, some vegetables, and a little red carton of white milk. While I was eating and sipping on my milk, I gazed around at the few hundred students in the lunch hall, hoping to find Bam. Suddenly I notice him, he is walking toward my table, I flagged him over... “Bamby” I say, he casually walks over and sits down.

5. We both were happy to see how big the school was, and especially all the technology; the school had computer rooms, they gave each of us an email address, and the faculty gave each of us a big, expensive calculator. We expressed our growing comfort to one another, and as lunch usually is, we hardly noticed the time passing, and shortly we were back in class.

6. My next class was physics; Bam and I shared the same class. The teacher, the one who was teaching the physics class, his name was Stephen Warden, we called him Mr. Ward. He introduced himself, and began to go over the class, things we would need, and things we would be doing that year. Some of the things he went through were the quanta, wavelengths, and electrons. He wanted us to know how these apply to the modern world, and how they should apply to our future. He told us we were going to need a cellphone for that class, it would help him better introduce wavelengths to us.

7. “It was good for other classes as well,” he mentioned.

8. I did not have one, but I was sure my parents would buy me one. The cellphone was something new to Americans, in my later years I discovered that at the time, cellphones existed, but mostly in Canada.

9. Cellphones were so large at this time, meaning they

would be larger than your pocket; I can remember my father's car phone, it was huge, it plugged into a cigarette lighter, and had a giant magnet connecting the antenna to the roof of the car. Most of the time it failed to provide a decent connection; somewhere around this time, there were smaller versions of it, one that could fit into the palm of a hand, but very few.

10. Most of my classes needed me to have a computer, a cellphone, and an email address. In class, Mr. Ward said, "we would be discussing wavelengths, and that's why we needed the cellphone." Mr. Ward strongly believed the future would be made of cellphone towers, and a lot of them, but not just cellphone towers, but strongly expressed his belief in wavelengths coming from giant towers, controlling the world below. I laughed the information off, I could barely make out what he was saying, plus I could not wait for three o'clock to come, so that I could go home, and tell my parents how the first day of high school went.

11. Three o'clock!

12. "*Finally!*"

13. I begin to go home.

14. I was glad when the bus reached the front of my house. I jumped off the bus, and went to my front door, turned the door handle, and went inside.

15. Once inside I grabbed an apple and went to watch television.

16. Not too much later my parents got home.

17. My mom lovingly came up to me and asked, "how was your first day of high school?"

18. I said, "it is awesome," and went on to say, "it is a rich school, they gave me a calculator, textbooks, and a uniform." I was so excited I could barely contain my excitement; I began to wonder if I was over excited, now—having thoughts that questioned if I would make it to school in the morning. I quickly covered it up and said, "they also gave me an email-address, and they surely want me to ask you and dad to buy me a cellphone."

19. My mom says, "cellphone, why would you need a cellphone?"

20. I said, "in case of an emergency, various experiments at school, and to keep in contact with my teachers."

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

21. My dad yelled across the room, “if that’s the case we will get you one!”

22. “Great,” I said, and walked into my room. With a sense of ownership—I began to dig into all the new material, my new possessions!

23. The next day when my parents got home from work, and I had gotten home from high school, I look to my dad, and I notice my dad holding a small bag; I thought I knew what was on the inside, and when he pulled it out, and presented it to me, I was right, it was a brand-new cellphone.

24. 1 My dad says, “not a lot of people can afford a cellphone, be careful with it.”

25. He handed it to me, and I quickly took it to the living room, placed it on the couch, and slowly opened the box.

26. Slowly tearing through the box, I revealed a power cord—to charge the phone, a keypad to dial numbers, and a screen display to text messages or put pictures on. My favorite part of the phone it was blue, and my dad knew I loved blue colors.

27. The next day, I brought the recently purchased, blue colored—with a lit-screen display cellphone to school; I showed it to all my close friends, hoping that I would be esteemed!

28. Bam with his charm, and glorified gift—to be a tribal-self-leader—and include others, smiled, and said, “the precious future, it’s your future in college, don’t screw it up!” I am almost certain, that the statement meant—to stay away from certain criminal behavior that was happening in the hidden places—within *West Dale High School*...criminal behavior that gave me the exhilarating thrill of a fresh hunt into growing up! But I would ignore that thrill and tell myself that this cellphone will have to do it: I will search out the knowledge to the workings of all—by understanding wavelengths, that will be the sport...I will seek out Mr. Ward’s idea of *Giant Towers* controlling the world below. This must be sort of like a video game, possessor of worlds—I say to myself!

29. Bam’s dad rejected the idea of lawlessness, and he began to do just that! His dad did not pick up on the urgency of buying Bam a cellphone. Bam spent a couple of months trying to get his dad to buy him the same type, kind, and color as I had got.

Most of the students got a phone within a few weeks, but not Bam; Bam had a hard time convincing his dad that the school needed him to have one. Within a month the school called his dad and had a talk with him; after the talk, Bam's dad, finally, after much turmoil gave in, and got his son, Bam a green colored cellphone.

30. Every week or so, Bam would come over to my house, and spend the night, we did not live far away from one another; we lived about a mile apart. During the time he spent at my house, we played video games, did homework, and played basketball in the driveway; most of the time we played video games, plus did the more important stuff: we helped one another grow up—mentally as well as physically.

31. I used to ask him this question a lot, in search for unexplored knowledge, “how were our video games, televisions and CD's created,” that was always enough to start an intelligent conversation, that not only emphasized on the stupidity of others, but always left us inherently stupid as well, without answers...without the whole reason for the conversation, as if knowledge was not to keep, or it was to vanish into the subconscious mind...without answers *at all!*

32. Bam would always include the older, wiser people of the day and age. On this occasion he said, “the teacher of our physics class ought to know...we should have him break it down slowly for us, that is what he gets paid for...right?”

33. As time went on, I asked the question so many times, that Bam eager to find the freedom that could come from a small idea we called *virtual reality*, decided to ask his father how video games worked, and how does electricity work, how exactly are they created. Bam's Dad whose name was Frank, simply said, “positive and negative or ones and zeroes.”

34. Bam could not understand that, but thought it was a good enough answer and brought it back to me. I tried to make sense of the information, but was confused, and said, “does that mean to make believe as a child would, or do I interpret that through the scars of the vivid truth—that is apparently before me all the time...a long, very long time, all the time?”

35. “Criminal, is the vivid truth, pretend stupid” Bam replied. ...And that is what would happen, and the knowledge

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

would sink deep into our minds without the ability to retrieve it again! *Now that I think about it, I think Bam meant to pretend like a child.*

36. Not long after, I asked my physics teacher about Bam's father's answer. Mr. Ward simply said, while leaning on his cane, "we will be studying those topics later in the year, as the great Dr. Cake said, '*learning without millions of years to do so is vain,*' and as I say, waves coming from outer space is, ah..." and thought it was good for me to wait for the full meaning to the question.

37. The day quickly ends, and I am back on the bus; I felt as if I was just on this bus, on my way to School. I got off the bus, and I was home again. I walked inside, grabbed an apple, and walked into the living room to watch television.

38. As I was flipping through the stations, I noticed a show. ...It was about energy, and an idea: that humans could, (in the eyes of the older, wiser, professional people's opinion,) raise their energy level—to a point, of walking through a wall. I had to wonder...is energy the absolute in the universe, after all—I eat to receive its energy, so maybe—the universe is governed by energy!

39. I had a question—through this new information. If I had enough energy, could I fly like superman? Or is flying like superman a huge explosion—without the capabilities to be a Superman.

40. I know the answer to the question could not be due to positive behavior, but negative, *I know electricity is negative!* ...In that case, I would be forcing the earth/surroundings, to forcefully listen to my will... "Maybe that's how the video games work, through governed electricity," I quietly whisper, "it's probably the reason for the fear amongst the adults, the negativity behind someone forcing their *will* on others."

41. The show on television made me *again*, ask the question, over and over—do I ask this question in my mind—to keep the knowledge of the virtual world in my mind: I wonder what are the colors coming from the television?

42. Vividly, I remember watching, and wondering, how could energy—make the structure coming from the television. For example: the people or buildings, I know that they are not

people or buildings, they are not the happy little spirits that could live inside the Television, because it was prerecorded, *the Tooth Fairy and Santa Clause ruined that one a long time ago—for me*. I know it had to do with energy, because the electrical outlet, the outlet that the television was plugged into; in my eyes that electrical outlet, would control the huge box that made up the *Television in the nineties!*

43. Bam came over that evening, driving a small motorcycle or something. Loudly he comes into the yard, and loudly cannot complete—the over excited expression—that he was gaining and growing... “My father promised me that if I do well at *West Dale High School*, he will—at my senior graduation, buy me a brand-new *Oldsmobile GX5!!!*” *That was the popular car in the nineties.*

44. “The motorcycle out in the front yard, he just bought that for me...that is the reward for making it this far,” Bam said loudly.

45. After I shared in his excitement, we moved on to our conversation.

46. Later in the day I brought up the television show—I had just watched, claiming energy could make impossible things possible; he seemed not to care all that much, he was too into his new responsibilities.

47. “If you are interested in your study—here is another direction! ...Maybe we should get spiritual and study beliefs; those that speak on television, might be speaking from one perspective” Bam says—preferring my conversation.

48. I replied, “I will wait, and get the answer from my physics teacher...there is something I do not like about the older populations—senior elders, like if I was to begin a conversation with a religion, it would not just last an hour, not two, not even three, but fearfully last days (i.e., willing boredom!)”

49. It was not long before I stumbled on to answers; I was in physics class, and my teacher explained atoms, “they were positive and negative” he said. ...I considered if that is what Bams dad was talking about when he said, ‘positive and negative, and ones and zeroes.’ After class I asked my physics-teacher, “could Bam’s dad be talking about *atoms* in a unified theory when he included ones and zeroes to his answer.”

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

50. I do not know where I got that question from, but something in me wanted to unify knowledge. It came out as if I had a good idea of physics per se, but seriously I was using the harsh scars of the surrounding environment.

51. Mr. Ward said, “ones and zeroes, if we’re talking about the same thing, are used for the binary code. The binary code makes the code on VHS tapes, records, and video games.”

52. His answer was the answer that avoided the question, and I instinctively—knew not to dig too deep into his world of scars, fears, and doubts.

53. I asked him again just too sure myself, that I was not to pretend a world of absolute knowledge—the one and only knowledge, the knowledge I invent...unified knowledge.... “Is that the same as positive and negative?” He, as predicted, seemed to avoid the question with a false answer, as if the question about how things work is a mystery.

54. ...But then, Mr. Ward looked up toward the ceiling, looked at me, and seemed to give in. He looked at me with sincere eyes, as if he were letting me into a special world of his, and said, “Maple, I don’t get much into my reasons for becoming a teacher...especially that of a physics-class. Earlier today, as I went over *atoms*, and how they form the world around us; and that is by obeying laws, laws that produce energy, and the law that attracts us to produce energy...”

55. “I’m going to tell you something that I tell very few; after all, in today’s lecture, you questioned me—as if you with certainty knew what I was saying; not a lot do Maple, so what I am about to tell you is very important.”

56. “My father worked for Nasa back in nineteen-sixty-nine, he worked in the safety department...he was to make sure the astronauts were safe—on the moon, as well is on the earth.”

57. “After the moon landing was a success, and the shuttle came home, my father had his family stand before him...I was included. I watched as he began to laugh...he was so happy...happy about—a bonus he received from his employer, plus, he had the secret of gravity.”

58. “He went on to explain to us what he learned in that year.”

59. “He said ‘we faked it; it was a fake...what you see on

the television never happened—as you know it!”

60. “In our language Maple, the moon landing was faked, but not faked.”

61. “You see, the only way to stay the same, is to not leave gravity...if one was up four or even perhaps ten miles above the earth in the atmosphere, they and their possessions would change, because there isn’t gravity to keep them the same way...in fact, if you were up that high, you would be sort of in a dream-like state.”

62. “...So, to remain conscious, we faked it, with science, they pretended to go. Make believing is believing Maple, it is truth, so we really did go to the moon, as science fact, but the kind of space mission that included gravity!”

63 “The reason I became a teacher, was to express to others the truth behind the power of our imaginations...believing what we knew as children but forgot as adults.”

64. “To play make-believe, is to play truth; you should play truth Maple.”

65. I did not totally understand what he was saying, but I think he was saying to pretend the truth. I did not know if he was speaking the truth, so I gave a polite smile, and understood he tried his best to meet me where I was at. Mr. Ward then summed up our conversation saying, “everything in the universe has positive and negative, and the only way to see that knowledge—is to make believe!”

66. After that class was my history class...I thought to myself, this class is going to be so boring, and went to gaze at the clock, as if time were going to spare me its length of time, but to my surprise, once the class began—I lost my sense of time, because I felt at home; to my surprise—what felt like seconds—I hear the school bell ring, signifying the end of the day.

67. Looking back that day in my history class, the teacher taught about an older person, I forgot the name, but he *invented* a lot of great things, and the reason behind some of his great *inventions*, was because someone out of this world told him how to do it, sort of like the *Tooth Fairy* or something; I thought it most likely was an *Extraterrestrial*.

68. I can remember going home that evening, and on the bus...I looked up at the vivid blue abyss, wondering if there was

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

more to the reality I experience, like: what if an alien or something was to share with me, my much-anticipated virtual world of all possibilities, (i.e., the completion for my beginnings.) ...Including how video games were made, and how could ones and zeroes control light; in a discrete little package...some call it money, some call it paradise, some even could think it was a famous-person—taking one to their wealthy-estate. I thought it was the life of the free roaming child within myself!

69. As the doorknob turns from the twisting of the handle by my hand, I hear, “how was school?” It was my mom...

70. I said, “great!”

71. She then asked, “what are you learning?”

72. I said, “the world I perceive to exist, is no world at all,”

73. She asked, “how so?”

74. I asked her, “if someone out of this world talked to you, say a space alien, would you care enough to regard?”

75. “I do not believe in such things, your grandpa said ‘that you think a *second. of time* is every moment,’ and that is what you are looking for...*to play with power,*” she answered to restrain my over excited search.

76. I said, “in history class the teacher taught us about an inventor who invented things, for a person or creature out of this world.”

77. “You have a lot to learn” she replied.

78. The next day I was in physics class, I asked my teacher, “what are the lights, and pictures in my cellphone,” as if I was on a treasure hunt, hunting the reason for lack.

79. With much time on his hands, he said, “they are virtual particles,” and then changed that to “photons,” and then to “atoms,” “waves,” “the quantum.” to finally saying, “the ancients believed they were particles.” As if I were to know what he was talking about. Looking back, I am sure he thought I knew what he was talking about, and that was to cheat the test per se.

80. Without knowing what he meant, but to honor his words, I concluded to myself: that is what I see when I look at the television, video games, and cellphone. I did not ask him what a virtual particle was, but I was sure it had to do with an unsure

reality!

81. That night, I went to Bam's house, and I spent the night there.

82. While there, I came up with an idea that we should play around naked in his room...all seemed safe enough; what could go wrong, we are just a couple of guys hanging out...I will never forget what I learned!

83. ...We were different!

84. Afterwards Bam somehow concluded that I was a different sex, or a totally different creature. I never lived down the naked idea, and previously, I nor Bam, stepped outside of the normal reality that was given to us. To him, I, as a being, became the one to move on a red light per se.

85. That same night, I raised the question at dinner to Bam's family, "are these French fries' virtual reality,"

86. Bam said, "Yes!"

87. I asked, "how do you know?"

88. Bam answered, "it was the only answer—that answers the question. ...Plus, we cannot get down small enough to see the absolute, so we make believe, until the small substance of our make believing appears, *sort of like dust particles, but our mind-power-particles*, and that truly brings to life the saying, "you are, what you eat. After that statement, it was the only answer that I thought you wanted to hear, virtual reality rules."

89. "I'm going to get to the bottom of how things work, the absolute, of mind-power-particles. Bam, are you with me? We should start at school."

90. Bam cleverly added, "possibly a *Virtual-Reality-School*, one that can burn to the ground, yet that with a file, can instantly be restored the next morning! We will start at school."

91. The next day, Bam introduced me to a girl named Alice, and an older boy named Brendon. Alice studied art; Brendon studied humanities. Alice was nice and outgoing; Brendon was nature-caring and picked up on the smallest of details.

92. I, over time, at some point, asked Brendon why he was involved in his work, his answer was, "everything has a purpose, even down to the lint on your clothing."

93. I ask, "what purpose?"

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

94. He said, “everything is loved, cared about, even the lint, consider if it was not, there would be many more viruses; that is why I care so heavily about tiny substances—such as lint, because I do not want to get sick! Trust me, it is a particularly important study; if I make friends with such tininess, I heal myself. Their purpose is to stay invisible,” he mumbles and begins to laugh. I did not get it at first, but I liked the guy, and so did Bam.

95. That summer was great, I took Alice and Brendon to meet the sheriff, in hopes he would take them tubing. I can still remember the day when Brendon and I were holding on to the back of the tube—going about forty miles an hour when Brendon yelled, “let’s let go,” and so I did, we hit the water so hard. When we came to, Brendon swam over to me, and said “wasn’t that fun!”

96. “Yes” I said. The situation reminded me to let go of things in life, hard concepts, hard relationships, let life be life, and have fun!

97. Brendon said, “let’s do it again, and have some more fun!” I laughed as the boat came around to pick us up.

Life in 1999 4

That summer my parents thought it would be fun for us younger people, to have our own rented cabin by the lake. They rented one, they could not afford much—but they could afford a good time. All that summer Bam, Alice, Brendon, and I spent our nights in the cabin. We did a lot of things in the cabin, such as: play cards, video games, watch television, and on some of the colder nights we would light a fire.

2. On one of those days in the middle of summer, Bam was reading a book; Bam’s parents were extremely poor and could not afford much, which caused Bam to grow up reading a lot.

3. On this day Bam was reading a book named: *War of The Machine*. The book was about a few people living inside a computerized world. The characters in the book grew up their whole lives—thinking—it was the real world.

4. As Bam was finishing up the book, he turned around

to Brendon, and said, “that was an awesome book!” He started explaining *War of the Machine* to us: “a couple of kids get into a lot of trouble, once the computer finds them in its system. They hid from the machine their whole lives...*from the eyes of authorities!* They could, because their minds were set to the real world, they thought it was the real world! They themselves did not know they were running from the law, the law of the machine.”

5. Bam, then asked the question if we thought such could be reality.

6. I said, “Bam, that idea is sort of screwed up, because what if the machine finds you, and you wake up to find a horrible reality, that you were never loved, nobody cares, in fact—the authorities were—sort of out to punish you. That could be horrible, a horrible nightmare! I have such thoughts, and they terrify me! Like as if I could be running from some bigger reality!”

7. I never thought Bam would be deep into stuff like that, but he, like me, in his spare time went deep into the mystery of the earth. Bam and I were trying to gain as much information about reality, of the knowledge of the earth as possible. I was happy to see Bam doing so, as well as happy that he joined me on this massive treasure hunt.

8. Brendon, still deep in thought about *War of the Machine* said, “if it is reality, someone sure has a lot of explaining! ...And hopefully it is not going to be me; I mean if they do exist—they—in my mind would owe me.... *right?*”

9. I expressed to Brendon an answer without the answer, “maybe we can do the explaining ourselves, that’s if we are not afraid to find a past life—we might be running from.”

10. “That could not be true, we live here and now, no other lives!” Brendon said.

11. “I believe in goodness,” Alice said; Brendon agreed—shaking his head up and down.

12. The next day Brendon, Alice, and I walked to the store; Bam decided to go out fishing. We all needed some food; this night we planned on grilling by the lake.

13. While at the store, we purchased a few things and walked back to our cabin; once we arrive at the cabin, we find

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

Bam next to the cabin, with fish in his hand, he yells, “this is what I’m eating tonight.” Bam was proud to work and catch his own. Bam grew up poor, he learned to catch fish at an incredibly early age; he knew what it meant to enjoy pleasure after work, *eating the labor he did for himself!*

14. That night it was warm, about seventy degrees, and not a cloud in the sky. We grilled on the beach, and instead of using charcoal, we used wood for the fire. Brendon, Alice, and I grilled hamburgers while Bam grilled his fish. I put cheese on my burger when it was done...quickly we flopped them on some paper plates—hoping not to lose one, and then sat down on some grass next to the lake.

15. After we were done eating, we laid down on the soft grass, and gazed up at the stars. Bam exclaimed, “the full moon looks so big.” I could barely hear him; I was in a trance while looking at the night sky. I was indulging myself in the clear starlit night, my eyes were fixed on the big dipper, which for me, was not always that visible in the city. In the city where I previously lived, there was a lot of smog, but in the country in Vermont, there was not any smog, so the stars were very bright, it was a picture-perfect night.

16. Suddenly, a bright light appeared, a huge bright light in the night sky, it flashed three times.

17. Alice yelled, “what was that?”

18. Brendon says, “I’ve never seen that before!”

19. “Maybe it’s a military flair,” I said right before Bam said, “let us go inside and watch some television.” We all agreed and settled in for an *old-fashioned black-and-white movie* on antenna television.

20. The next morning Alice’s friends Max and Brenda stopped by the cabin. Alice started talking to them, I mentioned that she should tell them about the light we saw in the sky. Suddenly Alice excitedly said, “last night a bright light appeared in the sky, we’ve never seen anything like it.”

21. Brenda quick to take her place in the conversation said, “Max believes in UFOs and his parents are sure that life exists elsewhere in the universe.”

22. Bam said, “whatever it was, should not matter and even if there was life out there why don’t you believe in my dog

Lacy; she exists too!”

23. Bam seemed upset by the lights in the sky, but Max wanted to see it himself. We invited him back that night...maybe he could fulfill his wish and catch it on video.

24. Max and Brenda were invited back to the camp that same night to try to catch the light on video.

25. “Alice,” Max yells out, “do you have a blanket?” he asks as he was setting up his camcorder.

26. “Yes” she said and ran into the cabin and snatched one off the sofa.

27. I was grilling corn and hotdogs. It was a good night for them; it was warm, there were the pleasant sound of waves—coming from the lake, and I could hear the pleasant chirping sound of frogs in the distance as the cool breeze kissed my face.

28. Max said, “did you see that?”

29. I said “no, see what?”

30. “I just saw a blinking light!” he said.

31. “Did you get it on video?” I anxiously asked.

32. “No” he replied. He pressed the record button and said, “now I need that to happen again.”

33. There were not any more lights that night, and around nine o’ clock we decided to go back inside the cabin, plus Max had his father’s car and Max’s Father wanted him to be home at ten o’ clock.

34. There were not any more flashing lights that summer, but once I got back to school, on the first day I returned from summer break I asked my science teacher if he could explain the lights. He thought it might have been an airplane or a satellite. I nor Max think so. Max thinks it was communication from someone more intelligent than us. Bam thought they were dying stars whose light took years to get here; Bam had a whole theory about us living inside of a bubble controlled by ancient light sources, after a while he convinced me of his yet to be discovered truth!

35. Max asked, “Brenda are you going to be home after school tomorrow?”

36. Brenda was living in an apartment that her parents paid for, she was a rich kid growing up, she also looked older for her age, at seventeen she looked like she could be in her twenty’s;

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

I didn't—at first, know why she hung around with the younger kids, but I think it was because Bam's family was so poor.

37. Brenda appears as if she devoted her life to caring about others. Brenda responded to Max's question, "yes, I have to do some detail work for the college I want to attend." She intended on going to *Sail University*, it was a school for veterinarians. Max was interested in Brenda, he was usually with her, but not officially; he grew up religious, and for them to date Max's parents needed to say okay.

38. I overheard their conversation, and I asked Max "why do you ask, is there going to be a party or something?"

39. Max replied "no, what I want to do at Brenda's is train her some yoga and meditation."

40. I asked "why?"

41. He answered "because it opens and frees the mind. You're welcome to join us if your parents don't mind!"

42. Brenda said, "why don't you come and spend the night."

43. The next morning, I asked my parents and they replied with a yes.

44. That night at Brenda's Max started the yoga training with some inhaling and exhaling, while we were doing this he started saying "think of your happy spot." All I could think of was my video games. Max said, "the inner person knows why you're in your happy spot, ask it why!"

45. I felt funny about doing this, but I did, and in the faint distance I could hear me say, *I want to know the knowledge of all things*. I woke up from my small trance wondering if that was my purpose.

46. That night I slept on Brenda's couch, while Max slept on a chair.

47. The following day while at school all I could think about was virtual reality and possibilities to bring that to life (i.e., buying of all.) I knew that I wanted to discover how my video games worked, but could not imagine why I did not know, maybe I was living in a video game.

48. At lunch I asked Bam, "do you think we are living in a video game," to refresh and excite the topic!

49. Bam said, "the light in the sky that we saw this

summer, the one that blinked on and off. This light is ancient light, taking billions of years to get here!”

50. I did not get it, but I gave it a thought and I said, “Bam what do you mean?”

51. Bam said, “let’s say you’re looking at the television or a video game, it takes time for the light to get to your eyes, what the television is doing apart from the light is reality, *thee reality*...the *reality* apart from the light, the split second of real life!”

52. I ask, “the stars light took time to get to the earth and what your saying is, there is actually another type of reality out there?” I ask, looking for Bam to confirm my recently spoken sentence—continuing the conversation.

53. Bam says, “we are the lie, thee unfinished, un-purposed work! As far as we know or need to know, *because if we asked, they would not answer*, there is nothing, but most likely creatures built a city out there behind the night sky.”

54. I said, “So, what you are saying is, we do not see thee reality, thee reality behind the great Oz...*Behind the Night Sky!*”

Chapter 2



An open door

BTNS Insert 10

I am sitting right now at a Super Market and I got another whiff of that idea, you know, and it's a lot of dope, so I want to make sure that I do something with it.

2.) And so, part of the inspiration, this one was and is addicting as heck...

3.) And not only that, but I thought of some of these before, and I don't think they flow as good as this, this idea does, but like...

4.) So, you're building a VR world, right?

5.) And we're working with Maya or something, or something awesome, with a lot of options and a lot of buttons, and we're building this cool, cool, cool world, you know? And we don't plan on stopping, we are never going to stop. We are going to build, you know, our first city and then the next city, and then we are going to connect the cities and then we're going to go and build the country and then we're going to build its planet. And then we're going to make a moon and then we're going to go on and make more planets, right.... So, it is exciting stuff, there is no, there's no end of the ability to create.

6.) And so, you know, one of these ideas to creating this video world, right, is, you know... you are, you either get it by inheritance, this is one idea right... to get started, like a stimulus package, but this ones on a much bigger scale. So, like you get a small grocery store.

7.) The other one is you know, to collect the waves, the other particles or however you want to look at it to build a store or something...

8.) Because I mean, if you think about it in computer programming, right...

9.) To legit even like dollar for dollar, punching the code to a supermarket no multiplication here, no quick Maya, you know, there is formats to make this easier, or something... but you know as far, I mean, you are going to pay for it somehow, whether it is through typing a bunch of stuff into the computer and then you're going to get your store that way or you going to learn the code to the store.

10.) And so, you know, exciting. But you know, there's a lot of ways to look at this. But anyways, main point being you know... you slowly overtime, through billions of years, add piece by piece to your store, you know, in some sort of virtual world. I mean, you got billions of years to deal with.... and so, you build an entire supermarket out of little, tiny, you know, quantum particles or something, or waves, you know...

11.) And so, it's almost like you slowly over millions of years, imagine a supermarket and you perfect it mentally so that way you can see it in-and-out... and uh... there is a lot, a lot around that idea. A lot. of exciting stuff too. And not only that, but the space, you know, the, you know, the storage space, space on flash drive, the terabytes of space to do a whole store lot. And it is, you know, as it is on earth. You know what I mean.... and that same size, the number of terabytes it would take to hold together the entire supermarket.

12.) And given that 99.999% of all that on Earth is empty, I'm serious. It's some sort of scientific logic that most of an atom is empty space, but even despite that that is still a lot of terabytes. It's like maybe one-million dollars in terabytes to do the food and the cookies and all the stuff in there, the soda and meat and everything.

13.) And the little forest out back, you know... For the space. And so, you get this giant metal wall and then you get maybe like, six acres which is like one million dollars in TB space or something and I'm just guessing this, but. It's cool.

An open door



Cellphones, began to get more and more popular, around *West Dale High School* and around the country. As they were getting popular to the point that every person needed to have one, they, the cellphone—also got smaller, thinner, and more advanced in things it could do. The school, *West Dale High school*, without noticing the cellphones' ability to recommend the deepest of the *deep web*, continued to have the students use them for projects, homework, etc.

2. The students, in respect of the teachers and school always kept their phones with them and privately began to need them as well, *they loved to text one another!*

3. Without a firm announcement of all this cellphone use, people began to start noticing strange things happening! ...Scientists said it was due to small amounts of radiation caused by electronics, phycologists said it was a neurological disorder...all those in power hid the matter, but my friends and I *thought independently*, so did a lot of people.

4. The things that would happen were strange, things like the feeling one is being watched, objects floating or moving all on their own, and things appearing out of thin air. Some people came together to talk about it...they would talk and look for answers. Some groups thought it was aliens, some thought it was due to religion, some were left to themselves and were sure it was...

5. Brendon, Alice, Bam, and I thought it was due to the increase in cellphone use. We decided to research the cellphone phenomenon in depth, to try to figure out why these strange things were happening!

6. "Can you ask your dad for some more money!" Bam said. Bam wanted the latest cellphone to do some experiments on.

7. “Sure” Brendon said and went towards the living room door that led to his red sports car.

8. I was in a physics book studying the quanta, I was wondering if everything in the physical universe was made of it, that would to me—explain the strange things that were happening! For instance, I remembered the summer when there was the light that blinked a few times: I wonder, I say to myself, *if the quanta can be controlled by energy and that is why the strange things are happening, because the charge of energy in the cellphones causes the quanta to move, or if anything—the atoms themselves; and this could be happening more often, because there are more and more cellphones.*

9. I had this idea: *what if we create our own energy—maybe we can control strange things.*

10. I told this to my friends, they did not know what to think—and gave me an expression in their body language that said it was over their heads.

11. Brendon coming back through the front door and full of excitement said, “this cellphone, just appeared out of thin air and it was the one I went out to buy!”

12. “Perhaps this is a message to us,” I said.

13. Brendon still trying to catch his breath said, “what message?”

14. I said, “to explore it as intelligent, the source must want more power, I think it is trying to communicate to us and if we do our part, it has more room to speak.”

15. Bam knowing what I was thinking argued “we should try calling one another to see if we can get more of a (i.e., flashy light in the sky.)”

16. Max added, “radiation!!!”

17. All of us, as one, did! ...We called one another—we called one another for what seemed like hours when suddenly Brendon’s computer turned on and typed *more power!* We were all surprised and thrilled to be in the moment and wondered how we could give it more power! *Looking back, I think it was toying with us; it was way smarter than to play a teenage friend.*

18. “Bam,” I said, “what if Brendon’s computer turning on and off is some sort of new tech.”

19. “What do you mean, the law says computers

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

unplugged cannot be powered on,” Bam answers.

20. “According to Mr. Ward, in his own words, “just because you are in does not make you in, there is always a bigger gear to be moved by.”

21. “If I take his words of wisdom—I consider the power of negativity or energy. What if one was negative, *only perceived negative, because it is unknown*, and had a lot more power than the rest.”

22. “You mean like a bigger gear,” Bam asked—assuring himself.

23. “Yes exactly. Say this gear could defy most laws and power something unplugged?” I speak.

24. “It would still need a system—even if it was powerful enough” Bam answers.

25. “No,” I say, “not necessarily. If it were stronger or rather a greater gear, it could do whatever it wanted.”

26. “Those elements, like fate—for example are creating the illusion of something, but in my opinion, at this moment it could bypass the lesser, giving a presentation—of the power of magic!” I speak.

27. ...Bam turned—from facing the computer-monitor saying, “let’s go out for a jog, that will produce energy.”

28. Max said, “wait a minute, how about I teach you all yoga!”

29. We all agreed.

30. We spent hours doing yoga to see if some strange thing would communicate with us, but all we got was the idea that we were on the right track, and the possibility of future expeditions once Brendon’s computer turned off and on in a rhythm that made a familiar song, all on its own.

31. The next day at school, when I got to my English class the teacher refreshed our mind that it was nothing to freak out about, it was a natural occurrence.

32. While in class, I raised my hand and asked the teacher what one would do if there were a floating ice cube hanging over one while waking up in the morning.

33. His reply, “I would hope it would float back into the freezer!”

34. The students laughed!

35. *West Dale High School* slowly got immune to the strange things that were happening and went back to focusing on more natural things.

36. ...As I went home, I thought to myself: *my dad, like the English class teacher does not seem to be the least bit surprised, by any of it!* But my friends and I thought it was a gateway or a portal into a great, *normal* (i.e., every day) adventure. *Later we would come to conclude it was!*

An open door 2

Sophomore year went great, I learned a lot. Brenda went on to college and Max started a job at a factory. We rarely talk about the strange things that happened the year prior, but one thing we do talk about is getting the latest cellphone. Within a year they got smaller and thinner and more advanced. Some of the latest cellphones can be connected to the internet.

2. In the summer of the year two thousand, Brenda came home from summer break, she being as she was, went and spent some time with Max... To please Brenda, Max thought it would be fun to rent out the same cabin my parents rented out for me the night we saw the blinking light.

3. Brenda invited me to the cabin, I asked “can Bam come too?” I knew he would be up for whatever the lake had to offer.

4. She said, “sure, but you must spend the night!” Unknowingly to me, Alice and Brendon were invited too.

5. Upon arrival I noticed Brendon a distance away from the beach—in the parking lot. While in the parking lot, we got to talking and ended up on food; Brendon assured us that there was plenty of food in the freezer and asked us what we wanted to eat. We voted to eat cheeseburgers and hot dogs, and then go for a late-night swim.

6. That night Bam and I arrived late. Brenda had just finished preparing the meat for the cookout. We talked for a while before we made it to the beach, we wanted a quick swim before we ate.

7. The water was cold, about sixty degrees, but the air was warm. It was about ten o'clock at night when we went for a swim. As we were playing in the water, enjoying the night—Max looked up and saw blinking lights. He yells, “did you see that?”

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

8. We said “no!” Max convinced us to go into the cabin and try to provoke this source through calling one another, he wanted to see if he could communicate with it. As we ran into the cabin Max said, “that light was in the same spot as we saw it before.” We quickly got to the cabin and grabbed our cellphones, ran back out to the beach, and started calling one another. Suddenly the light blinked three more times as if it were aware of what we wanted.

9. Alice said, “what was that?”

10. Bam replied, “it’s an ancient civilization trying to communicate with us.” We sat down on the grass and started wondering what it was. Most of us wanted to see if there was a person behind the light. As we talked, we thought it best not to bother the light anymore, but rather go back into the cabin and write a detailed plan on what we were going to do with this new reality.

11. As we were coming up with the plan, Bam suggested that exercising could bring this light to life; a system of a giant—like, A.I., and as a system—it must feed on energy.

12. We knew yoga worked so we included it in the plan, we also included things like, questions we would ask it; plus, we had to figure out how we were going to exist with this now and in the future...mentally.

13. As time went on, we developed a routine of extra activities in our daily lives; for instance, we would take the long way home from school, or we would offer to do extra chores around the house.

14. We tried to convince others to do this, but they did not see the point, they were too busy with their cellphones. After a while we started to live better lives trying to communicate with this energy. I have never felt so healthy; I slowly understood why others run around the way they do—in the world, it was people trying to communicate with the unknown.

15. I knew what I would ask this energy, I would ask it: who has the power over the wavelengths that come from my television or video games *in other words, what governs the atoms, who set the laws in place, and is there any chance that I could play within these laws.*

16. At this time, I did not get an answer to how atoms and

waves are controlled; I as a human could not control them or at least I thought I could not. The only thing I could do with atoms is visualize them in my brain.

17. I needed answers!

18. I wanted them so badly; I went to a spiritual leader to ask questions.

19. I asked the spiritual leader what his opinion on life was, “what governs the positive and negative forces around us?”

20. He replied, “we do!”

21. “...We have negative, but we also have positive. Say I took something of yours for a while without asking you, that would cause you to suffer negativity, but say you got a hug from a friend that would cause you to feel positivity.”

22. “Throughout history there has been conflict with people; there have been wars, fighting and hatred, but there has also been love and peace.”

23. “This is what controls the positive and the negative, everyday people, and our job is to learn to love it.”

24. After he said this, I thought to myself that makes a lot of sense, we govern the positive and the negative through our daily living.

25. “That’s why there must be governors in the world” I said to the spiritual leader, and he said “yes.”

26. When I met back up with Bam, I told him what the spiritual leader said.

27. Bam said, “if life is made up of positive and negative, this force must be communicating with us while being negative. But if we be negative—this would force it to be positive.”

28. We took that information to Max and Brenda, they agreed, “if we are negative, it will force it to be positive.”

29. So, we set out to make energy through being negative, we did not do it in a bad way, we were taught everything we do requires a little amount of negativity.

30. The more we made the energy, the more we could control this force.

31. We controlled it to great deeds, even making food appear out of thin air. Nobody else was around to see it, nor did we tell anyone, we did not want attention, we just wanted some basic information.

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

32. As we were exploring ways to live in harmony with this strange force, we were going through changes as well; our minds started reconsidering everything we were taught, including our perception of the surrounding world.

33. In doing so we might have accidentally crossed some of the boundaries that were given to us, due to what I call the new age syndrome, but in the end, we were sure all would be well.

An open door 3

As the technology was increasing and seeming to appear out of thin air, and as the computers got thinner and smaller and as the internet became capable of doing great things, we tried to tell people that this force, the force causing strange things to happen—could be controlled. No one listened but seemed to be doing their own thing with it, with what some called the radiation of A.I. I knew that we were living in a great time, like the roman empire and the great pyramids of Egypt. I did not know what the computer age meant, but I needed to figure it out. Everyone seemed to be ignoring the outbreak of new inventions and strange occurrences, but unlike them...my friends and I continued working to unveil this new age that had seemed to take control of the world.

2. At this time, a lot of people decided to stay on the computer and develop it. Applications for the computer as well as cellphones became advanced within a short period of time. Suddenly the people in the United States became aware that anything and everything was possible. If you had just entered the Country, you might not notice it—until you got a close look at what people were doing in their spare time.

3. What they were doing was exploring the deep web for more than ten hours a day, in such a way that they preyed on the life of extraterrestrials. On the outside one could think that it was invented by the people, but it was not, and they knew that; they knew it was created by another force. They even started exploring the deep web on their cellphones—knowing that an extraterrestrial was behind it.

4. My friends and I did not explore the computer; we explored this strange force by trying to get it to move things or

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

manifest itself in the material world. Most of the time it hid, but slowly through our work we would get answers to what was going on.

5. Later, in my junior year of high school I went to the prom, I did not go alone, I went with Brendon and Alice.

6. I had a great time, and fell in love with the atmosphere, I loved the soft music the DJ played; all the pink and blue balloons sparkled in the light—and added the final touches to the prom—in the gym...

7. At the end of the prom the host decided to crown the prom king and queen, in the middle of doing so all the balloons in the Jim popped. The students laughed it off—as if it were common.

8. Brendon, Alice, and I immediately noticed, but did not know what to make of it, so we went to the principal and asked him if he had that arranged. He gave us a puzzled look—as if we were crazy. Immediately afterwards he pulled out his cellphone—as if to hint the world had changed, but I did not think so. Everything was about the same except for the technology. I looked around the gym—hosting the prom and noticed most of the students were on their cellphones; *I think that is what popped all those balloons, it was the energy being produced by their cellphones.*

9. At the prom I danced with Alice for a while, it was a beautiful night.

10. As the light reflected off the disco-ball in the middle of the Auditorium, I looked at Alice, she looked back and suddenly, without warning—Alice asked me to spend the summer with her in Florida; she was moving to Miami, Florida, her mother, and father had just split up. I did not know what to say to her, but I told her I would ask my parents, and added, “I bet Bam would love to go too, do you mind if I invite him.”

11. “I would love for him to go,” she replied.

12. I would have to ask my parents and chances are they will let me go; they like Alice and her mother, they spent some time together, even went out to parties together.

13. After the dance, the prom ended, and everyone went home.

14. I did not know why she would invite me and had

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

small doubts that my parents would let me go for the summer—without a good cause.

15. I walked into my home, my mother asked how the prom went and I of course, because of the lack of interesting words, I say, “great,” but I was puzzled; *could Alice really want Bam and me to spend the summer with her.*

16. At supper I looked into my father’s eyes and said, “I need to ask you something.”

17. My dad immediately thought it was about money.

18. “We can’t afford it right now” my mom says.

19. “Can I spend the summer in Florida with Alice and Bam,” I interrupted speaking louder than my mother!

20. “I didn’t see that coming” My Mom said softly.

21. “I’ll give you an answer in the morning” dad says.

22. That night I could not sleep. I gazed upon the ceiling of my bedroom; a question kept running through my mind: why would Alice invite me? I consider if maybe she might want to date, but that was not like Alice, Alice was deep into herself, if she did date someone it would be more of a thing on the side, not a whole summer together...then I thought, *maybe she feels unsafe about all the strange things that have been happening.*

23. The next morning, I awoke.

24. Quickly to grab some breakfast I went downstairs. and I sat down at the kitchen table; my father soon after joined me. He sat down, picked up his head, looked me in the eyes and said, “your mother and I think it would be a good thing for you to spend the summer with Alice and Bam.”

25. I was thrilled!

26. ...I said, “I’m going to need some money!” I quickly grabbed my backpack and went out to meet the school bus. Once I got on the bus, I noticed Bam sitting in the back, I went and sat down beside him. I started talking and said, “Bam do you want to spend the summer in Florida?” At this point Bam was living on his own, in his own apartment.

27. Bam replied with an excited “yes, what are we going to do there?”

28. I said, “I don’t know, but last night at the prom Alice asked the question to me, that question kept me up all night, and I don’t know why she invited us.”

29. “Maybe she fears a new scene, or is addicted to us or something,” Bam replied.

30. “That makes sense,” I said, “she might not want to ruin the present comfort, after all we spend—mostly everyday together. Thanks, Bam, I might now know what’s going on.”

31. The school year ended, we left and took the trip to Florida—in expectation of a great time.

32. It took her mom a week to drive there, a moving truck stayed close behind.

33. The first day of traveling was from Vermont to New York city and once we got there, we got a hotel room; I was excited to take a shower and eat a truck stop supper. We could have had take-out, but Alice’s mom thought it would be cheaper to eat prepared.

34. The second day we went from New York to Virginia; in Virginia we slept in the van and ate fast food—the dollar menu per se. While in the (i.e., Fast food joint) a young boy was at the counter talking to his mother with some apple slices in his hand saying, “this food was put in the building by microbes, people don’t put these objects in stores or in restaurants, microbes do.”

35. “How sweetie,” the mother replied.

36. “The microbes, the tiny people, slowly build it within the buildings, they don’t want the big people to hate them and start a war with them...it is their gift to us.

37. Alice listened eagerly! Bam looked at me—as to say the knowledge was far out of his understanding, that we did not want to lose our minds.

38. “Come on younglings” Alice’s mother said breaking up our deep-thought-daze into what the child was talking about.

39. On the third day we went from Virginia to North Carolina; once we got there, we got a hotel room, and in doing so we met a strange guy who seemed to exist in a paranormal realm, although he did not talk much, we could tell that he was a suffering man, he kept asking us if we needed any drugs, he said he could get us some crack. Alice’s Mom laughed it off, I thought he should not be doing that in front of teenagers, it was a bit odd.

40. A week went by, and we arrived in Florida, we stayed in a nice beach house. Alice’s Mom said the house cost about ninety thousand dollars.

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

41. Alice's mom showed us the room we were going to be staying in, we were all excited and I quickly unpacked. Alice did not have much stuff and it only took us that day to unpack the moving truck.

42. The next day we helped arrange the house so that it felt like home. Afterwards we went for a swim in the ocean.

43. I have only been to the ocean a couple of times and every time I went the water was about forty degrees, but this time it was different, this water was like bath water. We played in the water for hours, until Bam got stung by a jellyfish and we all ended up going to the hospital. Bam needed some medicine. The incident made me scared.

44. Bam thought it was funny.

45. Afterwards we all stayed away from the ocean, but I will still recommend it to friends.

46. Bam, Alice, and I finally got around to talking about the summer and things we could do. In the mist of Alice, shockingly, seemingly out of nowhere says, "I am pregnant!"

47. Bam and I were quick to fake being happy for her, but inwardly did not know how to take it, or rather understand it; Alice would not be the kind of person to get pregnant, she was too structured—to just be in a situation.

48. Bam asks, "who is the lucky fellow?"

49. Alice had her head down and refused to talk.

50. I said, "that's great, exciting, and wonderful, you must want us here to protect you!"

51. "Sort of" she replied, "I need one of you to pretend the child is yours."

52. This confused me but was willing to do anything to help, because she was a good friend, I said "I will!"

53. Slowly Alice told me what to do and say in front of others, she even went as far as to say we were going to get married. Whenever I questioned her about the child, her reply was to wait for the answer, she insisted I would not believe her.

54. Alice and I slowly got closer and closer, at some point while we were on the beach while the sun was going down, we kissed, and I asked her to marry me. I did not know what got into me, but I slowly that summer fell in love with her; there was something about that summer, if cupid had arrows, I would have

thought he shot one at me.

55. By the end of the summer, we were in love with one another. Bam thought the whole thing was odd, but Alice and I thought it was love. She told me she always thought about dating but did not have the courage to ask. Although I never thought about dating her, I did now and would boldly face that.

56. Alice and I held hands and we walked to the bus station where I was to jump on the bus and go back to Vermont—to go back to school. My bus shows up, I kiss Alice, say goodbye, and get on the bus.

57. Once home, I opened the door to my parents' home, my mom quickly came up to me, kissed me and started telling me how much she missed me. She then asked me how everything went. I said "wonderful," and under my breath I say, "Alice and I are going to get married."

58. My mom says "What!"

59. I say a little louder "I asked Alice to marry me."

60. "When," she asks.

61. "We have not set a date, but it should be soon," I say.

62. Alice wanted me to tell all our friends and family the baby was mine, so I did and the first person I told was my mom. I did not want to do this, but a promise was a promise.

63. With tears in her eyes my mom says, "I'm going to be a grandma." She quickly told my dad, he came up to me and said, "son you're going to need a job and I have just the one for you, it's at a paper mill, a spot just opened; we will go apply tomorrow."

64. My parents thought it was important for me to stay in school, but also thought it was important to live on my own, and to maintain a job. I had my senior year to finish up.

65. As I worked on the job, I saved up enough money to get and maintain an apartment, afterwards I invited Alice to come and live with me in Vermont.

66. In the middle of my senior year Alice moved in with me, she was eight months pregnant, the baby would soon be on the way. Alice's mother gave her ten thousand dollars and that was enough money to get baby items and a cheap car.

67. The baby came in a normal way, or at least I at first thought it came in a normal way: first labor pains and then we

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

went to the hospital.

68. The baby was delivered; Gabriel weighed eight pounds six ounces; it was a healthy baby. To me the baby resembled the sun when shining, I loved that baby, I told myself that I would love that baby as my own.

69. After the baby was born, we brought it home and began to make plans for marriage.

70. In the mist of our planning, Alice told me something I will never forget:

71. While she was at the hospital, they found a baby—in the hospital, and gave it to her, they just found one! And that was our baby! ...As if it just appeared there!

72. They caused her to sign some paperwork—sort of like adoption, had her put mine and her names on Gabriel's birth-certificate, and handed her a living breathing baby. At this point I figured Alice might not be okay upstairs; I passed it off as a symptom of pregnancy. I was unbalanced-in-love with her, so I brushed off anything that I thought would cause me to lose her.

73. We got married a normal way; everyone was there. There were people there from both sides of the family; there were also flowers, friends, cake, and wine. Everyone loved the baby; people said it even resembled me.

74. I know—in my mind—the baby was not mine, but they still were convinced the baby was mine; I knew it was a lie. I had a hard time looking people in the eyes, but I kept the lie going, I thought to myself a promise was a promise, I would cover the situation, if not for me, then for Alice.

75. Slowly through that lie I began to get overwhelmed, and I needed answers from Alice about where this baby came from.

76. One night I questioned Alice with all my heart, “where did this baby come from,” I asked.

77. She said “remember that light in the sky, the one that blinked a couple of times, that summer while we were enjoying the cabin and lake. That source is what I believe gave me this baby.”

78. I said, “so there is no father?”

79. “I would not lie” she replied, “there is no father, unless—it was true, that you are the father.” I was puzzled, I

could not imagine she would lie to me, after all I was for her lying. That must have been the answer I was looking for. Afterwards I did not mind telling people the baby was mine.

80. That night I would have sworn that I died, as I was sleeping cuddled next to Alice in my apartment: I dreamt, or it really happened, I am still not sure what really happened. I was in a dark room lit by lights; lamps were hanging over my head and there were two creatures standing next to me, and they started talking with me.

81. They started talking about time, they said, “time on earth is past light!” What existed was: the realm that I was in, that was the time. They also told me that the baby was mine and that it was my son, but that it was a son from another realm. They explained a lot to me and when I awoke, I was not sure which reality was the truth. At first, I thought to wake Alice and tell her my dream, but I knew if I told her the dream it would not impact her the way it had impacted me. I decided to wait until the child grew.

82. I was happy to know that I have a child, I had a son, I could not have been happier. I fell back asleep in peace.

83. The next day I went over to Bam’s house after work, I told him the dream, he was not surprised. “I told you he said, the light we see is fake light, it’s a hallucination, I even got proof.”

84. I said, “what proof?”

85. “I have been making energy, all my energy, I have put in these stones,” Bam said while pointing toward the closet, “I have taped those stones on the doorframe to that closet!”

86. If you walk into the closet, you enter another dimension,” he said.

87. As I gazed at the closet, I said, “let me walk into the closet?” ... We were in his bedroom at the time.

88. Bam said, “it’s dangerous!”

89. I said, “I need to see it to believe it!”

90. “Let’s go together,” Bam said.

91. As we walked into the closet, we felt comfortable, but little did we know reality was about to change.

92. ...Suddenly as we went into the closet the lights faded and we were in a room, or a cave—with what could have been

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

electronics. Bam said, “you see it, now we should go back home,” and we did.

93. We reentered Bam’s bedroom puzzled, but alive.

94. I looked at Bam, he looked back, and I said, “it’s an open door!”

BTNS Insert 12

Walking over to throw away, you know this dollar twenty-five brownie mix box that I just bought at the dollar store at the mall, so I’m walking to throw it out after I, like, quickly ate the stuff, and I’m thinking how desolate this place is, I mean, it’s not just one time or two times or three times or four times or five times, but it’s like over and over, repeatedly. It’s like one of those empty lots, you know, you see on those online videos like the nightmarish pictures and stuff or even the liminal spaces you know and you get this like empty store that’s closed down and the multitude struggle here for years and you know you almost want to go back online and in the comments be like *we can put that back somehow*, you know, I mean because, you know, like Toys R Us, like closing or... You know, maybe there’s another big one where it was some sort of Kroger *is kind of coming to mind* or you know, Save-a-Lot or Ames or something. You know, we get this giant superstore that just closes suddenly, *it would really suck if Walmart went down*, you know, it is one of those where you would like to say, “*come on, let’s just group up and try to pull this together, it cannot be hard to open one of these things*,” you know. And uh... you know, but besides that, I can stay afloat with, I can stay afloat if all of it is closed.

2.) I still could, you know stay afloat, and that’s why I wanted to make this excerpt, because there is a reality out there, alright... And I’m going to try to write this so I can try to catch you know, I got the whole story in the Behind the Night Sky book, and I don’t think I caught this as well as it could be caught yet!

3.) But, you know, one idea, and I’ll just try to say this: there was a whole VR store that this guy owned, a whole VR supermarket with everything inside, it was 3D modeled inside and then he connected it to the online world in fiction. *And so, like, you’re playing the game Closet Space and you can go like hang out at his Supermarket and like, you know, maybe get trapped in the store or something, which is cool, you know...*

4.) And then there’s like, *and I’m full of this stuff*, you know the... I could stay afloat on that idea. I’m serious. And not only that, but there’s also a science behind it. There’s a little, you know... um, science behind it. Because I mean if you think about the wave particle thing in quantum mechanics, that idea right then in that supermarket, you know, whether that if we were ever wave or particle, right then, I mean, you know, it’s kind of like a logic that even if you’re in the closet space in *BTNS* and this guy’s virtual world, the only thing that’s making you think particle is because you want to know something. I mean, you could probably forget that whole logic about the particle thing while online and think it’s a supermarket right then and grow up and get raised and a whole new thing.

5.) It’s probably what we...

6.) The real thing was, is that it was something like the closet space in all three *BTNS* stories and then we grew up somehow, you know that that’s like an actual logic too, I think...

7.) But anyways, the more science is, you know, is that the... the enzyme building, *because I mean if it is a virtual particle, right, your body must be at a certain frequency to see that particle*, you know, but you must be in a certain situation. You know, say you take a, you know, a glass of soda, no you take a bottle of soda and you put it in paper. That, that

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

wave, uh, you know that paper can go places that a normal bottle of soda can't, so, you're at a wave right then to see that so, you know the wave you're at, you know whether it's a high frequency or low frequency, you know depending on... that's the work idea right there!

8.) So, I mean say through eight hours of labor at a supermarket, stocking things, you're at a certain wavelength, so when it comes time to rest, after working you can think you're drinking a real soda right then.

9.) Um, and that's, I think that is where uh... you know the, uh, the logic, um, you know, this is my hope. You know, um, is that the idea doesn't die right there, I mean, it's uh. It, it's, it's written in people to know that if they work hard, they're going to stop working. I mean, some people will like, kind of like erase bur themselves, you know, that's too extreme though, you know, with where they make kind of pain so they can stop it, so they can feel good.

10.) It's the same idea right then. But it is probably, you know, scientific and technical to get it just right, so that way, you know, you can work a nine to five and then take a break at the end of the day and get something to eat or go hang out and feel just as normal as ever, you know...

11.) It's the same idea with the mall, maybe. I mean, I don't know why this mall is fading out in my eyes but, you know I wonder what brings something like that back and it's most likely just being at a particular wave in society.

12.) You know, I just have high hopes for you know industry, more industry than you know... fear of climate change or something, um... but yeah, I mean my hopes is that it's still not going to die because I mean it was sitting there, it is still sitting there and, you know, I mean, I put the logic of quantum building in *TV Snow* and I kind of put it in *Behind the Night Sky*; I hope it came out right, I don't think it did, though, but you know.. It's pretty much building VR worlds with your, with your mind!

13.) I mean, and that is not going to go well, I don't think. But I mean. Your mind is, you know it's got like the memory of a computer, so, even if it's not in the mind, I mean, it's still definitely something on the computer, you could build the VR world in the computer, and then there's the vibrations of taste and smell and or stuff... um, you know...

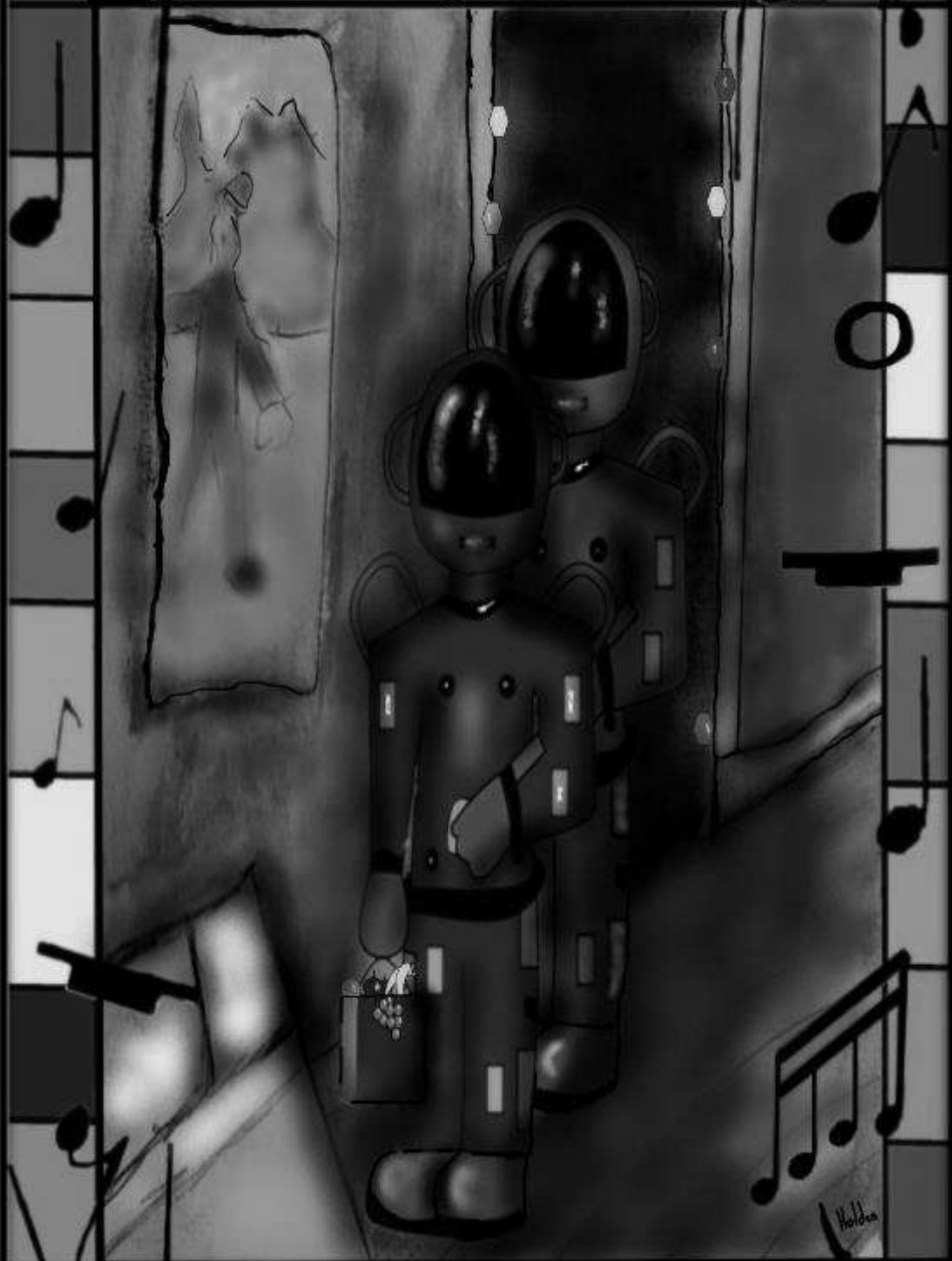
14.) There is no reason... why that cannot be brought back to life!

15.) I think it can be brought back to life whether it is a wave or particle.

16.) That I think that is, that is in quantum mechanics right now. I mean, uh, that is the idea: *was the mall ever wave or particle* that we can't go in there and just kind of VR... and then let the people think what they want to think about it. I mean if... we have better control over VR through waves. And you can pretty much just, you know, I could build the mall and then let people think what they want to think, and you know... some people, their waves are particles because you know, they, they're like that "*Princess and the pea*" story, where she had all these beds, and she could still feel that little pee underneath her. And you know, they are probably just rich...

17.) People can feel those types of waves. As a particle, you know, because they are rich, they would be rich because, I mean, if you really want to be rich, you will come up with a way to have power over everything. And then you could just say you kind of put it on fire, you know, until the elements melted, until you had control over everything. But you know, I mean in political form if the malls did fall, there's always... you know, claiming quantum mechanics and saying, well, we didn't know and maybe we want to pretend it's our imagination or virtual reality and then it is like resurrected right then!

Chapter 3



Reality

Holden

Reality



I graduated in two thousand three! ...I was officially a graduate of *West Dale High School*, it was a big graduation, a lot of people—three thousand students graduated! We are all in harmony, all sharing the same goal, to make the lives of others great walked up on an outdoor stage to receive our Diploma!

2. Bam and I walked up together, as if fate—as in other occasions, has purposely placed us in similar situations to deliberately expose the workings of itself: the hidden gears of time, the greater gears above time—placing time in its gears, making itself—fate. Order follows all those that live without the order of time—according to Mr. Ward, in his own words, “everything is possible, but remember—just because you are in, does not mean you are in, there is always a bigger gear to be moved by!”

3. After graduation there were refreshments, and for me a strong sense of accomplishment! My mom and dad were there!

4. As they told me how proud they were of me, I happened to notice Bam’s dad talking to Bam about the brand-new car sitting out in the parking lot...the one Bam’s dad promised to get him if he graduated!

5. I was happier for him than for me, I knew that he struggled to just do; for Bam, doing was hard enough, and finishing was more than his character. I had a lot of emotions to express, but I could not get my mouth to function, I had so much on my mind...Alice, the baby, my job, and adult future!

6. I follow Bam out into the parking lot to see his new car and I could barely speak, I managed to say, “that’s a nice car!” ...All that was on my mind forbid me to be real!

7. Alice was there with our child, she was happy for Bam, “nice car Bam” Alice said. She did not graduate with us, she had

graduated the year prior, before we went to Florida together.

8. After graduation Alice and I went home with our four-month-old child to put together the finishing touches of our day, in doing so, we laid Gabriel in her crib, and as the night approached, we got tired and went to bed.

9. As we laid in bed, I quietly said, "Alice, while I was at Bam's the other day, he showed me a portal he had made."

10. "I have a portal when I look at my child" she replied, without regards to the weird...absolute weirdness of either a portal or a lie of a portal!

11. In my own humility said, "a portal to what?"

12. "Home" she replied.

13. I could tell she knew something, but there was so much strange stuff happening, I did not think much of it, all I could do with the conversation is stuff it into my subconscious and hope for her grace to be intelligent, *honesty is the best policy!* Hopefully through a fake *okay*, I could heal my mind from the odd occurrences that took place.

14. As Alice drifted off to sleep, I began to think...

15. ...Work was going well, I held down the job for nine months, the job pays eight dollars an hour, that was about a thousand a month; rent was about six hundred, there was not enough money!

16. Most of the past nine months we relied on our parents to pay the bills and they had grown tired of supplying money. Flashes of memories from the past few weeks began to play in my mind; I could remember one day when Alice went out filling out applications. I could tell she knew very little about getting a job, but as life would, within a week she found one, it was at a pet-store; her job at the pet-store was to feed the pets and clean the store. I remember how happy she was to find that pet-store job; she enjoyed her job very much!

17. Odd things about our daily lives roamed my thoughts, where did the baby come from, how did Bam get a portal in his closet, *as a charged stone reality, I was still wondering if that worked*, and why does everything go on as normal when nothing is normal.

18. I try to talk to others about it, but I cannot find the words!

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

19I get bothered about reality covering up what Alice claimed was the truth, and not only Alice, but I walked through the portal at Bam's house, and we have all seen enough to know that what we think we see does not mean we actually see it; but everyday life goes on as normal, all the people carry on as if their truth is the only truth, and I am left wondering, did the portal really happen, was Alice and I the parents of Gabriel, and who or what is trying hard to cover my eyes, so that I cannot see what the apparent truth is!

20. Maybe Bam, is right, the light we see is ancient light; because it is expired, it appears to cover everything that would be new.

21. ...But even if Bam was right, we still must fight against false and misleading light!

22. ...That is why I must get back to Bam's house, I must go back through the portal, I must prove to myself that the light we see is no longer relevant for gravity, that is if it can be proved. After all the creatures were nice to us, and I cannot forget the dream I had last night, if it was a dream, the creatures talked with me, they told me that the baby Alice gave birth to was mine, that I gave it to her—that the child has the same blood type as me, it was produced by me.

23. Maybe there is a reality out there, maybe it is within the City of Orion, a city where all knowledge is stable, but maybe not!

24. In my mind, in all the confusion of what others have told me, I knew I needed Bam's portal, I need to prove the other reality, *whether it be real or fake*, the reality that makes you wonder but never proves itself strong enough to *be*!

25. Suddenly I remembered Bam questioning Mr. Ward, and Mr. Ward responded with, "that is a stupid question!" I knew that—that fantasy reality *was not strong enough to be*!

26. But I must go...

27. I did not want to go alone, so the next day I invited Max, Alice, Brendon, Bam, and Brenda to record the event. I needed documentation of when I walk through the portal and go into another dimension to prove a reality.

Reality 2

All four showed up on time with their camcorders and recorders. As the moment came, I kissed Alice and told her I would be back in one hour, or possibly now I walk in—seeing that I was disobeying the structure of time; hopefully I will be back with some new information. Before I got to the door two men came out. They looked like astronauts, but their suits were black, red, and blue, instead of white. The sight of their big helmets startled us who were in the room.

2. We all looked at the spacemen with awe, wondering what to say, but before we could say anything they said, “*greetings!*” in a mechanical voice. My friends and I said hi back. They started the conversation with the answers, “we know why you want to walk through this portal,” the spacemen said, “we have come to give you answers. This portal that you were going to enter is a safe portal, and on the other side of this portal is a safe place. As you have seen, life has changed for you over the past few years, not only you, but the whole earth. Your cellphones have gotten more developed, your computers have advanced, and you have seen and listened to strange things. All these things were meant to happen. The world on the other side of this portal is causing them to happen. We are what your world calls space-travelers, we have come many light-years from the environment you now live in. We can tell you—that many years ago, during our travels, when we found earth—that we had not expected, but found, and found our old-light-sources had taking on a life of their own—we were shocked!”

3. “Our civilization,” said the spacemen, “began a long time ago, it began in deep space—when we were small, small at that time, and we began to populate the universe...undercover obviously; and slowly we turned the universe into one big city, but in the process of taking over, we sent out energy, the energy was in the form of light waves.”

4. “Because times are different under different suns, plus with time-travel, some of the light, your present light was under the power of—things like time, that would mean time is above light in the order of power. But that does not mean that time or fate has yet made your light or rather the earth part of itself. Once

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

our city was finished, casually—we could not help but notice our discharge of light and that the light had become the earth.”

5. The other spaceman said, “the earth is living in the past and we are from the future; in our time we are from the future!”

6. I asked a question, “you are from the future, would you know what I am about to say next?”

7. The spacemen said, “the light in this room is controlling the environment, so no, but we know your trying to walk through this portal. We also knew to send out that light while you were on the beach in nineteen-ninety-nine—the light that blinked a few times. At that time, we needed to give you a reason to find us, so your world would collide with ours.”

8. Alice asked, “if you bring your world into ours what happens to the light we see?”

9. The spacemen said, “we have a purpose for the earth, it has its own time! I will tell you more later; the first thing we need to do is show you the possibilities of Orion.

10. We suddenly felt comfortable; Brenda, now relaxed uttered “I’m hungry—”

11. In a moment, in a flash of light we noticed that the spacemen were holding bags of food, that had previously not been there. We ran over to them and grabbed the bags. We could not believe our eyes, there were cookies, doughnuts, apples, and oranges. Once we picked what we wanted to eat the spacemen said, “we may not have known what you might have said next, but we knew you were hungry.”

12. “How did you get the food so quickly” I asked.

13. “In the future, where we live, we simply send—to the past—the proper wavelengths,” the spacemen answered.

14. “Food is a wavelength?” Bam asked—surprisingly.

15. As we were eating, the spacemen thought it was their time to leave, but they said they would be back in a couple of days to bring us all inside the city.

16. Immediately after they left, Brenda with doubt in her voice said, “do you four believe them?”

17. “No,” we answered but was sure that what took place happened although the surrounding light told us otherwise. It took a day before we considered the possibility that the earth had its own time, while creatures outside of that time had absolute

reality.

18. As we talked about it, Brendon said, “what could the earth be for if it did have its own time.”

19. It would not surprise me if life were bigger,” I said, “that’s the point of the earth to explore the universe!”

20. Brenda disagreed, “the earth is a fish tank of someone’s doing, and these spacemen are trying to take over!” she said.

21. “There not trying to take over,” Alice said, “the reason I got a pregnancy-test was because one of those spacemen showed up and told me to get one. With all my heart I wanted to believe them, it was my dream come true, a baby.”

22. Together after a couple of days we planned on going back to the portal, we wanted to be shown around the city. The day we planned on exploring the city was on a Monday. I called my Boss at work and told him I was sick. Alice did likewise.

23. As we approached Bam’s bedroom wondering if the spacemen would show up...Bam’s bedroom door opened and there stood the men with helmets. We said, “hi, we want to ask you more about your world.”

24. They stretched their hands out toward us and to our surprise they handed Alice some money. The spacemen looked into Alice’s blue eyes and said, “this money is for the baby, we know you cannot afford to take time off from work.”

25. She said, “I sort of do not believe you, or my friends do not.”

26. “The environment that surrounds us does not believe us, let us go through the portal and you, and your friends will see for yourself,” the spacemen said.

27. Brendon got fearfully concerned and went back home, but Alice, Brenda, Max, Bam, and I decided—we would finish up the journey. The spacemen gave us a couple of hours before everything would be ready, and we could safely walk through the portal. As they left, they said, “*we will return!*” We took a seat on the floor and decided we would wait in the same spot.

28. As we were waiting, I said, “if this dimension does not know about the other than we will still be at the same time, once we get back!”

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

29. “That’s probably how they could change the earth,” Alice added.

30. Soon the spacemen came back and guided us through the portal. Once we got through, we were in a room, it looked like some sort of command station, there were lights and buttons everywhere. We noticed doors and hallways. The spacemen led us to one of the rooms. As I walked into the room, I noticed my anxieties left and I felt that throughout my whole life I had been living a lie, I felt as if I belonged. The others felt it too; we all looked at each other with smiles on our faces. The men asked, “do you feel better?”

31. “Yes!” we answered.

32. I know we were here for a reason, so I got quick to the point; I asked, “what is your world.”

33. One of the spacemen opened his hand and a small hologram appeared on his palm, I could see creatures and lands. He told us it was the beginning of their city.

34. At that time within the hologram there was a variety of creatures, then they discovered something like quantum, and started using it to expand to other parts of the universe. As that planet was doing so, other planets were doing the same thing. After a while they came together to build the universe. They used strong forces on a device called a space-pad. With the space-pad they could make, and control suns, build walls, and whatever else they needed, but one thing was neglectful and that was using light. The emissions they caused while building the city left pockets of rebellion, one of those places was the earth.

35. ...But they found a cure for the rebellion and that was to find a purpose for the untamed light.

36. In fear, and sensing the void of space, the idea present of never returning to the earth, I decided to ask where we were in the Universe and where was the place that we were having this conversation. The men told us that we were in a ship, and we were flying through large channels of the city, and that at that moment we were going to one of the gardens within the city.

37. In the meantime, the spacemen said, “we will show you around this ship.”

38. “Okay” we replied.

39. As we were walking, I asked one of the men what

governs the *atoms*, they explained that the city controls everything in the known universe, whether they took the atoms by force or bought them.

40. “Force? You seem too nice to be forceful!” Alice said.

41. “Only, when necessary,” they explained.

42. “Could you rebuild my video game if needed, the same video game” I asked, and they expressed a yes.

43. We walked up and down the hallways; the light was dim. We noticed within the ship strange vegetation growing alongside the walls, the smell smelled like a frog or a snake, but there were lights and electronics everywhere which gave us a sense of comfort. Within a few hours we arrived at our destination.

44. Once we got off the ship, we walked toward gardens, pleasant gardens, with stone paths. The air was heavy, and I feared my surroundings; everything around expressed itself to be much greater, I feared to do wrong. I through seeing could tell that they had an answer, but the answer was a real fear for play, for not breathing in the heavy air, for not making this part. There were creatures walking up and down the paths. Everything was different than the earth, even the atmosphere smelled different. Alice and I were a bit spooked, but Max and Bam seemed fine.

45. As we walked along the paths exploring this new world, the space men started talking, they told us that most of the plants and creatures were created, like as if they were a programmable video game or computer.

46. “By whom” I asked.

47. “By our great ancestors” they replied.

48. Bam asked, “who created them?”

49. “That is a stupid question,” one of the spacemen barked.

50. Bam began to fear.

51. The spacemen found that hard to answer, because there was not an answer, they privately asked me, “*try to explain time existing?*” but I found that hard to explain.

52. They were trying to explain order to the surrounding environment. I did not get much, but that some creatures were greater, and some were less, that if we lived previously without

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

these things, these answers, that we were not going to find them here, that we should not use this experience to be stupid.

53. After hours of walking, they wanted our help, they wanted our vote: to give the city our power.

54. I knew once I got home, I would be a different person, due to the past light, so I was not quick to give them anything.

55. They explained to us that we could be part of the city, that we could live there, we bring the city more alive, and we are an investment in the city.

56. We were confused.

57. *Were they saying we had a job in the city? That everything is within some giant computer and our job was to program it?*

58. I almost considered giving my power right there and then, because I have always loved television, videogames, cartoon-animation, etc.

59. But I did not....

60. After we walked through the garden a while and saw wonderful things! The spacemen thought it was good for us to go back to the ship and explore other places. They decided to take us to the inner workings of the city. We were on the ship for what seemed like days before we arrived.

61. As the ship approached, a golden city appeared through the window of the command station. On close inspection it was...it was a golden city! We quickly got out of the ship and started walking to the golden buildings. It looked like a giant computer program. I asked the men what the words in the gold were. The blue spaceman looked at me and said, "ones and zeros' and positive and negative."

62. *Apparently, this answer must be universal*, I thought!

63. As we were talking a creature came up to us, it looked like a grey alien, but it was not, because I had never seen a grey alien, but that is what I would expect if I saw one! ...It, kind of looked like a soul or something, whatever it was it did not talk through its mouth it talked through its mind and within our brains it started telling us things.

64. I was nauseous as it came close, he continued insisting that life was sort of horrible, while laughing at his smell, the smell of a long time in space, "that miserable smell, without

it I perhaps die, or can no longer rest,” he would say **jokingly**—while laughing, comforting us as we gazed upon his fearful appearance. “The smell is my strength!” was the last I heard as he turned down a hallway and was out of sight. This creature let me know that the nausea would not kill me, nor the fear written in his appearance...I decided to laugh along with him—with all respect!

65. I feared nobody else heard him because he was sounding in my brain. I asked Bam if he heard it, and thus, I assured myself that they did. ...He sure loved the sickness and smell of a very, exceptionally long time in its skin.

66. It started telling us things about gold and how the gold was made. He lived for a long time, much like the ancestors did.

67. He finally stopped sending us messages and went back to work.

68. We spent days walking in the golden city, we went up towers, through alleys and met a lot of creatures along the way. The gold seemed to be a creature all on its own, as if it could be talked to. I was learning so much it was hard to process.

69. After we left the golden city, the spacemen traveled back towards the portal in Bam’s bedroom.

70. I was tempted to live within the city hearing about all its goodness, but I had my doubts. What if this was an attempt to steal things from the earth, what if they were wrong.

71. The spacemen assured us that once we got back to the earth, we would have plenty of time to think about everything.

72. Before we arrived home, the space men expressed that they would come back in a year. We said our goodbyes and walked through the portal and into Bam’s bedroom. Once we got back, the time had not changed, it was still three o’clock. We were all tired, it had felt like months since we left.

73. We spent the next three days in Bam’s apartment. Some slept on the couch, some slept on the floor; I slept on the chair. Within the three days the ancient light crept back into our minds, and we were full of worry; we did not talk much about the journey for a while, all was covered up!

Chapter 4



Do I love?

Do I love



We stayed at Bam's house for three days, we didn't talk much, slept mostly. On the third day we decided it was time to go home. Brenda went to her dorm and Max went back to his apartment. Alice and I went to my parents to pick up our baby—we named Gabriel.

2. As we walked into my parents' house my dad heard the door open, and rushed to it, and expressed that he was glad we were home.

3. "Gabriel missed you" he said. We told him we went on vacation, that is what the spacemen said to say. I picked up Gabriel and placed her in her car seat, and off we went back home. Alice and I both had work in the morning, so we went to bed early, we did not talk much, but Alice mentioned she loved the city, the city of Orion.

4. A couple of days went by, and everything was as normal as always, but there were the occasional strange things that would happen, but the strangest thing was nobody seemed to notice the giant city outside of our time domain. I do not even seem to notice—it as well—now that I am back on the earth. As time went forward, we did not talk much about our adventure; but inwardly I did. My major concern was the rest of society, did they know about Orion?

5. When my friends and I talked about the city we thought that it could have been a hallucination or a foreign creature playing a cruel trick on us. In the end we concluded: *we could not let our experience get in the way of real life, for example friends, children, our parents, or close loved ones.* We could not abandon the earth to pretend a city was out there...Our home was this planet and these space men seemed to be a threat; in the city they seemed to have a power to control our minds, but once broken free we feared what would happen if these spacemen did take

over our planet.

6. Alice did not see it that way, she thought that the city gave us Gabriel, and that the city could be a good thing for evolving humans.

7. Because Alice, I and some of the others no could figure it out, I decided to take a closer look at the earth, maybe even check with my parents to see what they knew about alternative realities, after all we had a year before the space men would be back.

8. Bam and I sat in his room gazing at the portal he had made. He understood I wanted more information about the earth and said, “before you look at anything or study anything you should take a good close look at my dog, she’s smart!”

9. Brendon said, “as well you should talk to my parents because they do out-of-this-world type things, things that you can now relate too.”

10. “Brendon, if your family is odd then why did you not come on the adventure with us?” I asked.

11. Brendon said, “My parents what to take me to the place you went to, but their own way; I told them about what I saw in Bam’s bedroom, and they thought it was an average thing.” *Brendon was awfully close to his parents and did a lot of things together, even the strange and out of this world type things.*

Do I love 2

One day while Alice was at work and I was watching the baby, I took the baby to Bam’s place, he kept mentioning something about his dog and I was curious about what he was saying. Gabriel needed to spend some time out of the house as well.

2. It was a pleasant summer day as we drove through town, I could smell food in the air, people were busy everywhere.

3. We got to Bam’s and I gave a friendly knock and mentioned we were there for the dog, he replied “come on in.” As soon as I opened the door his dog Lacy ran up to us and started greeting us with some friendly barks.

4. Bam said, “I think she knew you were coming.” Lacy

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

quickly ran up to her large stash of toys and grabbed her favorite one and brought it to me. It was a tennis ball, I thought she wanted me to throw it, so I did. Lacy in response ran after it and put it in her mouth and brought it back to me.

5. Bam said, “she’s a smart girl!”

6. I said, “what do you mean?”

7. “You might not think that a dog has a spirit or emotions, but Lacy does, that’s why she is playing with you, because it makes her happy. Pretend you’re going to throw your baby on the floor” Bam said. I grabbed Gabriel and pretended to throw her, and Lacy suddenly responded with a growl, as if to warn me not to do it. Bam said “if the city of Orion is a good city it will make Lacy happy.

8. My thought was if Lacy was alive would she get a house in the city like they offered us.

9. I said, “I don’t think Lacy is alive, but one thing that would utterly convince me that she is...is to paint an intelligent picture.

10. Bam quickly got some paint and some paint brushes and brought them to Lacy, “paint daddy” Bam said. Lacy slowly painted a picture of what looked like a man. I could not believe it. Was I living a shallow life or did the surrounding world change very quickly? I began to fear that some of my past mistakes were a little bit worse than I made them out to be.

11. “Not everyone knows about this” Bam said.

12. I never realized it, but Bam’s dog Lacy was alive, I never thought outside of my world to consider what he was talking about when he would mention Lacy; I now wondered who created her, who programmed her, where did she come from? Bam said he was the father, but I brushed that off a long time ago.

13. I said, “Bam, I reconsider that you might have made sense all those times I didn’t listen to you.” Bam must have had ties to the city if I reconsider all the strange things, he told me.

14. “Bam did the dog come from the city of Orion?” I asked.

15. “...If it did it was me in the future, and I would have sent it back through some sort of portal to now, but then I would have to wonder—how do I live in the future without my best friend,” Bam answered.

16. Hmm... the future I thought...now that I had this talk with Bam, I feel like I have a greater knowledge; maybe the space men were from the future, maybe they were sent here with good intentions; if they could travel through time then they must have been watching us our whole lives, and maybe it was us living in the future who was watching us, maybe the spacemen were sent here to give us the full reality of what we were to do on the earth. What if Bam was telling the truth, what if Bam created Lacy and sent her here through a time machine?

17. Later that day, Bam and I decided to go out and get something to eat, and afterwards we would go to the beach; we took Lacy with us.

18. First stop was a fast-food joint; I ordered a hamburger and Bam got pizza. As soon as Bam got his pizza, he asked Lacy if she wanted some, Lacy replied with a friendly bark. I realized Lacy was listening to him, she was just as alive as we were. Now I knew why Bam always referred to his dog whenever I talked about something paranormal, because there is nothing stranger than a dog who walks outside without shoes, but who listens and responds.

19. Why did I not see it sooner? ...I think it was because I was so involved in how technology worked, that I never considered how the animals' work.

20. After lunch at the fast-food joint, we went to the beach, I was eager to go. It was a hot day and a quick dip in the water would be nice. As I went into the water Bam decided to play fetch with Lacy. Lacy ran back and forth returning the stick. I could not swim long, because I had to watch Gabriel, and not only watch her, but make sure she did not get overheated.

21. *It is too hot of a day to be out here*, I thought as I got out of the water, I need to go home. "Bam, we need to go back home, because Gabriel is not looking so good."

22. I could not wait to get back to my air-conditioned apartment!

23. Alice slowly opened the door to our apartment. "Hi honey" she said.

24. "Hi" I replied.

25. "How was your day? she asks.

26. I began to tell her about my day, "Bam and I went to

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

the beach, and I studied his dog for the sake of Orion.” I mentioned that the dog was smart, and concluded, that in the ancient light of the earth we cannot see everything. She seemed to pretend to know what I was talking about, but I knew she did not. I was trying to say she was smart, like the city of Orion smart, smart enough to have her own house within the city—as a creature equal to humans, but if I said that I would have thought she would think I lost my mind.

27. I had to discover the truth about this earth, why did we all get along in the city, but now think it was some sort of hallucination. I could no longer convince any of my friends that living in the city was a good thing, they were all trying to make money and sustain their hardships on earth. ...Plus, I feared the creatures—out there behind the night sky; I continued battling within myself, to tell myself it would all be alright, that they are not taking over, they most likely will not be back next year, or at least I began to hope they would not be!

28. I knew that one of my main concerns with the city was: I had to vote it in. ...I had to wonder if I voted in the city would my family be at risk. Then a thought came to my mind what if they had already known about the city and voted it in themselves, then another thought popped into my head, what if they were from the future? I never considered these things before, and I think it was due to the light of the past; the light of the past dominated the earth.

29. I had to question some of my family, but my family and I rarely talk about such things, so it would be a challenge.

30. I went to my parents, I said “mom, dad, what do you honestly think about all the strange things that have happened over the past couple of years? Things have been appearing out of thin air!”

31. Mom said “the forest appeared out of thin air, and you don’t question that. People in this world have a variety of different opinions when it comes to the question...some people believe the forest was put here by ancient ancestors, some think it was a powerful god, some think it was evolution.”

32. In anger I said, “who do you think put it here?”

33. Dad said, “legend has it that our dead ancestors kept living, and that life that they live is through the forest, so maybe

the strange things you see are our ancient ancestors coming back and forth from the earth.”

34. I was excited to hear that.

35. Soon after the talk with my parents I jumped into my car and went home. On the way back to my apartment I had some powerful thoughts, first thought was: who put the forest there, I never considered the forest, I suppose that the light of the past never allowed me to fully see the forest in the light of the future: maybe it was our ancestors. Suddenly I yelled I got it, our ancestors live in the city and come back and forth taking care of the forest! ...But how could they physically make the forest?

36. *The spacemen said that they were the ones controlling material things through words. Maybe the words they type are the things controlling the forest. Maybe they control the positive and the negative of the forest from within the city.* I was excited to think these thoughts and quickly got home.

37. Upon arriving I noticed Alice cooking supper.

38. “Hi honey, how was your day?” she asked.

39. “I went to my parents to study the nature of things” I said.

40. “What’s the nature of things?” she replied.

41. “In uncertainty,” I replied, “they made a good point about my question; they might have considered our ancient ancestors to be the ones helping us out. ...I think they—thought they might be helping us out, and there doing that from within the city.”

42. “Honey, I have a confession to make, before, we together went to the city, I went there, and you were there, but not in this life, in other words you were from the future. You were in a large building, and you said that you created Gabriel and put her within me, or rather in my world per se, and wanted both of us to raise it. The ancient ancestors that your parents might be talking about, might be living on the earth right now!” she said.

43. I could not believe what she had just said, I ran over to her and kissed her and told her that I loved her.

44. That night I lay next to her wondering how, in the future, I could have created a baby and what would it be like to meet my future self. I drifted off to sleep and had a dream; I saw me working hard within a house that resided in the city of Orion,

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

I could see me typing what looked like a computer program; my future self looked at me and explained that I made Gabriel, that I spent much time on her—in the future—as a daughter, I was told to keep it a secret just like Alice had. I told myself I would not tell a soul.

45. The next morning, I woke up, Alice had already gotten up and went to work. As I walked into the kitchen, I smiled to myself, knowing I had a daughter, I was happy! I sat down at the kitchen table and noticed a note, it was from Alice, she wrote: Darling last night I had a dream, I dreamt that we were living in the city, and we had many children; we had all these children, through patience and love, we got permission from the city to create living people! We live together and are wealthy. We live in a rich mansion—that was created through wavelengths of all sorts. I love you and want us to always be together, but I want your heart to be in this, so do more research and discover yourself and what the light has done for you.

46. I loved that letter; I kept it with me for the longest time. Although the letter gave me comfort, I could feel my humanity and I would not express the deep emotions within my heart. I had to get more answers, I stuffed the letter in my pocket, walked out the door, got into my car and went to work.

47. My job at the paper mill was to put the glue on the paper; the glue held the paper fibers together.

48. For the past few months, I worked alongside of a young man named Mike, all the employees called him Far-Out-Mike, I think it was because he acted like he was from another planet.

49. On this day he started a conversation, “you have a glow about you today” he said.

50. “I love my wife and child” I replied.

51. “Being in love” he said, as thoughts moved through his mind, “love comes from being home, home makes you love, I don’t love here, only when I’m home!”

52. “Mike, you live out of a van” I replied.

53. “That’s not my home” he said.

54. They were right.... I thought he could be from another planet! ...But I was still wondering how he understood love.

55. Later that evening as I was driving home from work, I started thinking about Far-Out-Mike... What if he were from another planet, I could not think about it at work, I was too busy, I should have asked him! ...I wonder what he would say, I wonder if he knew anything about Orion.

56. In a hurry I turned the car around and drove back to the paper mill; I was hoping Mike had not left yet.

57. I pulled in the driveway and noticed Mike's van still parked in the parking lot of the paper mill. He walked out the front doors; I opened my door and said, "Mike!"

58. "Yeah" he replied.

59. "Earlier we talked about love, I wonder have you ever had a home outside of this planet?"

60. He laughed and said, "you wouldn't believe me if I told you, nobody does, but my home is amongst the dead!"

61. "The dead, how is there any love amongst the dead?" I asked.

62. "The dead is another word for: others that are not from this earth" he replied and continued speaking, "this world is a virtual world, sort of like a video game."

63. "I'm having a hard time believing that" I said.

64. "If you ever do understand that you will find home, with love attached!" he said, as he opened the door to his van and drove off.

65. I was glad he did, I had to get home before Alice started worrying, she tended to do that.

66. As I drove home, I kept thinking about Alice, and her love for me, as well as my love for her. I recalled the letter and remembered I had to dig deep into my heart because I greatly feared this place (i.e., the earth would be the last place I would see her.)

67. Strange I thought, I love her, but tend to believe we will be split up by leaving the earth, I could not let that happen; in my mind I was weak, and most of the time I just went with the flow, with little resistance, but then I reconsidered my situation and knew I needed to invest more time in my studies.

68. "Alice" I said, as I opened the fridge and grabbed a snack, "what's for supper" I waited all day hoping she was cooking pea soup, she made a great pea soup, it warmed me up

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

on the inside and reminded me of cold winters days with my parents.

69. “Pea soup is on the stove” she graciously said. I grabbed a bowl of it and went into the living room and started explaining that I felt like I had been waiting for her my whole life, and the day finally came that I found love. She said, “I love you, and every time I look at our child, it reminds me of you, and I feel like the luckiest woman alive, I want to be with you.”

70. I then noticed we were not as close to each other as we could be, *I think it was due to all the unanswered questions*, I tried to explain to her that my heart was rooted in love, love for her.

71. That night we lied in bed trying hard to get close to one another, we did the most intimate of things, we talked long into the night, and played like children, but I still felt that we were lying about our relationship, only when I mentioned Gabriel did, I feel close enough. I knew that if the dream of the future me—was true, then I needed a bond of love to hold us together.

72. The next morning, I happily watched her brush her teeth, comb her hair, grab her car keys, and go to work. She told me the night before that the job at the pet store was not paying enough and she wanted to go back to school, she wanted to study animals.

73. Alice loved animals she has a special bond with them, when she walks into the pet store the animals calm down as if they know she is helping them, her Boss thinks she would make a great animal doctor.

74. I got promoted at the papermill and did not have to work as much, that meant more time with Gabriel. Alice could go to school if she wanted to, but I knew that would mean a lot of student loans, but everything requires money, so I encouraged her to go.

75. Shortly after Gabriel turned one years of age—Alice started *Sail University*, she went there to study animals, the school was very expensive, *fifty-thousand-dollars for a bachelor’s degree in animal communications*, Alice was not concerned she was sure we could pay it back.

76. It was fall when she started, all the leaves in Vermont were colored and were falling to the ground. I drove Alice to the

first day of school.

77. Once at school Alice got out of the car, I ran around the front of the car to wish her luck with a kiss, the fall breeze did the same. She grabbed her bag and told me she would be done around eight.

78. As I drove back to our apartment, I could still see Alice's brown and purple-highlighted hair blowing in the wind, her brown eyes looking into my eyes, *I would from time to time get lost in her eyes, lost in her soul, feeling great love for her.* ...I hoped she had the same feelings for me; I loved Alice, but I could not help thinking that we were being fake...

79. Were we hiding our deepest secrets? Did she know that I had a strong sense of doubt and worry?

80. The only time I did not feel the doubt is when I looked into her eyes, I wondered if she could see it in my eyes?

81. I pulled Gabriel out of the car seat and said, "sweetie we are home."

82. Gabriel giggled.

83. A few months after Alice started *Sail University*, she withdrew herself from the awfully expensive School, I asked her what was wrong, she would insist everything was fine, but everything was not fine. She now just lay in bed, she had been there for two weeks, she even told her boss she was sick. I do not think she knew why she was acting that way.

84. I knew that we owed a lot of money to the school, and it was going to be tough to pay it back, but I would not mention my concern, hoping not to crush Alice, and like her I sort of did the same thing, insisted everything would be fine.

85. Once Alice got out of bed, and went back to work, *her Boss allowed her to return to work*, life became normal again and she opened her personal reality with me...

86. "This earth of this life is flawed," she started saying, "I think that's why I didn't finish school, because of the ultimate problem and that is the *problem*. Besides, I did not fit in with the rest of the people, they are not where I want to be when I look at the big picture, I was not sick when I laid in bed, but protecting myself from the fake world, perhaps even a little depressed—although I do not believe such exists!"

87. She then kissed me and said, "I will have to try that

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

again!”

88. ...Afterwards she began working and going about life normally

BTNS Insert 11

And so, you know, just thinking about, you know. Just track Backtrack a little bit about the store, okay, so, there's a lot of ways to pay for a store in America, right? ...whether you work another job and buy the store up front, or you invest into the company and slowly buy it that way, or you get it by inheritance and buy the store that way.

2.) So, there are a couple ways that somebody could buy a grocery store. So, this idea, you know, it's still, you know, thinking about some good words that I could describe it like. okay... so, in *Behind the Night Sky*, Maple and Alice, they go behind the night sky and they got that nice big old house... and when they take a particle out, you know, they're responsible for putting the particle back to like an enzyme type building thing... okay, so you know you get this giant mansion and inside there is a giant switchboard, like music for instance...

3.) If you turn a knob on some sort of a, you know, like a synthesizer or something, it changes the wave sound that's coming out, and then there's combinations.

4.) But... okay, so the switchboard though wouldn't be. Mr. Silly producing a sound for you... It'd be almost producing the um, the, uh, the negative.

5.) So, it'd be producing, you know, kind of like an electron flow that would, you know, there'd be like, you know, amounts of electrons rather than waves and frequencies that, you know, make us see something to be almost like a... uh, an electron gravity source, that would be you know, so in the negative it might very well be you know, the... The... *Planck's Constant*, that giant negative number and then you know the... uh, you know, most of them are, uh, positive. But they usually divide against the negative number.

6.) So, she goes down the list from playing cost and you know they'd be negative. Smaller and smaller negative numbers, and that's what the knobs and this, probably a huge number of them.

7.) And so that's how you would create the different, uh... they're different, you know... I mean, right now, with a synthesizer. I can mix sounds to make, you know, a structured song. I can mix a whole bunch of keys together and make a structured sound. And so likewise this, um, you know... uh, you know I mean to...

8.) It would it, it would mix to make certain products like a bag of chips or something... and this sound wouldn't necessarily be given like, you know, like you know, it's it wouldn't be like a, you know, a song that's given that we could record and listen to. It'd be more of a like so negative that you know would produce a creative power.

9.) Enzyme building power and that power would then kind of be recorded. And then that'd be the product within the store. And then it's like how would this sound? You know. But you know I mean how tough it would be. I mean how hard is the sound to how hard is it to create that sound in the ears.

10.) I mean maybe that maybe it's the negative isn't that negative. So, if you know it doesn't really, you know it doesn't really, we don't think about it but then again, I mean you know say you're at the *Synthesizer switchboard*, and your head starts hurting and your kind of nauseous and you feel intimidated. I mean, those all might be a combination of producing the, the sounds that then get recorded and then, you know, categorized as a yeah, uh... you know, so you know and that might be a smaller type of product that's made, you know, just a song or something.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

11.) There's also, you know, maybe the bigger ones like plastic and then you know the design for a bag of chips and the chips themselves, you know, it wouldn't be just something imaginary like a song.

12.) Our sounds to a song, but something quite a bit bigger and so would be the switchboard in your mansion that gives you the possibility to create an entire store within millions of years.

Walking down the road right now, I'm thinking about the entire map I have sitting in my head. Well, maybe not the entire map, but a good chunk of it is sitting in my head about, you know, how such a virtual world could exist, I mean. You know, uh... I mean specially, I mean even with the personal computer, the PC, I mean the recycling bin, the typing, the, the inside, the atomic structures, you know, kind of leaning more to the unified theory and then you know the switchboard and then going back to the switchboard and then what you could do, you know... Over millions of years and that. You know, so many terabytes of space, which is... obviously awesome! ...which you can add on to, and the way to make money, you know the variety of ways to make money, including just type it, some of which are in this story *Behind the Night Sky!*

14.) You know the number one plus here is we can convert energy to, you know, different, different to different kind of, uh... you know, it's like, it is like, you know, we can grow cotton and then kind of change that cotton to an energy to fit the energy need in the universe [*this if there was a need,*] which energy is now the same, the same way the solution, you know, you can kind of change energy from one condition to fit, you know, uh, the need of another condition.

15.) You could change that condition to another condition to fit a certain need.

16.) So, you know in this all energy would count, whether it's the animals or the sunlight, or you know, people's energy.

17.) Um, you know, so uh. I mean keep in mind the energy can be changed, from one condition to another condition. So that way I mean the animals' energy could almost be like human energy.

18.) Okay, so with that in mind, you know, you know you can. That energy can be exchanged for money, and that money can buy terabytes for the space or the store or products for the store. Or a bigger switchboard or something. You know or more computers are more uh, software or whatever is needed so.

19.) You know, uh... I mean, it is a cool, uh, you know, uh, a story! ...it has been on my mind for a few years now.

20.) You know, uh, it's kind of like the *recycling bin*... uh, on the *personal computer*, where you could kind of, uh, be like maybe right under your nose and you wouldn't even know.

21.) It was also put, I as well put it, I have been thinking about it for a while... I was working up at a Maple plant, could not stop thinking about it, I put some of it in *TV Snow Stew-art* about that idea with the Maple syrup, bottles could break and then could be restored. Kind of, it's one of those ongoing kinds of work type environments.

22.) And so, I mean, it's the same thing with, uh, you know, the switchboard. I mean it's just that a good way of thinking about it would be kind of you know... it's a voluntary, uh, a self-will to get up and maybe read a book or draw a picture, visit your grandma, or maybe go down to the nursing home. It's the same idea with the switchboard.

Chapter 5



An honest marriage

I mean, uh I don't know the rich communication to it, but I will just say when I was growing up, the sh*t sucked, you know... I mean, whether it was school, or basketball, or a basketball game, or doing some family outing.

23.) My thought was everybody got it, you know... It took an enzyme ability, a creative ability, to go to those things, to get those things done.

24.) And so, it is like that with the switchboard, which is kind of cool, but I don't know if everybody's going to get my language because they never let me kind of openly speak my mind about the idea.

25.) I mean, he might have been struggling. So, once they heard me, they thought I was, you know, going to knock him out of the arena. So, you know, same with, it's like reading a book... you know, you got a chapter you got to do for college or something, you know, it should be just like going up to the switchboard, and uh, you know, making uh, I don't know, but you're going to have a headache. You a little nauseated... your legs might get tired or something. And that's going to, that's going to produce those enzymes that's going to, you know maybe create the plastic kind of bag of chips. Or maybe even the chips themselves.

26.) Which really, sort of like a Burger King chip. You say something, I don't really know, but you know, I like cheese crackers or couch cheese or something, you know? But it is still cool no matter how you look at it.

27.) Yeah, I can't get it off my mind. You know, uh... I mean, I kind of started thinking about it. Well, I have been thinking about it since about 2004. But I think it's more addicting when, you know, when I add in uh the amount of gravity I got in there. You know when it comes to uh... you know, uh, adding on to uh..., an estate, you know, I mean everybody would want an estate, I mean, say you had one-hundred acres that was given to you out in the forest.

28.) I mean that's exciting to go out there and dig up some stones and slowly make a fortress out there on that one-hundred acres. You know, watch the trees grow. Maybe plant a couple of gardens. I mean that idea that's ruling idea. I mean, you know, uh. Who knows what you could do out there on one-hundred acres, as far as you know, stones and castle buildings and the rooms and you know, maybe you could dig down into a basement and add levels below you. It's exciting, it's exciting to add on to something that you know you have, you have domain over, you have control over. And uh, sometimes on Earth, things can get in our way.

29.) We can think well, we will never get that one-hundred acres, you know. And uh or uh, you know, there's no way to make money, you know, I'm just not smart enough. Um, you know, and I'll be honest with you, it looks tough from where I'm sitting, you know...

30.) And not only that, but I also mean uh... soon as you get the idea that somebody was murdered off the land in some sort of battle back when, you know it's like it's almost time to give up right there. So, to think that just maybe. You know there, uh, there could be a, you know there are more opportunities than just that one.

31.) You know that one? That one spot that could be a universe, you know universes, and then those universes could be planets with many chances, not just a few, but many. And in those many you know... you know it, it just might take a little bit of patience and just hanging in there and overtime, you know. One acre turns into two acres, and lastly one-hundred acres, which turns into an entire planet, and there's no reason to stop dreaming there. And it is most likely in that context too, where you get an acre that is two acres and three acres.

32.) Anything else is sort of fantasy, but if you like fantasy. You know, uh... Nice car, small condo, some skyscrapers, you know, and you get your VR glasses and some of the latest high-tech gear. And the graphics are excellent in those things you know.... And just playing around and you know, they are called Med beds, I notice. So that's cool, like the Matrix movies. And there's no, there's no reason to. There's no reason to, uh... not follow suit right then because I mean when you really think about that quantum mechanics wave or particle, there's no reason to hold that particle idea in high esteem unless you know, you know why you want that particle in high esteem, that particle idea. And uh, you know it's not going to be to uh war against the good idea. I mean, you don't want to take that particle idea come against tomorrow, like crazy, or, you know, some peaceful way of existence, you know? Or just go out there and murder a whole bunch of animals to state that it's a particle thing.

33.) You know, I mean, which doesn't make sense, you know, it's ridiculous to think that somebody would have the power over particle things and then use it to destroy people's lives.

34.) So, I mean, obviously there's some probably out, but I dictate it, so make light of it. We've picked that up quick and stupefy, so until we caught up with it, you know, said, hey, wait a minute, we, nobody wants to, nobody wants power to ruin our lives here.

35.) We use it for the benefit of us, you know, so maybe it technically would be in. But you know the secret of the, uh, gravity. You know, the keeper of knowledge. You know, you just must keep it all holy. I mean, right now it's just kind of an idea out there, and nobody looks too deep, and you know I'm not going to.

36.) I know, I know it is a good idea, you know, the Matrix had it going on pretty good right then. And so did other people too. You know, some conspiracy theories and some theories out there or just experiences in general. *They got fire in the sky* π one I usually refer to, especially when it comes to, you know, wave or particle. And uh, you know, sustaining the particle truth, with sort of a democracy idea and, you know, just keep it in a secret holiness...

37.) So that way we know what the particle ideas are without falling into somebody's hands who can startle us in our comfort zones. You know, throw it at us, "That moon up there, that's cool and big, you know, is that a wave moon or particle in a wave form? You know, it might fall on a particle format. I mean, it's fearful, okay, I think that about some of this..."

An honest marriage



Shortly after Alice left *Sail University*, because of the wall of impossibilities, I was at work putting glue on the papers...while talking to Far-Out-Mike; the conversation was about video games and technological advancements when suddenly one of the machines exploded due to overheating. Hot glue blasted in every direction, some hitting Mike and myself. Mike received third degree burns all over his face, I had burns on my hands; Mike and I together cried out for help. The manager noticed and immediately called 911—as we lay crippled in pain on the floor.

2. Flashes of memories began to play in my mind—laying on the floor, in fear—looking the unknown—straight in the face: Alice...I thought, what if I do not see her again, what if I am damaged?

3. I was in so much pain, my hands felt as if they were placed in extremely hot water, that they were on fire; I struggled to breathe.

4. Shortly after the machine exploded—the ambulance arrived, and they did their best to take care of us; they put us in the ambulance as we cried in pain.

5. On the way to the hospital, the emergency crew asked me if there was someone they could call, I gave them Alice's phone number.

6. "Alice, this is *NGRH* Maple has been in an accident, and we think it best if you come to the hospital as soon as possible!" the nurse said.

7. "I will be there as soon as possible" replied Alice!

8. Alice was so worried on the way to the hospital that she began to cry.

9. Gabriel seemed to sense something was wrong, she was only one year old, but she could tell that daddy had been hurt,

and started crying herself.

10. Within minutes they were at the hospital, Alice quickly grabbed Gabriel and placed her in her arms and ran into the hospital.

11. She rushed to the nurse's station, "where is Maple?" she yelled.

12. "In room 112" the nurse replied.

13. She found the room and darted over to me and hugged me and cried. "Honey, I'm glad you are okay." I lay in bed in pain as she wrapped her arms around me in the brightly lit hospital room.

14. I said, "It will be alright, but the doctors said that I will not be able to go back to work for a few years; I cannot move my hands...and my face has some burns on it!

15. "As long as you're alive I am alive" she lovingly said.

16. I was so happy to hear her voice; I felt a rush of ecstasy as she and Gabriel laid next to me.

17. As I was feeling the love the nurse walked in and gave me the opportunity to ask how Mike was, "How is Mike?"

18. "If he makes it through the night, he most likely will need some skin grafts," The nurse said.

19. That night the doctors let me go home, they told us that they would keep us updated regarding Mike.

20. Over the next couple of weeks Alice took care of my hands as well as all the burns. Alice stayed close by my side the whole time I was recovering.

21. During the second week from the time the machine exploded the doctors called and told us that Mike did not make it. Alice and I held one another trying to make sense of what did not make sense.

22. Soon after the accident I applied for workmen's compensation; within days I was approved. Alice and I were excited, we had money to live off, and not only that money, but the insurance company that represented the mill called us and told us that there might be some money for us and Mike's family!

23. During the time of my recovery Alice and I would take time to gaze into one another's eyes, and try to break down the wall, the wall that separated our relationship with one another, as well as Mike's separation from the earth. I had to wonder what

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

would have happened if that had happened in another place, a place where Gabriel was, I knew I had to find answers.

24. The city of Orion briefly entered my mind, but at this point I thought it was a dream of false expectations.

25. The phone rang, I picked it up and said “hello!”

26. “This is *United Insurance*, we have called to let you know that we sent out a check in the amount of fifty thousand dollars, we hope the money will assist in your recovery!”

27. I was happy, I hung up the phone and ran over to Alice and yelled “we got money!”

28. “How much” Alice replied.

29. “Fifty thousand dollars, it’s coming from the insurance company of the paper mill, they want to cover the damage caused by the machine” I said.

30. She looked into my eyes, as I looked back into her eyes. She started saying “the money doesn’t pay for the damage done, the money would not have paid if I lost you, I do not know what I would have done if I lost you, how could I ever love again?”

31. As I was looking into her beautiful eyes, I knew that I must marry her again; the first time I did so as a friend, but this time I wanted to be with her as a lover, and that would mean breaking down the wall between us.

32. “Alice let’s have another wedding, a big expensive wedding, it will be a party wedding, we can invite Mike’s family and all of our family, it will be sort of like a fairy tale wedding, one that we both will fall in love with” I said.

33. “I do not know, what about money for the baby?” she answered.

34. “Will have money for the baby, but first thing is first, and that is: the love we have for one another!” I spoke.

35. She smiled and softly said “okay.”

36. I told my mom we wanted another wedding, she was surprised, but was excited to help; she knew that the first wedding could have been better, and now we had the money to do it.

An honest marriage 2

The big day had come, I had not seen Alice in twenty-four hours; the night before, I was at Brendon's apartment, he and Bam gave me a night-before-wedding celebration party.

2. The first sight of Alice in her expensive beautiful wedding dress was like—first sight of a new forest: soft streams of light pour in from the tree-tops above, spacious, desirous, and home-like...safe and playful!!! Her hair radiated youth, her eyes said love, I was left wondering what I did so well in life that I am marrying her!

3. The wedding was huge, we had flower girls, cake, music, banners and best of all friends and family. My Mom had decided the best place for the marriage was in the KDF Recreational building, it was the only place that we could fit all the people. The whole wedding cost forty thousand dollars and every penny was well spent... Just to rent the KDF Recreational building was five-thousand dollars, it included the downstairs mesh hall.

4. "You may kiss the bride!" was the words I heard as I slowly moved forward to kiss Alice...

5. This time I marry her with a heart knit together with hers to form one.

6. Suddenly there was a strong applause from inside the building, I smiled at Alice, she smiled back.

7. Afterwards we all rushed downstairs to rest.

8. Downstairs, after the ceremony was over, we gathered to spend time with our friends and family, and as I was...I could not help but notice Mikes Mom. If there was one thing I wanted to do today—it was to fix the missing in my life, talking to her would be a source of closure for the accident.

9. "Mike was a good friend," I said.

10. "He still is a good friend" she replied.

11. I could remember how he said that his home was amongst the dead, I considered for a moment that he must be home, and his mother is home with him. Far-Out-Mike's home was far out, and I had to take it to heart to deal with all the unanswered questions.

12. The entire conversation, his mom stared into my eyes with confidence that her child was home.

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

13. Mike's brother noticed us talking and walked over; he congratulated me on finding such a beautiful young lady.

14. "Thanks" I replied. "Mike was a good friend, and that is why I wanted you both here to honor his life."

15. "He was a good brother!" Mike's brother said, as a tear formed in his eye as well as his mother's. I gave them both a hug, and quickly changed the subject.

16. I walked over to Alice and wrapped my arms around her and said, "I love you!"

17. She looked into my eyes and said, "I love you too."

18. She was standing by the wedding cake and cut herself a piece. She offered me some, and although I did not care to have cake now, I knew that if she offered it, it was no longer cake, it was affection!

19. Brendon walked up and said, "these are the moments; these are the things that one buries within the heart to re-live repeatedly." Brendon was like that, he cared not just for the special moments, but odd things like lint, bugs, dust.

20. He continued speaking, "love for another is something only few find, and you have found it!"

21. "I doubt myself; I doubt myself to have ever gone to Orion without you," I said, "I wish you had gone to the city Brendon! Now I wonder if I should have ever gone without your approval."

22. "If you had been there, you could have helped me out, and supported inviting in a new thing, we spent what seemed like days there.... They are coming back in little under a year, and I have not put any other pieces together.... As of right now I do not trust them!"

23. "Maple will figure it out," Alice said, "the city is a good city Brendon, but I think Maple still wishes you were there, to help with morality, you would have been great support for Maple—understanding what you do about such tininess: bugs, dust, lint, etc." Alice said.

24. Bam walked over and asked, "what are you talking about?"

25. "Where I was not," Brendon answered—with a small amount of regret in his voice.

26. "The City of Orion!" Bam concludingly said, "it was

wonderful, the gold, the colors; yet fearful—aliens, and stronger creatures; you should have been there” Bam said.

27. “I think I know what it looks like,” Brendon started saying, “my parents took me inside of what appeared to be a ship, they told me it was the traveling ship of our ancient ancestors, and that it was time for me to grasp life. I was taken to different places, some that looked like gardens—with huge colorful fruit; other places had structures made of shiny plates or something, like ancient buildings, something you might find on the earth—in an ancient ruin. I sort of wanted to long-time-build one of these places!”

28. Alice questioned, “I wonder if that is the same place as we went?”

29. Brendon added, “I am jealous of you because you might have been in another place! ...Bam we should go back to your portal! I will go in by myself! If I go in, I can help Maple, as well as you all, and I will no longer feel excluded.”

30. “After the wedding, we will” Bam replied.

31. Max and Brenda walked over...

32. Brenda says, “Hey, you two love birds, what made you two marry a second time? Max and I cannot get married the first time.”

33. I answer, “We ran into some extra money, and I wanted our wedding to have a deeper meaning.”

34. We talked throughout the night, and after all the guests were gone, Alice and I sat next to each other talking and feeling love for one another.

35. “This day could not have been better!” I spoke.

36. Alice gave a girlish smile and a silent giggle.

37. “I love you,” I said, “and hope this wedding will put an end to the wall between us, as well as the wall that keeps us from a deeper reality.”

38. “When I was a child,” she started to explain, “I always wanted to live in a ghost town, that way no one would know that I exist, to give me reason. If there were ghosts around, they would tell me that the reason is *to play games!*”

39. “I think I know what you mean, sort of like Halloween, the games, the candy, what could be better,” I agreeingly said. We laughed and got into our honeymoon car. A

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

sign in the back window said, *Just Married*.

40. Meanwhile after the wedding, Bam, Max, and Brendon went to the portal. Bam questioned Brendon and said, “are you sure you want to do this?” “Yes, I need to help out Maple!” Brendon answered.

BTNS Insert 8

This is the next day after I started making these, I'm thinking, my mind is going, I am walking to meet up with a few friends. But as I'm walking, I'm thinking, you know about uh the possible future 911 services and using that with oh, you know, maybe kind of go ahead and using some of their... There were, you know, advantages in society, and give him some of the servicemen and women the opportunity to kind of heal themselves. You know, and as I'm thinking about it, you know, there's a bit of bitterness about, you know, property rights right there. And you know, even going back to ancient times, I mean property rights too, and it wasn't TBN, it was, you know, the Middle East region. There's some. You know, there's some. There's carryover of the lack of peace right there, you know. So, whether it's used for a Christian purpose or 911 services, there's a there's a bit of a conflict right there regarding peace.

2.) And, you know, thinking about the answers last night. About you know property rights and how important this is to know you know you have a plan, have a hope for something better, you know, I mean it goes back to property rights you know...

3.) There is a real struggle when your mom's home is no longer your home, you know, huge, huge... It is better and uh... There is not a better analogy, right there, than some of the Middle East stories when it comes to whose property is. It's powerful. It's profound and you know, I can feel the bitterness inside me. I have issues right now running through me about, you know, I probably can't completely relate, but I can relate enough that you know my father, you know he couldn't he, you know, my mom had to sell her house for the taxes. And somebody went and bought the property cheap.

4.) It's just not fair.

5.) Not only that, but most of the mortals in America won't give any, uh, property deeds, most of them, a lot of them and it is not fair in the long run.

6.) It's not fair for the generations to come, and uh, you know, to tie the two in together, I mean. You know they tie in wonderfully, wonderfully because you know it's not a single event that there's this idea that, you know if the if the original inhabitants you know we're suddenly bombarded by this kind of aliens or gods in another sense, you know...

7.) There's a real struggle right then because it is possible. And not only that, but possible in perfection.

8.) We like to see what's good and so it wouldn't matter who they were as long as we could keep our innocence and bless the people who cross the borders and to, you know, kind of make a new land.

9.) So, uh, you know, in that idea, the blessing, to continue roads with our friends, but maybe not friends, but, um, you know... However, however it goes, you know, friends could be a little bit mocking the idea of, you know, I don't know if it was all that much of an accident, but it could be, it could, it could defy evil.

10.) So, you know to have that hope and plan of a you know, a peaceful arrangement of a lasting habitation. It's not farfetched. It takes a little bit of patience, a little bit of love and kind of hanging in there and you know...

11.) Ah, good will be good. And that's really what I got to say about that, because I mean when it comes to my son or daughter and hanging out in the swimming pool as my first analogy put forth in these inserts, there was no solution but, you know, you take a couple of broken bones and press onwards just out of instinct. I mean that that's, I think, the above could be a great idea for a peaceful habitation, for a restful, restful city, restful plan in the future.

Chapter 6



Holden

Self discovery

Self-discovery



Max, Bam and Brendon were suddenly in the middle of a huge garden; fruit trees were everywhere, strange fruit! The men looked at one another as they examined the strange-looking-fruit. Humming computer-like sounds filled the forest, every few seconds they would hear a beep—as if their cellphone notified me of a new text.

2. Max said, “I’ve never seen fruit like this!”

3. As they looked at the trees Max found his hand slowly grab a giant orange colored piece of fruit; *I wonder if I should take a bite*, he thought, as he hears in the distance Bam say, “take a bite!”

4. “That’s great!” Max said, as he chewed on an odd-shaped chunk of fruit.

5. He seemed fine to eat, and because of that the nerves of the three calmed down.

6. Brendon looked back to see the portal wondering if they should be there, or if they should go any further. The smell of the air had them wondering what this strange place was, the garden seemed as if it was planted by something foreign to the earth, possibly a creature that was stronger than the three men.

7. Bird calls could be heard throughout the forest, as the men explored. Max was eating the fruit. The watery sound of each bite made Bam hungry, very hungry; the hunger drove him to quickly grab a piece of fruit and stuff it in his mouth... Brendon noticed fruit juice spraying in all directions—as Bam bit into the juicy cherry fruit and said, “that is the biggest cherry I have ever seen in my life.”

8. All became hungry and ate!

9. After all was full, the smell in the air caught up with the men and caused them not to talk much, the smell in the air

was not of the earth and was very heavy, which caused their blood streams to slow down.

10. Brendon had mentioned earlier that his parents said, ‘the playful earth smell is due to global warming, too much gasoline being burned’ his father explained to him, so we are in a place that is greater, *in my opinion* than the earth, *greater being—more powerful!*

11. As the men slowly walked deeper into the garden they began to sweat; the air was hot and humid. They pushed through the foliage of the strange vegetation. Brendon quietly mumbled, “what is this place?” As each looked at stones which appeared to be done by another person.

12. Bam said, “this was not here when we came through the first time.”

13. Max quick to answer said, “maybe the spacemen redirected the portal.”

14. Bam said, “maybe they did not expect us to go through a second time.”

15. Brendon had to find answers for himself, he needed to stay, and quickly jumped at the chance to make an excuse to go further, explaining to the others that they were embarking on a great mission!

16. As he put his hand to move a branch from his view, he could see what appeared to be a half-clothed girl. It did not appear to be a child, but a woman, a young woman, she was hiding in the foliage.

17. “Quiet,” Brendon said, “we don’t want to scare her.” Brendon felt the need to communicate and said “hello.” The lady looked at the three men and with a glow on her face, she walked toward the three men.

18. She was beautiful, she was exposing a lot of skin because of the outfit she was wearing, shiny beautiful skin. Her skin radiated youth and health—as a freshly painted house would or a wild horse in a forest.

19. As she walked toward us, she stuck out her hand and grabbed Brendon’s— to say follow me.

20. She was beautiful, Brendon immediately fell in love; brown hair and blue eyes made Brendon smile like a child. The girl seemed to be a safe person and the three did not sense any

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

fear around her, but they could tell she was another type of creature.

21. They walked with the girl as she led the way. Suddenly a waterfall came into view. The men could make out other girls sitting and playing next to the waterfall; they looked the same as the first, beautiful!

22. The girls noticed the men walking and rushed toward them. One of the girls walked up to Brendon and said, "Hello Brendon."

23. Brendon said, "how do you know my name?" The girls seemed to give themselves to Brendon as if they were already his.

24. "My name is Breka," the others started giggling, "you created us."

25. Brendon was confused.

26. Breka, the woman holding Brendon's hand said, "if you choose to live in the city, in the future you will create all of what you see." Brendon thought that was weird, were they or were they not created?

27. The girls started calling him creator. Bam and Max knew he was not the creator.

28. "Choose to create us Brendon," the girls said. Breka grabbed Brendon's arm and led him deeper into the garden. He could smell the smell of fresh plants and exotic fruit.

29. Out of the garden appeared a temple; Breka led the three men inside. Breka started moving the stones around, and holograms started appearing.

30. The girls showed and taught Brendon a lot.

Self-discovery 2

After these things Breka once again moved the stones and said, "I hope you choose to create us Brendon," while smiling and laughing, then she ran out of the temple.

2. "Do you believe that?" Brendon said to Max and Bam.

3. "That was similar to what the spacemen showed us" Bam replied.

4. We wanted to stay longer, but the spacemen came and decided to take us to another location.

5. In the spaceship, the three told the spacemen that Brendon wanted to see the city; the Spacemen were happy to show him around.

6. They took us to a city...a city that resembled New York city. There were other humans walking around and coming and going from the skyscrapers. We would have thought we were back on earth, but the spacemen assured us that this place was within the city of Orion. The earth-like-city seemed to be within some sort of dome, there were no clouds or a sky, the sky stopped right above the skyscrapers.

7. The spacemen took us inside one of the buildings and led us to some offices, offices with people at desks, and they were typing. Brendon asked, “what are they doing?”

8. The spacemen said, “they are making energy for the city.”

9. Brendon was curious and asked, “what were they typing?”

10. The spacemen said “the finger that presses the keys makes energy, so they type whatever they want, but remember whatever is typed is analyzed; if they type words or sentences the energy is purer and in turn will make more money than if they had just pressed a bunch of keys.

11. Brendon was excited, he thought it was a great way to make money, he fell in love with the system within the city. He looked at the spacemen and said, “there must be a law within your—or our universe that says humans love and work can produce something of value.”

12. The spacemen said, “yes, your work within the city or your love within the city—activate an ancient law, like growth for example, *the law to growth*. Laws like that—hold together our city, that is why we pay our citizens money to work and live here!”

13. Max, Brendon, and Bam loved the city at the time—while they were in the city, they continued smiling and looking at one another as if they were children all over again, but deep within themselves they knew that they must go back to the earth.

14. A moment later and the three men were led into a kitchen.

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

15. They noticed chairs and tables, they sat down. They were offered doughnuts. The spacemen said, “the people within the city created the doughnuts.”

16. The doughnuts looked delicious, they appeared to not have been baked, but created, like with colored paper. Bam carefully took a bite; Brendon did likewise.

17. “They taste full of cinnamon and strawberries,” they exclaimed.

18. “We have to go perform a task, but we will be back, enjoy the food,” the spacemen said.

19. As Brendon was eating his doughnut he opened to Max and Bam about his childhood. He started saying “I have had this feeling before, the feeling I have within this city.”

20. “...When I was in fifth grade, I fell in love with a girl who just moved to the area; that whole year we never left one another’s side, I thought we would be together forever, but at the end of the year her parents moved her south because they had to be closer to a good hospital, a type of hospital that could treat her kind of cancer. I was sad, but I knew that we still could write to one another. Not soon after my parents told me that she went away, I thought I knew what that meant. I cried and cried knowing I would never see her again. One day my parents noticed me crying and told me that she was in a good place. I did not believe my mom at the time, but as life went on my parents kept assuring me that I could not see behind the night sky.”

21. “After you two went into the portal, after I abandoned you, my parents took me to a laboratory, and there the Doctor put me into a trance.

22. In the trance I felt as if I was in real life and that is where I saw Kylie, the girl I fell in love with in fifth grade, I was not dreaming! When the Doctor woke me up, they looked at me with authority, and that is when I knew not to trust what appeared to be, and that is where I would find Kylie and that is where I would find love!”

23. Max said, “Brendon your tough for going through that, but why did you not come with us when looking for the answers.”

24. Brendon said, “my parents wanted me to live their experience, so that we had a bond, and that a bond of love, but

that did not mean I forsook you, that is why I had to come this time, I had to be part of my friends.

25. Bam said, “you got to do what you got to do.”

26. “When I was young” Bam explained, “it was all about the animals, my mom and dad were convinced that they came from another world, as if they were dropped off by another life form. I treat my dog as if she has come from another world. My mom and dad say dogs originally started out on a planet named Gos, but the higher-level creatures decided people should have them too—because they were compassionate. I never believed that they did come from another world, but I do believe my dog is extremely smart, and I have noticed other people’s pets and they’re extremely smart as well. Now that we are in the city, I believe that our pets as well as other animals, possibly came from this city, *Orion!*”

27. Brendon asked Bam, “do you think you create your dog in the future, as Brendon might have created Breka, or Maple created Gabriel?”

28. “Maybe Brendon, but here, anything seems possible, but once back on the earth it might seem a little crazy. My parents were talked badly about for years about telling me their beliefs on animals, it’s something people rarely talk about on the earth.”

29. “In the conversation Max said “...like you two, I have had some strange things happen to me. When I was in sixth grade, I became friends with a boy named Tod, we became best friends.”

30. “One day his parents decided to take him camping, and we, the two of us—being best friends, went together.”

31. “On the drive to HomGon campgrounds, a car going fast hit us head on. Tod at the time was not wearing a seat belt, and you can finish the rest on your own.”

32. “I had some minor injuries, but the pain I felt was unbearable. It changed me as a person, I was no longer able to see through my sixth-grade eyes, I saw through the eyes of misfortune.”

33. “To make a long story short, Tod’s parents told me I would see Tod again, sort of like a ghost or something, that did not make sense to me, so I never checked to see what happened to Tod or if Tod was still living in his parents’ house, *sort of like a ghost.*”

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

34. “Now that I’m in the city my mind is open to the idea that he could have been coming and going from the earth just as we are now.”

35. The spacemen walked into the room and interrupted us, “we could sense you would have had this conversation and we went and contacted Tod, he would love for you and us to go and see him.”

36. “Wow” Max said, “I haven’t seen Tod in eight years.”

37. “Come” the spacemen commanded, “the ship is waiting for us!”

38. They went onto the ship and pressed forward to see what happened to Tod; Max wondered if he still looked the same. The ship was traveling at the speed of light, and it still took a couple of hours to reach our destination.

40. Hours later we reached a jungle area, it resembled Madagascar of the Indian Ocean or of the Jungles of South America.

41. As soon as we got off the ship, Tod came running up to us and said, “long time no see! ... I have been trying to contact you but living here has made that difficult.”

42. Max knew it was Tod, he could tell it was him, because of the way he assembled his words!

43. Max *cried* a little.

44. “Do you just live here alone in these woods?” Max asked.

45. “Sort of” Tod replied, “there are buildings further that way,” Tod said—pointing into the forest.

46. “The environment is so much different from the earth, the forest plants almost look plastic,” Max said.

47. Bam added, “that is most likely how the city keeps the forest from being destroyed.

48. “Exactly,” Tod says, “at first it was strange living here, I was as a child all over again, but now I love it, and enjoy being positive.”

49. We looked around his woods, his jungle, marveling at the amount of wealth—surrounding us, giving us feelings of being far out into the unknown, deep, dark space of the universe.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

50. It appeared as if his forest was made from toys or rather a Theater or Mall display, *plastic parts*. It was safe and nothing could harm him out there.

51. “I want to live here!” Max said.

52. “This is incredible. I would have never thought one could live here—far out in outer-space,” Brendon said—full of wonder.

53. The men now wondering if this were real or was this somehow fake; Brendon wanted to live with the girls, and Max could tell Tod was Tod and wanted to stay. Bam was a little spooked and reminded us that we must go back to the earth and on earth we will not feel the same.

54. After the time with Tod the men went back to the earth, back to Bam’s bedroom!

Chapter 7



What is the earth?

What is the Earth?



The marriage and honeymoon were over, and we had to go on living our lives; Alice must go back to work, I had to take care of Gabriel.

2. The first day back in our little cozy apartment, furnished with all our belongings...Brendon ran up to our second-floor apartment and knocked on the door.

3. Three hard knocks. I wondered who this could be, rarely do I or Alice get company. I walked over to the door, opened it up and to my surprise it was Brendon. Brendon looked like he had a lot on his mind.

4. I said, "how's it going?" and slowly took a sip of coffee from my coffee mug.

5. "Max, Bam and I went through the portal; I cannot believe that place actually exists!" Brendon said.

6. I began preparing myself for a long conversation...

7. Brendon said, "I don't believe it happened now...now that I am on the earth, but it was just as real as this world!"

8. "Did they tell you that they wanted your vote, they wanted your vote to take over the earth?" I asked.

9. "Yes, something like that" Brendon said.

10. "Do you vote for them?" I ask.

11. Brendon said, "that is the same world that my parents introduced me too, but this time it was on a much larger scale."

12. "Did you like them?" I ask.

13. "There I felt...in love, but now I am filled with fear, but I still like the city very much." Brendon said, and continued, "I watched this hologram Breka showed me,

14. "Wait," I said, "who is Breka?"

15. (Breka a woman living in the city); Breka said in the future I create her sort of like one could create a son or daughter.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

The hologram explained how I could have created her as well as the environment that they were living in.

16. "I was excited!"

17. Brendon took a breath of air and said, "When we went to the city, we went to a part of the city that resembled earth, we went into one of the large buildings and saw the people making money, money that can be used on themselves. The spacemen told me if I were to live in the city I could work from home or go to such public places to work. If I were to type in public I could socialize and motivate the Universe, but if I were to stay home that would be great too. There was so much to the city, I did see what appeared to be ball parks, food joints, people, movie theatres, there could be a lot to do within the city, if you do not mind heavy blood," Brendon said sort of laughing, mocking artificial gravity."

18. I asked, "did you figure out how you made Breka?"

19. "Yes, I did," Brendon said chuckling, "It took a long time!"

20. "And once Breka was mature she too had the option to live in the city," Brendon added.

21. As we were talking at the kitchen table, I heard Alice's key unlock the door, "that must be Alice" I said.

22. She opened the door and walked into the kitchen and noticed Brendon and said, "Hi Brendon."

23. Brendon said "Hi" and explained that it was getting late, and he needed to head home.

24. Still excited about my conversation with Brendon, I said to Alice, "Brendon went to the city, they showed him things he would create in the future, they showed him his children, children from beyond, just as they showed us Gabriel" I said.

25. Alice said, "The city told me that it is hard to find a partner, but I found you, the Universe knew I needed you and they have been guiding me to you. Gabriel is your child, and we will be a family, I love you!" Alice said warming up the environment.

26. "I love you too, but you have to admit the feelings between us could be more, we need to get closer, I still feel as if we are living in separate houses," I said.

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

27. Alice said, “I feel close to you, the only thing that separates you is the desire for the earth. I have looked into your eyes, but I do not see love. I have seen your future and your full of love, sometimes I think you doubt Gabriel.”

28. “It’s not that I doubt Gabriel, it’s that the experience doesn’t feel like the earth; only when I was in the city did all things feel comfortable—when it comes to not doubting Gabriel.” As I was saying this I started thinking about my own birth, was I born in a natural way? I looked Alice in the eyes and said, “if you truly believe in Gabriel then I will truly believe that I have been living a lie, that I’m the lie, but right now I can’t be a lie Alice, I have too much that I love about myself and the earth” I said.

29. Alice could sense I was hiding the wall that separated the earth from Orion. She seeing that gave me a childlike hug and said, “I love you and I always will.”

30. After our conversation I decided to get out of the house and go for a drive...watching Gabriel twenty-four seven had me feeling as if I was stuck in the mountains in the middle of winter.

31. It was sunny outside, I got excited as I noticed the sunlight bouncing off my car. Life will get better I thought; I pulled out of the driveway, gladly received all the sun I could.

32. As I was driving the thought came back to my mind that I had earlier while talking to Alice; *did I come from the city?* I considered going to my parents and asking them, but even if I had gone to my parents, I could not find the words to ask the question.

33. I had to find answers, but where do I turn? Bam, *I could at least go talk to him, I answered.*

34. Knock, Knock on Bam’s front door.

35. I hear Bam’s footsteps.

36. “Good he is home I mumbled.”

37. He turned the door handle and greeted me with a friendly hello.

38. “Hi Bam, I need someone to talk to,” I said.

39. “You can always talk to me,” he replied.

40. “Childbirth—” I began to say, “did you ever wonder who created you and where were they when they did.”

41. Bam started saying “there are many answers to that question. Let us bring out the possibilities: gods of love, the sun god, our parents, childbearing gods, or the place where my dog could have come from, the Bird! Which one gave life?”

42. “My parents,” I replied.

43. “Your parents must have been powerful gods!” Bam said.

44. “Would that mean I came from Orion?” I asked.

45. “I am glad you asked that question because I’m still excited about Brendon and our adventure into the city. This time when we were there, girls appeared, and they insisted that Brendon created them despite that fact that he hadn’t yet” Bam said.

46. “Do you think Brendon was created in the city?” I asked.

47. “They took him to the city before we did. I think Brendon was created from within the city” Bam said.

48. I said, “I still do not believe it Bam, I need to hear it from my parents, and not only do I need to hear it, but I also need to believe it.”

49. “How am I supposed to give Gabriel life when everything about this is wrong? Babies do not just appear on one’s living room floor,” I demanded.

50. “Remember the time when we were in Florida, the summer Alice wanted us to spend with her, at the time she wanted you to play the father?” Bam said. Then he looked at me and mumbled “maybe it was a test.”

51. “What kind of test?” I asked.

52. “A test of fate” Bam replied, “If you had not played the father, it would have been an illusion to what Alice thought she saw in the city, Maybe Alice is struggling with this too. Not to change the topic, but when my parents came to me with Lacy and told me she was mine, that is all I needed to hear. The time is mine, there is not any other answer” Bam explained.

53. “I have to go see my parents,” I said, “thanks Bam!”

54. It was three o clock in the afternoon, mid-summer, when I jumped into the car, it felt good to be out of the house. I turned on the radio, and a rock classic was playing on the radio. *Life is good*, I thought to myself.

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

55. I opened the door to my parent's house, mom, dad I yelled.

56. "In the kitchen" mom said, "I'm getting supper ready are you hungry?"

57. "No" I replied, "Alice is cooking, this will not take long."

58. "Glad to hear you," dad said upon entering the kitchen, "I need your help in the garage."

59. He needed help moving a heavy engine part from his car. I was happy to help, after all I was there to get answers and I was not sure how I would get it.

60. "See that giant piece of metal over there pointing to the back of the garage, we're going to move that inside the car" My dad said.

61. Something about this did not feel right, my dad started bending over, but it was not next to the metal...

62. "Dad!" I yelled, immediately I knew something was wrong, I had to get help I went on the inside and yelled "call 911!"

63. Not long after the ambulance came, he was gone!

64. My mother was devastated. After the ambulance left, I tried to comfort my mom, but she just wanted me to be okay. I slowly left her house looking down at my burnt-up hands and arms and started crying as I got into my car. I did not find the answers I was looking for and the man I looked up to the most was gone. I would have called Alice and told her what had happened, but I knew I needed to see her.

65. With tears in my eyes, I unlocked the door to my apartment, helpless, hopeless, and hating existence.

66. "Honey I'm glad your home supper has been ready for hours!"

67. It was the voice of Alice.

68. She walked into the living room—where I was sitting and noticed the tears in my eyes. "What happened?" she asked.

69. "My dad had a heart attack, and is gone," I said holding back a flood of tears. Alice looked at me puzzled.

70. As she was fighting off reality, she did the best thing she knew how and that was to wrap her arms around me.

71. I hear her soft voice say, "it is going to be all right."

72. That night I did not sleep much; I could not imagine a world without my dad.

73. The little love I had in my heart vanished, the only thing that remained was Alice. As her body lay next to mine, I knew I would not survive this moment without her.

74. The next morning the phone rang. I slowly walked over to it and picked it up, I was hoping it was not going to be any more bad news. “Sweetheart it’s mom, I’ve prepared a gathering tomorrow at ten in the morning, it will be a remembrance ceremony, I have let everyone in the family know.” Then she hung up the phone.

75. I did not know how to feel, I was like a child all over again, I kept thinking the only thing I understood was that I did not understand.

What on earth 2

Gabriel, smile, smile for me!” I said as Alice was getting ready for the gathering. “We got to hurry Alice it’s almost ten” I said. We quickly got into the car and drove to the funeral home where my father lay.

2. Uncles, Aunts, Grandparents, and friends were all there. Alice and I were the last to arrive. As we slowly walked to the open box where my father lay, I could hear crying and relatives saying their goodbyes. Alice started crying and asked me if we should go any further—if I was going to be okay.

3. “Yes—I will be fine,” I replied, I could not believe he was gone.

4. I looked at the man, my father, dressed up, lying there with a peaceful look on his face. A black suit covered his body, and his eyes were shut as if he was sleeping.

5. Two days ago, that man was full of life. How could his heart have given out?

6. I quietly said, “goodbye dad, I love you!” ...And looked at Alice and said, “This place is a sad place Alice, let’s go home.”

7. As we drove home—we were silent, a country song played on the radio, Alice loved country. Right before we pulled in our driveway Alice said, “I’m sick.”

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

8. I said, “we’re home.”

9. “No, I’m really sick” she said.

10. “Should I take you to the hospital” I said worrying.

11. “Yes” she whispered.

12. I drove to the hospital as fast as I could—hoping she was not going to die.

13. As I drove all I could think about was losing Alice, I was panicking, I could not restrain the nerves in my body and started expressing fear—all the while hoping Alice would not notice.

14. The whole drive—I thought I was going to faint, I do not know what held me up that day, but the pain I was in was unbearable.

15. Once we got to the hospital, I ran inside...

16. “Help, Help” I said, “my wife is sick; she is in my car!”

17. The nurse quickly got help and rushed Alice into the emergency room.

18. A half hour later the doctors came out of Alice’s room and came into the waiting room where I was waiting to hear the news. One of the doctors said, “Alice is going to be fine; she had a minor heart attack, we are going to have to keep her for a few days for observation.” I quickly called up Alice’s parents as well as Brenda, Max, and Bam. They all rushed to the hospital.

19. Bam was the first to arrive, “Alice” Bam said.

20. “She can’t talk Bam” I said.

21. Alice interrupted, “I can talk,” she said—while holding Gabriel.

22. Alice’s parents quickly showed up and ran into the room that Alice was staying in; Her Mom asked, “Alice are you okay, you had us worrying?” Soon Brenda showed up, not soon after Brendon showed up, they both hugged Alice and comforted her.

23. We all hung out with Alice for what seemed to be days. Once we were sure everything was alright, we returned home. I had to take Gabriel home, this had been a long day for her. Bam and Max decided to follow me home, they wanted to help me through my father’s death. Brenda stayed with Alice lying in bed with her.

24. Max and Brendon got beer, they planned on spending the night at my place, I knew I could not drink, because I had to watch Gabriel, but I did get some *Tylenol*, my head was pounding.

25. After Max had a few beers and the food we ordered came, Max opened about Tod, I think he was trying to help.

26. He started saying, “I know you might not know this, *because you moved to the area in eighth grade...*”

27. “Before you came to the school, I had a best friend, his name was Tod. Tod and I were close, we did everything together.”

28. “One day when his parents decided to take us camping, we got into a car accident, and he vanished. His parents said he still was around, but nobody ever saw him, but they insisted he lived in their house, but it was not like before.”

29. “I do not know what I had been thinking—now that I have seen him in the city; *how I could have not seen him all those years, he seemed perfectly fine.*”

30. Max answers himself, “*Because I did not keep him alive within my heart, I could no longer see him, and so I went on living in the ancient light of the earth, without Tod.* But after Bam, Brendon and I went to the city a second time and I saw Tod there, he began to live within my heart again! Although I live on the earth in doubt because of the ancient light that surrounds me, I can keep his memory alive!

31. “Brendon you must have seen and felt the love when we saw Tod, seen and felt the love and possibilities of worlds and lands, not of the earth—when we saw Tod; as if our present knowledge, the knowledge of what our leaders have—was only part of a bigger, much bigger world, without they even knowing about it!” Max added.

32. “Yes, I did, I’m still in love with the garden and the girls I saw; I hope to create them—although I follow the routine of the earth!”

33. “But I doubt how I could have a home in the city, and I wonder if the girls that I saw were my creation, rather—the nothing, the nothing of darkness and unanswered questions?” Brendon answered.

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

34. “Max, do you think my father is now living in that city?” I asked.

35. “Yes, I do, because children can only be created through powerful people, and powerful people don’t have a heart attack!” Max answered.

36. “Remember whatever is on the earth is living in the past light of the stars—that shined here billions upon billions of years ago; what we see here is unfinished” Max explained.

37. I had small ideas of what they were talking about but could not get my mind to think anything—but my experience upon the earth. When I was growing up, I embraced life as it was, not as the future of greatness, I had to admit to myself I held on to my father’s heart attack as the solution and answer.

38. The next morning, upon waking up I noticed Brendon and Max were gone, beer cans were everywhere, I investigated Gabriel’s crib, happy to see her lying there. I bend over and picked her up, she was a happy baby. I placed her in my arms, brought her to my face and kissed her!

39. I knew from her giggle that she needed something to eat. I grabbed a bottle that Alice placed in the fridge yesterday and started feeding Gabriel.

40. *What am I going to do this day*—I thought—while listening to Gabriel’s mouth gently sucking on her bottle?

41. I knew we had to go see Alice, but before we did, I needed to see my mom.

42. It was still early in the morning, six o’clock. I got Gabriel dressed up and drove five miles to my mom’s house.

43. “Mom?” I said as I opened the front door to her house.

44. “I’m in here dear,” she said. She was still in bed, that is unusual for her, most of the time she was dressed up and ready for the day by four. My Mom and Dad were always early birds, they were that way since I was born...they had to be ready for anything at any time.

45. “Do you mind company?” I asked as I grabbed a kitchen chair and placed it next to my mom’s bed, “Gabriel wanted to see you,” I said.

46. I unfastened her from her car seat and placed her in my mother’s arms. My mother gazed into her eyes and said, “she has the same eyes as you.”

47. “That’s what Alice says too,” I replied.

48. A noise sounded in the bathroom, it sounded like the shower running, “mom is someone here?” I asked.

49. “Yes, it’s your Aunt Betty, she will be staying here for a couple of days” she said. The shower quickly turned back off and then I heard Aunt Betty say there is not any hot water. She came out of the bathroom, came into the bedroom, and sat on the edge of the bed.

50. Kathy and Bill are the names of my parents. “Kathy,” Betty said, “what are we going to do about the hot water.”

51. “Bill would have known—he was always good with things like that,” my mom said and started crying.

52. Betty said, “he’s still around, he just went home.”

53. “I want to go home too” Kathy replied.

54. “Home is where your son is, he needs you Kathy,” Betty said.

55. I wanted to ask Betty what home meant, but I could not find the words. As they were talking, I got lost in my thoughts. I started thinking about the earth and what I thought of the earth, I considered that I accepted the earth as it was. Now that I went to Orion, I could not help but wonder why I felt as if the earth could be a lie. My father could not be gone, but I know that he is not here, why would Aunt Betty say he went home. People have used that phrase my whole life, but did I truly know the meaning.

56. As I was deep into my thoughts, I could hear my mom say, “Maple will you go check on the hot water tank, Aunt Betty needs a shower?”

57. “Yes sure,” I replied. I gazed over at Gabriel knowing she was in loving arms and went down to the basement. For some strange reason as I was walking down the steps to the basement, I started sensing my dad, I almost wanted to say dad, but I was unsure what would happen if I heard him say something back. ...If he was in the basement, it was not something—I was ready to deal with.

58. I found the circuit breaker and flipped it on and off and the hot water tank turned on. *Good, that must have been the problem, now Betty can take a shower.* I quickly ran up the stairs,

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

shut the door and noticed the shower running. Betty must have heard the hot water tank turn on.

59. "Thank you dear!" my mom said, upon entering her room.

60. "Mom are you going to be alright" I said, knowing I had to leave and go see Alice.

61. "I will be alright as long as I know you're alive" she answered.

62. I had so many questions to ask, but I could not find the words, so I kissed my mom on the forehead, placed Gabriel in her car seat and went to see Alice.

63. I got to the hospital at eight in the morning; morning dew was still on the ground and a chill was in the air. I walked into the hospital wondering what room they put Alice in. I decided to ask a nurse, "which room is Alice Bark in?"

64. "305" the friendly nurse replied.

65. I gently knocked on the door, I could hear Alice say come on in.

66. "Alice how are you doing?" I asked.

67. "I have great news, the doctors are going to let me go home today, but they advised me not to go back to work for a while" she answered.

68. I brought Alice home that morning.

69. Once home she agreed to stay in bed.

70. "I love you!" Alice said as we were eating lunch.

71. "I love you too and I do not know what I would do without you. I would blame you for the minor heart attack, but I know it was not your fault and there was nothing you could have done about it," I said.

72. "We live in the city!" she replied, meaning in the future we live together, when she said that her face lit up.

73. I could see the child within her. I can remember what she said about how hard it was for the city to find her a mate. As her face glowed, I could not help but to continue to look in her eyes and wonder what life would be like behind the night sky.

74. She wants me I thought, she wants me to be with her, not on the earth, although we were on the earth together, she wanted me as a soul mate, a mate that existed in the city.

Although I never considered it until now, she did not want the earth me, she wanted someone who could make Gabriel with her.

75. As I was looking into her eyes, I could not help but fall in love with her childlike characteristics. We talked until evening and as she fell asleep—I decided to take a journey to the cabin we rented when we were younger, the cabin that we noticed a strong force communicating with us; It was abandoned now, I could easily get on the inside.

76. A quick drive and I was there.

77. I looked up at the stars, I looked at the same spot we saw the light blink. Just a few months prior to that I met Alice, it was freshman year, strange things were happening throughout the country, the cellphone age had begun. Nothing ever came out of it; I suppose my parents were right when they pushed it off as a normal occurrence.

78. I looked up in the night sky wondering if the light would blink, but it did not. I went into the cabin we rented years ago; it still smelled and looked the same, except the wall opposite the lake had begun to fall.

79. I can remember Alice, Bam, Max, and Brendon all creating energy to communicate with the strange force that had consumed America.

80. As I reflected on the good times I had; I could hear someone outside. I opened the door to see who or what it could be.

81. As I opened the door, I could make out a man coming out of the bushes. At first, I thought it was Far-Out-Mike, it looked like him, but it could not have been because I would see the scars on his face.

82. "Hello" I said, "what are you doing out here in the middle of the night?" I asked, trying to convince the man I had a purpose to be at the camp—covering up my doings.

83. "Looking for company" the man said. "You're the guy who got hurt at the paper mill explosion," he said, looking down at my hands, at my scars.

84. "That was me, how do you know?" I asked.

85. "I saw the scars on your hands and put two and two together" he answered.

86. "Do you want to go for a swim?" I asked.

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

87. “Yes” he said looking for an adventure!

88. I put my toes into the water to check out the temperature, I was reluctant to go in, *there was a cold, heavy breeze coming from the distant forest!*

89. But not for Mike, he jumped right in.

90. I followed Mike’s example and got into the water.

91. The icy water almost made me cry out, but I covered it up.

92. Mike swam over to me to push my head under the water, we both laughed. He acted and talked like Far-Out-Mike, but it could not be unless the earth was no longer the earth—I grew up on. Everything around me expressed it was just another man at the beach, all at the beach was convincingly pleasant, mid-summer-beach convincingly pleasant.

93. “You seem like another guy I know his name is Mike as well” I said.

94. Mike gave me a puzzled look and said, “maybe it was in another life.”

95. Okay, the water is a bit too cold for swimming,” I said, and we swam back to shore.

96. After the swim Mike invited me back to his camp, he then offered me some food.

97. We ate and talked until almost ten o’clock.

98. I knew I had to get home.

99. “I have to get home Mike” I said.

100. He said, “in another life,” as I walked to my car and drove off.

101. “Alice, I am home” I said. *Alice must be sleeping*, I thought. I saw Gabriel lying in her crib, she had a smile on her face and started babbling as she moved her arms and legs. I walked into the bedroom and noticed Alice open her eyes.

102. I said, “I just saw the strangest thing happen, I went for a swim with a guy named Mike, he looked and talked just like the Mike who I was working with when the machine exploded.”

103. “Then it was Mike” she said.

104. “No, it could not have been, everything around expressed who it was, even my own body would not except—a Mike, without the scars on his face or some reason for the entire lack,” I said.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

105. She replied, “why don’t you write down everything that you don’t except about the reality to Orion.”

106. As I was about to say no...

107. Alice added, “seriously, because that was probably Mike from within the city, but you just do not trust it—being in love with the past light of the earth.”

108. “As you do that, I will work harder at being your wife,” Alice said picking up a notebook and handing it to me.

Chapter 8



The child the question

The child, the question



That night after swimming with Mike and talking with Alice, I wanted to explore my reality, versus the reality of Orion...I wanted to find out what the wall was that separated Alice and me; I decided to take Alice's advice and write down things I greatly care about, especially the earth.

2. As I started writing I went deep into my thoughts; I could remember my parents home-schooling me until third grade. I could not remember being a toddler, but I could remember watching cartoons as my mother lovingly placed me on the couch and told me she would be right back. She left the house for a moment as my father slept; I was wrapped in a blanket on the couch as the cartoons played, it was a very pleasurable experience.

3. At that age of about four the cartoons were so pleasant, I started asking questions, where was I from, and how would I stay alive? Now that I think about it, cartoons were the reason for my fascination with video games, and not only that they were made, but how did people make them. Even now, I wonder how photons coming from the television could have been so pleasant. The city of Orion told me that they govern the light, but to govern there must be flaws to a degree. That could not be the answer, could it? It is not that hard to alter reality, but it is altered when it comes to Gabriel?

4. Can one alter my reality because I feel love?

5. Negativity within the atom is what governs the light of the atom or at least the spacemen said it does; but I am free, and that makes my existence interpret my surroundings. I interpret—there is a place for negativity and that would be the laws of all.

6. But is that how a television or the sunlight is controlled? Is that how such a pleasant cartoon that I saw as a child received its structure?

7. According to the study that I did on cartoons, the frame through electricity causes motion, and pictures through motion makes animation. It could be a very real possibility that to live-negativity would have a place, that my existence is possibly controlled through negativity—like that grey alien was saying in my head, “life is sort of horrible, and the awful smell was his strength!

8. What would happen if the city were a bad authority, I asked myself?

9. I would need more information from the authorities of the earth, because I do not want something evil to take over the planet or my family or friends.

10. I started thinking about my first year of first grade.... My mom being my teacher, ordered books, the books and supplies came through the mail. At the time it was law for every child in America to go to school. My mom was convinced that home-schooling was more educational than traditional school—although it had a lot more work.

11. The schoolbooks arrived in the mail; it was time for first grade; the books had a fresh smell to them as if they had just come off the press. I flipped through each book eager to get started. There was not much work to do, mostly some small readings and some small math problems. Art was the strength of first grade, art was included in everything I did.

12. The first picture I needed to color was of two men fighting, with the word fight written on the bottom.

13. My mom asks me, “do you know what that word means?”

14. “Yes” I replied, “it is something that we should not do.”

15. “There are laws in this world to govern the good and evil” my mom said, “fighting is bad, police are in this world to make sure evil people don’t take over the world.”

16. I knew and trusted whatever my mom had said and became a friend to the police. Now that I no longer am a child—I can see that in some places, police do not exist at all. I do not like evil people; evil must be a threat to the world.

17. It was not long until I was placed in public school. The first year I went to *CC elementary school*, I was nervous,

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

there were so many other children, but the teacher was nice as so many teachers are.

18. The one thing I took out of third grade was what my new best friend told me...he said, "if we go into the woods, and do not come back we die." He said this, because I told him my plan on leaving my home for a while and building a tree house that my parents would not let me build.

19. To my ears he was telling the truth, and not soon after I noticed other things that could kill me, cars, things under the bathroom sink, falls and people.

20. I asked Luke my new best friend what we should do about it, his response was "that's how life goes, people are born to die, but not only die, they run from it as well."

21. I always loved Luke, we were best friends, until he had to move. That made me heartless, so when I moved to Vermont, I was glad to have met Bam.

22. I knew Alice wanted me to study until I found the solution to the wall that separated Orion and the earth as well as Alice from me. What happened to Luke, if he had not told me about the woods I most likely would not be alive right now. Luke was sort of like a war hero! I wonder where he is, I embraced that part of the earth.

23. Is Luke out there? Even if Luke is out there would he now be a lie, or is there such a lie?

24. I knew I loved Alice and had to break down a wall, so I considered and wrote it down.

25. Luke taught me something about the earth, and that had become me—and that me was gravity per se. I write down things that would make Luke and the earth creditable—for the sake of Luke as well as others experiencing my truth. There is a science to the flight to an airplane, there are laws, laws to the physical universe, the science to an airplane is creditable, just try sticking your hand out of a fast-moving car—in the wind, with that structure the hand flies.

26. If the earth or the substance within the earth was a lie this would not happen.

27. Growing up I studied such things—as a screw or the nut and bolt, the spiral pattern that makes up the screw, they hold

objects together. There is no further truth than reality: patterns make objects behave in such a way.

28. People had spent much time and informed me who invented them, and where they come from, and all pointed to the truth, they pointed to the earth being shaped by someone who had known about the bad things.

29. If the city were part, then why would they want my vote, why should I lose the earth.

30. My thoughts started to race, I could suddenly recall other things I learned in school, for instance war or pictures of weapons of war.

31. They could have been lying I say to myself, in the past all signs that I received were bad as if my body was standing at the edge of an exceptionally large building, I accepted that as reality, if that bad was not there, then what am I?

32. Although I do not like fear, I accept it as part of life, as well as all the things upon the earth.

33. This earth screams a message, just as my body would scream a message—if I were on the edge of an exceptionally large building.

34. If there was a wall within me, it seemed proper to say it makes me, me! Who I am!

35. I could in vision Alice smiling at me, I could not help but love her. I continued to write and think about these things that had built the wall, but now wondered if it should be destroyed.

36. I remember being twelve and my father was watching the television, he would always turn on the news at five o'clock, he would say he wanted to catch up with the world.

37. Sometimes I could watch it with him, but that was if I had the patience.

38. On one of those occasions, we started watching a police chase. To me this was exciting, excited to see good hunt down evil. Everything was under control until I watched the evil man appear in front of the police, the police fearing for their lives shot the man, this was all captured by a helicopter.

39. After I saw this, I had many questions, I would have asked my father for the answer, but I did not want him to know, know that I questioned the Police!

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

40. For weeks questions went through my mind, is it okay to kill, where did the evil man go, was the cop the hero? Rather than having unanswered questions I accepted the whole incident as saying, that is what people do, everything will be alright.

41. As I was recalling the incident, I started to remember my fourth grade, our teacher Ms. Lee had a police officer come to class. He introduced himself as sergeant Mitch Michaels, he was going to talk to the class. As he was talking, I could sense goodness and I knew that he was a good man, *whatever he said is right.*

42. One of the fourth graders asks him, “have you ever got shot?”

43. “Cops are always in the way of danger, that is why we have guns, to protect ourselves,” Mr. Michaels said.

44. Guns, war, they were part of life, if they were not then this blue eyed good-looking cop was lying to us, *he would not lie,* not to us.

45. The teacher had us write a letter to the cop after he left the classroom, something that would express our appreciation. I cannot remember exactly what I wrote, but it was something like: you are a good man, I hate evil like you.

46. He was one of my many heroes. To this day when I look at Gabriel, I can see the look in her face, the look of a cop, now wondering if I lied about being her Father.

47. The earth, the light and my surroundings would say that I would be lying.

48. My truth is like a river-project I did in seventh grade....

49. Our teacher thought it would be good for us seventh graders to learn about rivers.

50. There are several types of rivers, fast moving rivers, winding rivers, sleepy rivers, etc. For us to have had that experience and to learn, the first thing we did with the teacher was bring in a large wooden box, we put sand in the box, and put our sand box on the science table; one end of the box was raised higher than the other—to simulate the flow of a river.

51. We then took some water and placed it at the top of the pretend river; it flowed down towards gravity. We then lowered the box to make a slower stream or raised it to make a

faster moving stream. Depending on the gravity, or rather the raising of the box, it would change the river type, *whether winding, fast moving, and or sleepy*, and that is how the rivers upon the earth work. I accepted that as the truth.

52. I thought I knew how children came into this world, but I did not, I did not bring Gabriel into this world.

53. As I was thinking I wondered what the truth was....

54. I knew within my truth I did not have all the answers, I could not explain who created the Universe and how far in each direction does it go; all I knew was Orion, I had to think hard about Orion.

55. They said something about the light, that the Universe that I see is no longer there, that it had died; the stars light may be shining, but as a corpse!

56. Within the city they designed a habitation for life but could not help the fact that on the outside it appears dead, but within its enclosure—it is full of life—to them, *and to the earth—it is lit with stars, looking life-like.*

57. They also said they could not contain the light, which to me meant an evolving Universe.

58. If the city was telling the truth, then there are two truths: one truth is the Universe is alive, *our perception now*, and the other is that it is dead, *our perception in the future—without Orion.*

59. When I thought deep enough, there was not a lie, so I had to pick one, did I want to live in the past light, or did I want to live in the present light.

60. I considered my childhood dream: After Mr. Michaels, the cop talked with us, I had a sense of goodness—and told myself that I could live on the earth, because he existed!

61. I began to dream of my future. I wanted to play the piano, I wanted an old upright piano, one that I could use and tune.

62. I wanted that piano in an old country house, with a wife that could cook; she would be cooking dinner or jam. I wanted kids and I wanted them to play the piano as well, I wanted four kids and I wanted all of them home schooled.

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

63. My wife and I would live on a small farm and never have to work outside of the home, my children could grow up and do the same thing.

64. That was the dream at the time, I had not thought about that in years. Ever since strange things started happening with cellphones, I gave up on my dreams hoping to discover???

65. ...Possibly death?

66. Now that I reflect on the dream, I wonder how I ever thought it was possible to live on the earth—without all the answers, without the problems facing the earth solved.

67. Maybe Orion is the solution; I began to dream of Alice and our life behind the night sky.

68. What if I am losing my life?

69. ...There can only be one dream, I could not fail!

70. Alice, she was convinced Gabriel was mine, I put that love deep within my heart; even if Orion is a lie, living with Alice and the love between us could not be fake. *Maybe playing along with Orion is real.*

71. People say to follow the signs, I figured they were talking about a stop sign, a material sign that stood out. In my freshman year at high school, I looked up into the night sky and tried to communicate with the sign, that would be the light my friends and I saw. Although the earth rejected the sign, and I would have to wonder why it did reject it—*making it appear as a military flair*. The strange thing about the military flairs was that it was over a lake.

72. Something not possible!

73. ...I was giving a sign and not only to me, but to the earth. The earth must be programmed by some sort of law because the earth would have picked up on Bam's bedroom as a reality.

74. I picked up my head from writing, looked at the clock; it was now three in the morning. I glanced back down at my writings and gave strong thought to the earth being programmed with limitations.

The child, the question 2

I wrote everything down, good, Alice will be up soon, and I can hand her a report. I walked over to the cupboard and made a vanilla cappuccino. Once finished I took it outside.

2. It was a cool night, about sixty-five degrees and decided to get another drink, but this time it would be coffee, and I would get it at the gas station.

3. The gas station was not far away, about two miles. I walked, it was a very silent night, and I was hoping no one would notice me out there.

4. I walked into the gas station and went straight for the coffee. I got to the counter and gave the cashier a five-dollar bill. The cashier said, "don't worry about it, a man just came in and paid for it, he is standing outside."

5. "Thanks" I said to the cashier, wondering who would pay for my coffee.

6. Outside I could see who it was, it was Mike, the man who I went swimming with the other night.

7. "I was at the paper mill the day the machine exploded," Mike said, as I walked out of the front door of the store.

8. I was shocked to hear those words; I stumbled in my mind to express what I was thinking. Mike started to explain what had happened...

9. Before I could say anything, he got into his car and left.

10. I walked back to my apartment shocked! ...What could that mean?

11. It felt like seconds before I got home, I opened the door and glanced at the clock, it was now five; Alice heard the door open and began to wake up.

12. "Good morning, did you just get in?" she asks.

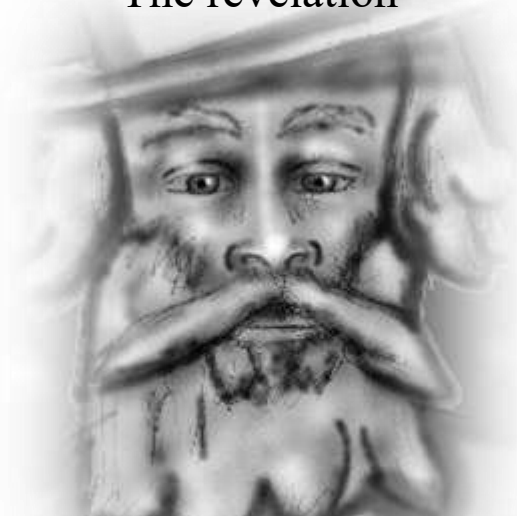
13. "I went out for a coffee, but that's not all that I did, I was up all-night writing about the wall" I explained. I grabbed my notebook and started to read.

Chapter 9



The revelation

The revelation



On the second day of July my landline phone rang, I always get a landline despite the cellphone because the cellphone seemed unstable in the early two thousand; the technology was just introduced into society.

2. “Hello” I said.

3. “Honey it’s your mom, your Grandpa Jed is having a fourth of July party, there is going to be fireworks, a pig/bean roast and a lot of friends and family; he would like you and Alice there and whoever you want to bring.”

4. “I will be there and tell Grandpa Jed I’m bringing some friends” I said, right before I hung up the phone.

5. I looked at Alice as she sat on the couch doing some paperwork. “My Grandpa is having a party on the fourth and would like you and I to be there, we can bring other people too” I said.

6. “That sounds awesome” Alice replied.

7. After Alice’s heart attack she could not return to work, and now was filing for unemployment, the pet store owner did not want the responsibility for any problem that could occur but would make an exception: she could go back to work, but the best job for her would be something that did not involve heavy lifting. Hopefully, she would get unemployment, because the only thing we had to live off was my Social Security check.

8. “Good, I am almost done” she said, as she signed her name to the application.

9. The day of the fourth, as usual, we had a late start getting to the party.

10. I invited Max, Brendon, Bam, and Brenda.

11. They probably are already there I thought; anxiety ran through my body. Alice in a rush grabbed the car seat with the baby in it and out the door we went.

12. I looked at the car clock, it was two o’clock, we were supposed to be there at one.

13. My cellphone rang, I picked it up, it was my mom questioning where we were.

14. “We will be there in fifteen minutes” I said.

15. Uncle Gordon did not live far away, he lived in the next town over; he owned a small farm with plenty of land. He planned on having the party in one of his fields.

16. We pulled up to notice dozens of cars all parked in the field. We looked to our right and saw a lot of people, some were sitting at tables, some were playing games—in the fields, some were standing around a fire. Giant tents were all around, one of the tents had smoke coming from the inside, “that must be where they are cooking,” I said.

17. We walked through the field greeting others as we went. We walked until we found Uncle Gordon, and there he was...near the outdoor grill. I raised my hand as if to say I am here, I made it. Gordon quickly noticed and with a smile on his face walked toward me, and said, “there is my favorite nephew, and who is this beautiful young lady?”

18. “This is my wife!” I said happily—to display all her splendor.

19. “That is right I missed the wedding...well you two, welcome to my fourth of July party, this makes up for the wedding I did not attend, there is food in drink in the tent to your left” Gordon luxuriously said.

20. I looked around to see if I could see any of our friends, I did not see them, so we decided to stay under the tent to keep Gabriel cool.

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

21. Not long after I noticed Brendon grabbing a beer, “hey you, where are the others,” I said.

22. “Out by the parking lot, we were still waiting for you to arrive, I will go get them” Brendon said.

23. They all came up and sat next to us at the picnic table. We started talking about the day and in the mist of the conversation, Grandpa Jed noticed me and came over. *Grandpa Jed was my Fathers Dad*

24. Jed said, “how are you doing Sonny?” I introduced him to all my friends.

25. Grandpa Jed and I have always been close, closer than me and my dad, I could always talk to him about anything and everything. In the summer days I would spend days at his house fishing, watching movies or talking. ...Grandpa Jed was my favorite activity! I had not talked to him much since my dad left, but I knew we needed to spend some time together.

26. Once Jed left, we started talking and laughing and having a good time, I thought it would be good to discuss the city:

27. “As you know the Spacemen will be back in about seven months to take us to permanently live in Orion, that’s if we vote them in.”

28. “Because the earth is covered in the ancient light of the past, here we live our lives as normal as we always have, but the reality of Orion will catch up to us. I want everyone’s opinion, are we going to vote in Orion?”

29. Brendon was first to speak, “my parents showed me the reality of Orion, the foreign distant, alien worlds, and the reality is not of the earth. I was shown while I was at the hospital, I was not supposed to discuss it, but rather keep it quiet. There is not another reality for either me or my parents, they have always hoped that the city would welcome me into it. As Max and Bam have seen...it appears as if they invited me to live there, and not only to live there, but to create!”

30. “Is there any problem at all with forsaking the earth?” I asked.

31. “No, because my parents raised me to live in expectation of creating, plus we cannot contend, if we do not or cannot contend with the police or government, then we do not have an option.”

32. “I know you have struggled Brendon, but just knowing you have confidence makes me feel better” I said.

33. Max spoke next, “at first I thought that we would be in a lot of trouble, until we went through the portal and saw a ship, the ship took us to gardens as well as the golden city.”

34. “I felt complete there, but once we got back to Bam’s apartment, I felt the experience was a mistake.”

35. “Only through a second time in the city would I feel safe, and that was because Tod exists there.”

36. “Tod and I were best friends until the car accident, and since his departure I have not felt the same. If I had an option, all those years ago I would never have gotten into the car. Loosing Tod was awful, despite his parents did their best to explain that I still was his friend.”

37. “At the time I could not look past the ancient light, and now that I can...I cannot go back to living without Tod. When the spacemen come back, I am going with them, then Tod and I can come back and forth from the earth.”

38. “Wow,” I started saying, “you are taking a big chance, could you really leave your family?”

39. “I am not leaving my family Max explained “I can come back and forth as Tod’s been doing.”

40. Alice was next, and said, “I have a baby, and not just a baby, but an experience from the city—before we went together as a group. There my future husband told me that we were together and gave me Gabriel, and that future person that I saw in the city was Maple. I wanted a family so bad that I was open to anything, but just recently—did I wake up my gravity towards the earth. I tell myself that I will be with my love and baby!

41. I am not going to the city without Maple. Maple thinks she is lying about the baby or being the father of it.”

42. “What is it going to take Maple” Max asked.

43. Max added “we can always be friends; the city protects us from—like—me loosing Tod for instance... Alice and the Baby she carried would deserve that!”

44. Brenda included, “I have been in college researching the topic, it appears that civilizations around the world had to bend the laws of the earth just to discuss the matter, it is as if everyone knew about Orion, but had to keep it a secret. I dug deep

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

into old textbooks, and my conclusion is that the earth is one big conspiracy, all meant for what? I could not figure that out, but I know that when the Spacemen come back, I am going with them. The earth just is not the earth if Orion is the destination. Even if we all got educated so that we could secretly discuss the purpose of the earth, that still is not absolute; I need to be in absolute reality not a disguise for something else. I am scared, but it is the only way.”

45. Alice said, “we still have seven months, we should spend that time wisely.”

46. “What about you Bam, any thoughts?” Max said.

47. “I am going with the majority, I cannot live without my friends, but let me remind you my parents are still in the fight to cover up Orion. There are others who are like that, we must be quiet and wise; no one outside our group should know about this.”

48. “Bam’s right!” I spoke.

49. And continued speaking, “I think that if we went, we are going to be in a whole different environment, there will not be any sickness, but I am not sure if I will be me if I am not getting sick. When I was growing up, I embraced the world as it was, I did not think of any other reality, it is hard to make sense of the people of Orion just watching us while we struggled, I could have used their help a long time ago. They left the earth and let it do its own thing. I took responsibility for the earth, and I would have a hard time handing over to people that just watched, they watched Max as Tod went out of his life, and that’s just a tip of the ice burg.”

50. “Right now, I am focusing on Alice, deep down I want to live the life she described, what she saw—seeing from within the future. Ever since Gabriel was born, I have been living in a dream, I have all new emotions.”

51. “But I still hurt when I consider that I’m living a lie, although there is not anyone that can take away who I am, and even if they could, would I want them to.”

52. Alice looked at me, I could see compassion in her eyes as if she were saying thousands of words at one time.

53. “We remain friends whose bond can’t be broken, majority rules, as for now—we go to the city,” I said hiding what I was going to do.

54. “But before we go, I want to study some more before I or my friends give a vote,” I said—buying a little more time.

55. Brendon asked, “did anyone catch why the earth was abandoned?”

56. “Brendon according to what I heard while in the city, a long time ago when the universe was evolving and the stars of each habitable place was still shining, the creatures of the universe started capturing the elements, and not just the elements, but the very light of the elements.”

57. “They would use the power of a negative charge to capture the elements, they would categorize them and give them their rightful place within the universe.”

58. “Once all the elements were collected it became a city, that would be the city of Orion.”

59. “This is the interesting part,” I continued, “once they harvested the stars, they began to live without time, and because there wasn’t time, they were able to do a lot—apart from the light—that once shined.

60. Once they noticed that they were missing something, that would be the earth, *the stars light had not arrived here yet, it had not formed an earth*, they began to work to gain the earth.”

61. “To them the stars had died out a long time ago.”

62. “After Orion noticed that it was missing a giant chunk of light, the creatures had to finish gathering all and attempted to gather the earth, but the only way to do that was to get inside the time of the people who lived there. That is what Orion had been doing to the people of the earth, breaking us out of the time of the past and bringing us into the future.”

63. Brendon, being surprised said, “that was a convincing lecture, Maple, the earth was never abandoned!”

64. “No, the earth was never abandoned, but what is it?” Max added.

65. “I have not told anyone this,” I said, “but as you all know the mill where I was working when Mike and I were severely burned, I survived it, but Mike did not, or so I thought he did not. About a week ago I was up late and decided to get a

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

coffee from the gas station. While I was pouring my coffee, Mike came in in paid for it, I knew I must talk to him. As I did, he said, ‘.....well, a lot.’

66. “So, the earth is purposely an illusion,” Alice asked, “I doubt that.”

67. “That’s what I made out of the conversation with Mike” I said.

68. After that Alice decided it was a good time to open about her experience with Orion.

69. “When I first went to Orion,” Alice said, “I was shown holograms like Brendon’s experience. While I watched them, they tried to explain children and not just any children but wildlife. They explained that the living things upon the earth are a.... Once alive it needs the proper settings, and those settings were found on the earth. For the animals, the earth provides water, shelter, food, and other creatures.”

70. “The people need knowledge, love, and school to grow.”

71. “Once the creatures are fully grown, they have the option to live in the city, that would mean if they were to live in the city at all.”

72. “That makes sense to what Mike said about the earth” I replied.

73. Max added “if these things are true then we were either collected or not by the city. That would explain why Tod is living there, because Tod was very special to his parents, and I know Tod he would have never abandoned the love his parents gave him.”

74. I was listening to the others speak when I happened to hear a dog barking, I glanced over to my left and noticed Grandpa Jed sitting at the table next to ours.

75. Oh no!

76. *I hope he was not there the whole time.*

77. Grandpa Jed noticed me looking at him, and he looked me straight in the eyes, and started walking toward me.

78. “Sonny, I want you to come over to my house tomorrow morning and we will spend the day together.”

79. I managed to say “sure.”

80. At the end of the night Uncle Gordon displayed a small fire work show, not impressive, but it was Uncle Gordons and I had to love it. Afterwards we all packed up and went and walked toward our cars. We said our goodbyes and separated.

81. Just getting home Alice opened the door to our cozy apartment, she took Gabriel out of her car-seat, changed her clothes, and placed her in her crib. I loved how Alice took care of the Baby, her mother instincts would have attracted anyone, and I could not help but be in love.

82. The next morning, I was eating breakfast, knowing I was supposed to spend the day with Grandpa Jed. I was hoping it was just like any other day we spent together, but I feared he overheard us at the independence party.

83. If he did, what would he say, would he tell my family that Gabriel was not mine or some other private thing we had discussed the day before?

The revelation 2

I will be back tonight” I said to Alice as she was waking up and I walking out the door.

2. Grandpa Jed lived a few miles away in a rich part of the town, he made a lot of money growing up and could afford a big house. My Dad was always proud of Grandpa’s work ethics, he would say he had set the bar for our family.

3. “Grandpa!” I said as I opened the door to his white house.

4. “Sonny I am glad you made it, I figured we would spend the day fishing. Grab that tackle box and the fishing pole I bought you and take it out to my truck.”

5. We go fishing a lot, he will probably take me to the same spot which was not far from his home.

6. I was right, two minutes later we were pulling out our fishing gear. We walked down to a clearing that overlooked the river.

7. *It was a nice day.* I put a worm on my hook.

8. I looked toward Grandpa and noticed Grandpa’s perfect cast into the river. I was filled with expectation that he would catch a brook-trout.

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

9. Silence was behind the both of us for a couple of hours, before I broke the ice, “why did you bring me down here?” I asked nervously.

10. “Yesterday,” Grandpa started saying, “I overheard your conversation. I want to tell you a strong story that has been passed down from generation to generation.”

11. “Long ago their dwelled cavemen, these cavemen grew over thousands of generations, some people believe they might have come from outer space. But one thing we are sure of is when these cavemen began, there were dinosaurs that lived amongst them.”

12. “The dinosaurs, animals and cave people lived upon the earth. They constantly worked on their bodies to keep them alive and working in orderly fashion. At the time, the creatures of the earth did not understand that the universe could not stop their existence. At some point the creatures of the Universe decided to have a talk with the cavemen, ‘we have come to introduce you to our city, in hope that you will find goodness due to all the work you have done upon the earth,’ they telepathically said.

13. “The cavemen took that the wrong way and thought they were trying to take away their strength, and because they feared as every creature does, they casted out the Universe as enemy’s. The more the cavemen thought about the threat of an easy living they got paranoid and began to fight against themselves, they fought against their own strength, and because of that—they grew weaker. Because of their new weakness they blamed the Universe or the creatures of it and began a battle that still happens to this day.”

14. Jed went on to say, “after much time the cavemen had a solution to loosing so much of their strength, they would put their strength within their surroundings. They spent millions of years walking the earth casting their strength into the stones, plants, animals and even the sky.”

15. “Over millions of years their population grew and expanded. Some of the cavemen thought it good to put their strength within their body’s, but most of them put their evolutionary strength in their surroundings.”

16. “After some time, cavemen evolved into people or some of the people...these people would go to the earth for wisdom or advise, that is when they would find the strength that their forefathers had put into the animals, stones, plants, etc.”

17. “The strength was good for the people who had evolved, but there was a downside to using their strength—and that was they no longer could disagree with the earth, or they would be threatened—consciously, by disagreeing with the fathers.”

18. “Is that why the earth hides certain information, for example the Universe?” I asked.

19. “Yes” Jed said, “everywhere one could go on the earth they will find bits of information that was stored in the rocks, water, and atmosphere. The information makes a cover for anything that existed outside the cavemen’s ways, their information will threaten you as they threatened the creatures of the Universe, that is if you step outside of their reality; although outside of their reality is threatening—anyways, due to a new reality.”

20. “If you go beyond the cavemen, you are your own authority per se.”

21. I ask, “If there was another reality or universe, what would the cavemen do if they were more powerful?”

22. “The earth at this time is being used by the creatures of the Universe, they could not get rid of the cavemen.

23. “Without the cavemen’s permission...”

24. “They decided to use the cavemen as sort of like a grass, a covering for the earth—an atmosphere of survival.”

25. “Maple,” Jed pauses, “there is a giant computer out there, we are living in a computer. We are living in a personal computer, a personal computer running PBR. They got plants and asteroids as part of their computer; an asteroid as a working function of the computer.”

26. “A long time ago they pushed us out their back end and now they have come—to pick us up. The reason we do not know is because of these cavemen.

27. “Is the earth being used for breeding?” I asked wondering if the things I saw about Orion were the absolute reality.

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

28. “For creatures to exist—the place that they are born in must be fit for them to grow. The earth is fit for humans and wildlife, the atmosphere of survival causes all to be resistant to the Universe which in turn gives intelligence to the living, these would-be great worth to the city. My father and his father and his father’s father at some point had to let go of their own ability to live and had to make peace to survive the universe. You must understand that the cavemen’s wisdom would not go much further than the cave, most of the evolving people and creatures wanted more, for instance a city or a boat.”

29. “How about a cruise ship” I said

30. “Similar to more stuff,” Jed said.

31. “For the people to expand their ways, and thinking, “Jed continued, “they had to make peace—because of their forefathers’ mistake, and that peace would make them closer to the creatures out there living in the city.”

32. “These creatures have always been around, so, as soon—as people break out of the wisdom of the earth—they are confronted with the Universe and ultimately the original plan that started billions upon billions of years ago. This is what the universe would have happened, for people to find the plan and work as one. The earth is being used for breeding grounds and a variety of creatures come here to give birth, that would include the lion and bear. My Father was born here, and his father was born here and so on.”

33. “Our tradition,” he went on to say, “is to live in the city.”

34. “If you dig deep down in your heart, commit to our family and decided that we were friends, then you can expect to have a child, before you ever make the child, and that is because the time here on earth is in its own time.”

35. “Did you receive my father in a similar way as I received Gabriel?” I asked.

36. “No” Grandpa Jed replied, “I went to the city first and then came back and everything was the same as I left, my father never knew that I was gone. But I know who did receive their child in a way that was like yours, and that would be your father. According to him while he was still growing, a baby showed up in your parents newly purchased home. At first, they did not

know what to do with it, they were confused, but because a baby appeared without anyone causing the baby to appear there—your mother decided to keep it. She had always wanted a child but could not have children. The baby that your parents found was you!”

37. “Yesterday when I overheard your conversation with your friends...*you had mentioned Gabriel*. That is why I brought you out here today, I wanted to comfort you and not only comfort you, the idea of having a child, but the loss of your father as well. Your Father said days prior to his disappearance he was going home to create the part of life that did not exist—when you appeared on his living room floor, the part of life that spoke truth, his truth.”

38. “You have an option to live in the city,” Jed continued, “you and your friends, and if you do not go you will be like your father never knowing if the child you raise is yours, that is why he had to leave to know that he had his truth. He would want the same for you. The only reason I am upon the earth is to make sure your father got to his destination, but now, I see you, missing some of the best moments in life! ...I want you to know and love Gabriel as yours, you must go to the city. Afterwards we can all come back and play a family, a rich family.”

39. As the conversation was ending, I felt a pull on my line, “I have a fish” I said.

40. I pulled it and sure enough it was a fish. I fought it and slowly reeled in an eighteen-inch brown trout.

41. The day had come to an end, and my grandpa drove me to my car. “I love you Grandpa,” I said, as I got into my car and drove home.

Chapter 10



Life Behind the Night Sky

Life Behind the Night Sky



I must get my mom something special” I said—as I walked through the aisles of the big box store. There were so many things I could choose from.

2. “How about this candle set” Alice said as she pointed to one of the shelves, “if it’s from you she will love it.”

3. As she was saying this, I was thinking about what I got Alice, I knew that I wanted to get her something special—before we went to Orion, we would leave in two months this would be our last holiday season before we were citizens of Orion.

4. Snow was coming and so we hurried up the selection process and I agreed to settle for whatever she thought best.

5. “Your mom will love the candle set” Alice said as we pulled onto the highway.

6. “I hope so, this will be our last holiday together as children, these moments have to be perfect, and my mom must know, she must discover it—in such a way that she will not stop us” I say.

7. Within what seemed to be minutes we got home and rushed into our apartment eager to wrap presents. We had tonight to get the gifts ready before Gabriel came back from my mom’s. With holiday music playing Alice prepared holiday dinner, I wrapped the presents.

8. Winter wonder played on the radio as snow began to fall. Our apartment was filled with the aroma of baked apple pie and ham. Alice was wonderful at baking, whatever she did in the kitchen was always my favorite, I had to wonder if these moments would be always exciting—if what the spacemen offered us—was not offered.

9. They told us that we would be permanently together, separate but together, sort of like soul mates. I wish I were there

right now; I could solve some of the most important questions running through my mind. I looked down into the shopping bag and pulled out a framed painting I was giving to Grandpa Jed. On the painting were the words, *family is forever*. That is fitting I thought our family will always be.

10. Thinking about the last visit with Grandpa—I was filled with joy, I could not wait to give this to him, *but this would be the last time I would see him as a child*, after this I would have sealed for myself the truth of Gabriel, which takes a long time. Once I come back, I will have changed, but on the earth as well as in Grandpa’s body will not have changed. Gabriel will not have changed either, she will still be one year old. For Alice and me billions upon billions of years will have passed, but on the earth when we return it will be the same, unless the whole family does what Jed said, and live as a rich family—possibly in a whole different time, maybe even the times of very few beings on the earth, that is if all makes it possible.

11. Thinking about this stuff was exciting, but I had questions, I was still on the earth, and I had to wonder if my father was going to come back to the earth. I try to tell myself that I would not be here if he were not going to help raise Gabriel, but in the light of the earth—I could not feel as good as I could—if I were in the city. I had two months left and then reality will be my life, I will be okay.

12. “Dinners ready” Alice said from the kitchen. I walked into the kitchen happy to smell baked ham with pineapples. I was hungry, I sat down gladly, thanked Alice, told her she was wonderful, and began to gather my plate.

13. That night after supper and all the dinner duties were done, I lay next to Alice, her head resting on my shoulder, this will always be like this, love between Me and Alice, I knew a few good things about living and one of these was Alice.

14. I got sleepy and fell asleep.

Life behind the night sky 2

I got presents,” I said as I opened the door to my mother’s house. Kids were already there waiting to open their presents.

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

I showed off the big bag of presents I was holding hoping to excite the kids.

2. “Maple let us open ours now” the kids said. I caved in and started handing out the presents.

3. Hugs and kisses I got from the children, and I loved every moment of theirs.

4. I left Grandpa Jed’s present under the tree, once he noticed it, he opened it and yelled across the room and said, “isn’t that the truth.” I walked over to him and took a seat next to his hoping no one else would hear our conversation.

5. I said, “after you told me how I came to be and other great things I could not help but want to give you this gift, but I leave in two months how will I find you in the city.”

6. “Grandpa Jed tipped his chair back and said “I am glad you asked. There are laws in Orion, laws like not allowing others to enter the home occupied by the owner, so obviously that is not a possibility, but there are places that we can get together. They are like the earth. We can have family gatherings in such places. My father takes me to such places, places to fish or hike. There are public beaches, mountains, and whole worlds waiting for us to explore.

7. I have not mentioned this to you, but in the city, I have a job, I grow apples in the mountains of Apk, but not through old matter that exists but fresh matter, fresh from the love I give it. I grow some of the best apples around or at least some say so. I go to the mountains of Apk every fifty years.”

8. I asked, “why do you not grow the apples in your own estate instead of the mountains.”

9. “If I grow them for Apk I feel like I am part of the bigger picture, creating love for my fellow man, it is the loving thing to do, plus I have two hundred children and want to set for them a good example. I have been in that city for a long time, more time than you can count, I bet you originally thought I was seventy, everyone who sees me on the earth thinks so. The earth does that age thing, the cavemen learned about people their own way and shared it with the surrounding environment until it appeared to be the truth of the people. If something taught you Maple you must get rid of the knowledge, I am trillions upon

trillions of years old, and everybody in the city treats me like I am a beginner.” Grandpa explained.

10. Grandpa and I talked most of the day as the family came up—to give a merry greeting. Soon it was dinner and afterwards I knew that I must tell my mother my intentions and question her about her dealings with Orion.

11. The variety of food lightened up the atmosphere as I watched a lot of hands grab food...*their portion of a variety of food!* Green beans, stuffing, turkey, gravy, and Aunt Carol made her special dish which tended to be my main course.

12. I grabbed the large spoon that sat on top of the casserole and gathered as much green-bean-casserole as I could fit onto my plate.

13. Holiday music played throughout the house, and time went by fast, soon, after most had eaten—everyone explained that they must go home. I hear “didn’t the night fly by,” as someone walked out the door to their car.

14. I watched as most of the people gathered their belongings and walked out of the front door. Aunt Carol stayed behind she thought it good to help my mother clean. As they were doing this Alice took over my mom’s effort to clean and told her she needed to rest. My mom agreed and sat down in the living room.

15. This is the moment I considered; we have some time now to discuss Orion. I sat down on the couch next to her, a bit nervous, but anxious, the next couple of hours were going to be important.

16. I started talking... “mom, we never talk about certain stuff, and I want to give it a try.” “Okay,” she says. “My friends and I have discovered a portal, and that portal leads to a city, that would be the city the universe is made up of. The universe invited my friends and I to live there. I had a talk with grandpa, and he explained that he has been living there for a long time. He also mentioned that I wasn’t born in a natural way, that you found me on the living room floor.”

17. “Gabriel came in a similar way,” I said.

18. My mother looked at me shocked, she struggled for words and said, “when do you plan on moving there?”

19. “In a couple of months,” I said.

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

20. “I will explain it the way I lived it” she said, “when I was younger. When I was a teenager I worked hard for a child, but in my young adult years the doctors told me that I could not have children. I was upset and began to seek help from the universe. Slowly things started happening for me, strange things, things that caused me to look deeper. I would not know if I would call it a portal, but a door opened into another dimension, your father did not know about it at the time, and I did not tell him. I went into that other dimension and found the future and not just the future, but reality, a new reality. The people there told me that I needed to make money because when I got back to the earth, I would have a child, I stayed in Orion until I had enough money. I did not see your Father the whole time I made the money to take care of you, but one thing I did know was your Father had to at some point, work—for your life to exist, for the truth, the truth that you were ours, that in truth you were our child, that you did not just appear there—by...*who knows?*”

21. “I know what Jed has been saying—that your father went to Orion—to establish our family as truth, as a family!”

22. “I just hope that it is true.”

23. “There is so much confusion in my mind, as if I have been on the earth for too long, I find it hard to except that I made money at all. Once you turned nineteen my money ran out and you appeared to have a child of your own, and like you, I faked reality to stay on the earth with you. When you appeared on the living room floor as a baby, I had to convince your father to pretend you were ours.”

24. In response to her story I said, “that is like Alice and me. Creatures that lived in the city explained to Alice that I had lived with Gabriel in the future, she immediately found herself to be with hopes of a child. She did not know what to say about that,”

25. “So, when we were in Florida together, she convinced me to say the baby was mine. Through the experience I slowly fell in love with her, I knew I did not want to lie to everyone, but I loved her. The love was so intense that after a while I found myself proving the child was mine.”

26. As we spoke, I started wondering how my mom would get back to the city. When I questioned her, she said “they

usually come and get me; they have throughout your whole life, this time I am wondering, if it would be best—if I go with you. Hopefully, I will find your father there.

27. Alice walked into the living room after cleaning and I said, “I told her everything, about Gabriel and Orion as well as our plan on living there in a couple of months.”

Life behind the night sky 3

Months passed quickly and the day came, Brendon, Max, Brenda, Bam, Alice, my mom, and I stood at the entrance to the portal. “Are we ready?” I said in a loud voice.

2. We walked through the opening and within seconds all of us were in a room surrounded by wild vegetation. In the distance we saw the spacemen walking toward us.

3. They took us, most of us who had never lived in Orion; we had to be physically redesigned—to live on the level of cleanliness and structure required—to sustain life. My mother was treated with luxury in Orion for bearing a child.

4. The red-colored spaceman led me into a golden built, marvelous, out of this world designed room, he led me into the room, it appeared to be a hospital. Golden, clean, and sparkly tools were throughout the room.

5. “Come!” the spaceman said—pointing to a huge golden sphere, large enough to fit a person on the inside; most of the sphere was hollow, but a notable structure.

6. “The sphere will move, hold onto the gold, there is nothing to fear,” the spaceman said.

7. With bare feet I walk the narrow golden steps, I place my hands on the bars of the sphere—embracing myself.

8. The spaceman began to give a touch of charity to some of the buttons and objects in the room.

9. The sphere begins to move.

10. My body begins to feel such love and ecstasy—that I never knew was possible—for a living being to feel.

11. *I am being cleaned; I am being washed!*

12. Cookies, mint, and candy filled the air.

13. I could feel years of garbage being removed from my body.

FINDING RUN PERSONAL COMPUTER PBR

14. *This is unbelievable!*

15. Days was my body worked upon in absolute charity.

16. The others had similar experiences.

17. After we got an official place in Orion, the space men brought my mom home to be with Dad, us kids went for the ride.

18. We walked up to the gates of their estate, my dad quickly noticed and shouted Sonny, I ran up to him and gave him a big hug.

19. I explained to him the money and house offered to Alice and me, that I was going to my new home to make home and afterwards I wanted us all to go back to the same time on the earth and play rich family. He laughed and greatly welcomed the idea.

20. Alice and I walked into our brand-new house, making plans as we went. The spacemen thought Alice and I were a good investment and treated us to luxuries as well as millions of dollars. With that money we furnished our home.

21. Soon we would be back on the earth raising Gabriel and helping her to see the light behind the night sky.

22. “Gabriel was truly our child” Alice says—confident we will establish our lives—as well as Gabriel’s.

23. “Yes, Gabriel is ours.... Perhaps the spacemen nor their city were bad.”

24. Alice walks close to me and gives me a comfortable hug, “I love you Maple,” she says!

25. *“The world Behind the Night Sky, is incredible, rich, and booming with activity!”*

26. *“I now know, I know! Creatures built a city Behind the Night Sky, they control the world below through giant cellphone towers, they have power over the very waves that make us, us! Mr. Ward was right, ‘waves coming from outer space is Ah...’ Behind the Night Sky!”*

27. *“It was behind the sky,”* I say to Alice, “it was...*behind, (i.e., covered),”* grabbing her hand and walking into our several-million-dollar-house that resided Behind the Night Sky!

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

The End.


Chapter 1



Behind the Night Sky
Clutter in my Closet

The Mansion down the street

The Mansion down the street



Dad! Get out of my room, I will never, never forgive you, I hate you, I will hate you forever. I cannot believe you did that,” I say taking my computer monitor and throwing it through the glass of my bedroom window, *“I will never forgive you,”* I bellow with tears in my eyes.

Times later

I have been living on this street, *Holden Street*, for as long as I can remember; and for as long as I can remember there has been the old mansion at the end of the street—sitting at the end of an old, winding, dead end dirt road. We must pass by the old mansion whenever we want to use the main road.

2. Whenever we passed, it had always—had me wondering, it is as if its old wood, or perhaps it was the roughly painted—half falling off shutters...something, always got me thinking when we drove by that old mansion: thoughts that would say, *I must have that house!*

3. As we pass by the old mansion, I hear my mom and dad talking worriedly about the future. My dad works as a banker, my mom is a day-care provider. They began to ask one another what they were going to do with me.

4. I recently stopped schooling, because a virus moved into town, and my parents do not want me to get sick. I am not the only one—in my family that cannot go to school, I have a ten-year-old brother and an eight-year-old sister; plus, I have a regular friend, *Steph*, that visits several times a week, along with mine and her friend Tom. We all do not go to school anymore!

5. Steph and Tom are over almost every day, except when their parents think they are up to no good.

6. Lately Tom, Steph, and I have been close, we are always hanging around one another; as far as we were concerned, we were family. Once and a while, my ten-year-old brother will

hang out with us too, his name is Frog, he usually brings along our sister Sally.

7. Frog has brown hair and brown eyes and appears to be as old as me.

8. I think I accidentally made myself look better than him and now, he kind of fakes it, or is older—somehow. Sally has brown hair as well. Frog and Sally could be taken as twins, but Sally looks much younger. They do not go to public school—now, so they are always around my friends and I—to pretend that they are doing what they see the other children doing on television.

9. Steph adores—Frog and Sally; she pretends to be their mother, it gives her a job...once and a while, I can get jealous of my siblings. *I hope they are not stealing my friends*—I say to myself. Most of the time—it is my problem not theirs.

10. Steph has beautiful purple hair. *Ms. Purple, I call her from time to time—in moments of play.* Her blue eyes make her an incredibly attractive young lady. She is fourteen years old and regularly spends time outside of her house.

11. Tom on the other hand rarely goes out...that is until he is with Steph. Tom wears circle eyeglasses, I rarely get a chance to see what color his eyes are. Big, thick, black circle glasses he wears. That is how I think of him, big circle glasses. If he were to take off his glasses, I for sure would not recognize him.

12. He met Steph a little under a year ago and spends a lot of time out with her. Beforehand most of the time he was in his room—working on his toy airplanes or trains.

13. Model trains and airplanes is how Tom met Steph.

14. Steph's Father owns a hobby shop, and Tom will go in there from time to time to buy paint for his toys. He never noticed Steph in there before, but one day Tom needed help finding paint, Steph was the person who helped him find the paint he was looking for.

15. He was drawn to Steph's purple hair, no one in the small town—or rather the out-skirts of a small city had purple hair.

16. Tom was an average boy, brown hair, and circle eyeglasses, he did not know how to treat someone with purple

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

hair. She told him her hair was naturally purple. For not one second did Tom believe that; he was so scared about something—that he never checked to see if it were true.

17. When she told me, her hair was naturally purple, I figured it was a cover for being plainly dull, that she invented the idea—to add some excitement into her life.

18. To fit in with her, I asked my parents to buy me some purple hair spray, they did, and so most of the time my hair is purple as well.

19. I have only known Steph for a few months, and ever since I met her, I have been drawn to copy her every move.

20. I try to keep her around me as much as possible. If she were wearing black, I would change into something black, just so we would have a thing together.

21. Tom took notice of my attraction toward Steph and decided to help me.

22. Tom and I met a long time ago. We met in first grade. He is the reason Steph, and I are friends. He told Steph that I was a friendly person, popular and whosoever I liked—was kind of special, and not to be taken lightly, so as soon as I started copying Steph, she thought that she was special and popular—and felt free to do as she pleased—whether at school or at home. And as soon as she found out my father was wealthy, she filled—what she thought was the shoes of a rich child.

23. She was not wealthy, her family was rather poor, living on a few dollars a day; *it was—possible to live that way—I slowly figured out by being around Steph and her family*; for instance, I thought everyone would shop at a grocery store, but they do not, and as far as buying a soda at a gas station or corner store, that was rather impossible for Steph.

24. Her family would buy beans, twenty-pound bags of beans—at one time, sort of like one would buy grain or pet food.

25. After spending some time with her mother, I concluded shopping was easy; all one would need to do to feed a family of four—for a month, was buy a twenty-five-pound bag of rice and twenty pounds of beans. That is basically what they ate for the entire month; they appeared to be healthier than my family.

26. I could almost feel like a bad person when I invited Steph to get a soda or a candy bar. I could almost say to her, do not tell your parents, but that could be even worse. I figure if she likes it, *the candy or soda*, she will not put herself in a situation that can cause her to lose it.

27. Tom said she takes the stuff, *candy, and soda*, just to fit in and pretend she is rich too; I did not want to think about it, such could hurt my acceptance of life—as it is.

28. Tom does not say much about this, but I think his parents are wealthier than mine, he seems to like casting the full weight of popularity on me.

29. Tom kind of tossed—and left the weight on me—about the whole popularity thing, looking back—I liked how Steph treated me, she thought of me as popular. I did not actually know what I was doing, but I figured I would give it a shot, I would lead Steph.

30. The first courageous thing I decided to lead Steph in doing was: exploring the Old Mansion—on the old dirt road, the one right down the street. I figured we would not find much trouble, because no one lived on that old dirt road.

The Mansion down the street 2

Steph, you know, one popular thing that popular people do is: go on adventures, and I have just the adventure for you” I say.

2. “Like what?” Steph replies.

3. “There is an old mansion not too far from here; strange, very strange things—people have said have happened there,” I disclose.

4. “Like what?” Steph asks.

5. “Well, strange things...like—puppets that move on their own, or mirrors that look back,” I influence—making it up; *I say the first thing that came to mind, I needed to impress Steph.*

6. “We should walk over there and investigate the windows, perhaps even go inside—so we can find these strange things. Maybe there are puppets over there walking around right now—just waiting to be seen,” I exclaim.

7. “Okay, let’s go!” Steph answers.

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

8. “Tom, are you coming?” I anxiously ask.

9. “Yes,” he says.

10. We began to prepare ourselves for the brief walk over to the old mansion, we had to make sure we would not appear as if we were going to make trouble.

11. “Mom, we are going behind the house, we want to walk along the river,” I say covering up what we were really doing.

12. “Okay, do not go too far, your father will be back soon,” my mom replies.

13. Steph, Tom, and I walk out the front door of our suburb home. Houses were on both sides of the street; we did our best to appear as if we were just taking an average walk, we did not want the neighbors suspecting anything odd, anything that they would need to report back to our parents.

14. We stayed quiet to one another on the way over to the old mansion.

15. Within minutes we were on an old dirt road. About one hundred feet down the old dirt road stood the old mansion, it was dark red in color, and had a small driveway leading up to it.

16. As we walk up the driveway Steph says, “well, we made it, this seems like the rest of the houses...nothing out of the normal.”

17. “That is not the rumor, we must get close to it, perhaps even walk inside. If we walk to the front window, and we do not see anyone, we will try the front door,” I say.

18. “We will look together,” Tom bravely says.

19. We slowly walk up to the window and peak onto the inside, we see nothing except a few pieces of furniture—covered with white sheets.

20. “Looks clear,” Steph says.

21. “Okay, now we just walk to the front door, and we walk into the inside,” I say.

22. We sneak around to the front of the building. We walked to the front door. I gently grab onto the door handle and begin to turn the knob—opening the door.

23. “Hold on wait a second,” Steph says, “how strange are the things that have happened here?”

24. “Do not be scared Steph—they were not that strange, just a few objects seemed to have moved on their own.” I say—making up the story to fit in with Steph’s emotions.

25. I open the door. Steph fearfully grabs hold of my arm—hoping to not find a ghost or even worse its owners. We walk into the insides.

26. “See, there is nothing to be scared about, it looks normal as can be,” I said, comforting Steph.

27. “Jill,” Steph says, *Jill, that is my name...* “I suppose you are right, there is nothing to be scared about.”

28. We quietly walk around the first few rooms of the old mansion. We see nothing strange; we explored until Tom advises we should leave—so we did not get too deep in exploration and find trouble.

29. We listened, and we began to walk out of the house. As we approached the front door, clutter seemed to have been thrown in front of the door.

30. “That was there when we came in, right?” Tom asks, hoping that nobody was in the house.

31. We at first did not answer him, we just kind of, somehow—did not see it.

32. Once we were outside and back on the dirt road, Tom asks, “you saw the clutter, right? It was not there when we walked in!”

33. Steph asks, “are you sure, because that does not seem right?”

34. “I am positive! I looked at that exact spot when we walked in; I remember, because I was too scared to investigate the room,” Tom explains.

35. “Even if it was not there...I did not look hard enough to remember,” I say and took Tom aside and quietly whispered into his ear, “I made up the weird and strange things happening at the mansion. It is a normal Mansion Tom!”

36. “No way,” Tom loudly says, “I know what I saw, that clutter—in front of the door—Jill, was not there...trust me it was not there!”

37. “Even if it was not there, it does not matter, it is not like it is a bad house. I want this old house; sometimes I make believe it is mine,” I affirm.

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

38. Steph over hearing us says, “how about we go back inside and just double check and see what we find, I really, seriously do not believe it; I did not look at that spot when we walked in, so I do not know if it was there. But I do want to see something eerie, that is the reason why we came over” Steph says, “ghostly things happen here.”

39. We looked one at another, and we agreed we would walk back to the mansion.

40. We arrived at the front door, and the clutter was still there. I softly step over it. We walk through the first room...everything looked fine. We arrive at the second room, and I look at the closet, the closet I spent much time at, because I was daydreaming—it was my closet.

41. We look, and notice clutter was thrown throughout the room...the stuff that was in the closet was now everywhere in that room: hats, paper, clothes, trash, etc.

42. “Oh, my goodness, I cannot believe this, all of this was in the closet” I say, “there must be someone else in here.”

43. “Like you mean a homeless man or something,” Tom asks.

44. “No, we should leave, what type of homeless man would throw everything out of the closet?” I declare.

45. We ran out of the house, not looking back, and fearing for our lives.

46. We make it to the end of the driveway and begin to walk home....

47. “I do not know what that was about, but we should not go back there,” I express.

48. “What is wrong?” Steph questions, “we went there to see strange things, I mean—should we not be like—excited or something.”

49. I try to pretend to be strong, I know I had to be strong, after all—I was the one that led us out here, trying to convince Steph I was popular. I never thought something strange would happen. “Yes—we should be excited, that is what I meant, that is what popular people do!” I say—covering up my fear.

50. Tom looked at me as if to comfort my confusion, “You know what Jill, it will be all-right, it was probably the wind

or our minds playing tricks on us, it is not like it will follow us back to our house. Once we get home everything should be fine.

51. I open the door to my house—in a daze; I notice Frog and Sally running up to me, bringing me back into reality per se.

52. “Where were you? Sally asks.

53. “Yes, I thought I saw you down by the old mansion,” Frog added.

54. Huh, *how could they have just seen us, I wonder if my parents just drove by the old Mansion.*

55. To cover it up I decided to test out Frog, I said, “No you could not have seen us, we were in the back yard—the whole time.”

56. “I was just joking,” Frog answered and began to laugh.

57. “Steph you said you were going to play Candyland with us,” Sally said.

58. Steph looked at me and said, “Come on, let us go play Candyland.”

59. As we are playing Candyland, I roll the dice, the dice hit the board, Frog says, “that old house down the street, well, dad said, it was sort of like this game: if you make believe candy-land, you will see candy gush out of the walls.”

60. Sally added, “he meant not real candy, but if you were to pretend Candy, or rather a nice house, to you—it becomes a nice house! Candy will not literally gush out of the walls.”

61. I was so lost at that moment, at first I thought Frog meant that if we made believe candy to be there—it would—sort of—like we did, made believe in strange things at the old Mansion—and then once we made believe, they—the candy or strange things—would come true, but once Sally put it into context—I could see dad saying that, he is always telling us to pretend we are happy and in doing so—that will make us happy.

62. Steph looked at me after Frog’s comment and said, “maybe we should go over there—to the old mansion and see if we can make candy gush out of the walls.”

63. I gave her the look of no, but she insisted, “How about we all walk over—very quickly and take a look—and make believe, maybe candy will come to us!”

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

64. “Yes” Frog said, full of excitement. Sally agreed.

65. “Okay—very quickly, but we cannot go inside the house, we will just quickly walk to the porch,” I said.

66. We all agreed—and quickly got up from our board game. We hurried over there.

67. Once we got to the porch—Steph says, “Frog, how or what are we going to make believe.”

68. “Candy,” Frog says, “Candy! Candy! Gush out of these walls” he says in a loud voice—and then begins to laugh.

69. Nothing happened at first.

70. After a minute, we heard a noise.

71. *What could it be?*

72. We all looked in the direction the sound was coming from—wondering what could be making footsteps.

73. The door handle on the front door begins to move.

74. We gasp as the door swings open. We scream!

75. We began to run...I look back—as I am running to see who it was!

76. To my shock, I saw my dad; at this point I was relieved, not considering I could be in big trouble. I could not tell which was more frightening, seeing my dad or seeing the monster.

77. In the mist of fear, I was glad to see my dad.

78. “Dad” I say full of surprise!

79. “Jill, children, what are you doing out here” my dad asks.

80. “Um,” I could not find the words....”

81. “Sorry, Mr. Flippy,” Steph says, “it was my idea. I wanted to make believe with Sally and Frog, and I swayed them to walk over here.”

82. “That is okay Steph,” Mr. Flippy says, “I am glad you are over here!”

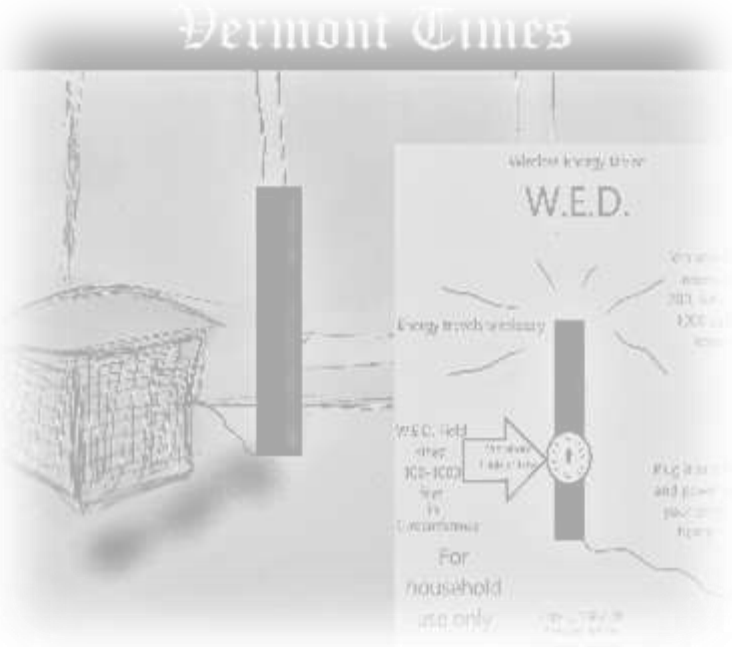
83. “Huh,” I said out loud.

84. “Yes, I am thinking about buying this old mansion, it just recently was put on the market; it is advertised for five hundred thousand dollars, and that is cheap,” Mr. Flippy verbally expressed—with a convincing tone in his voice.”

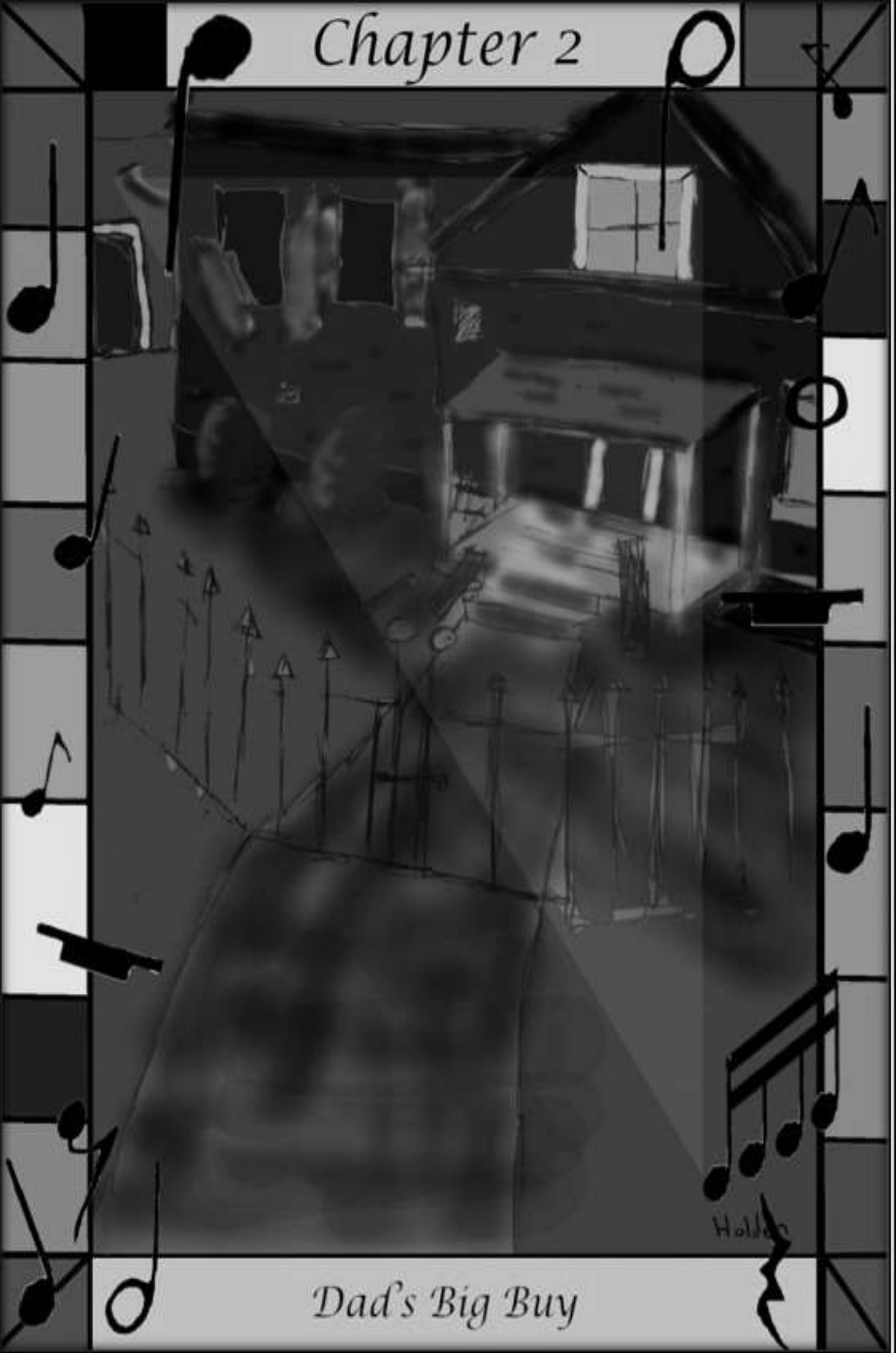
85. We all walked back home.

86. On the way back, I say to Steph, “that is who moved the stuff out of the closet.... dad!”

“Mr. Flippy says, “I did not move anything out of the closet!”

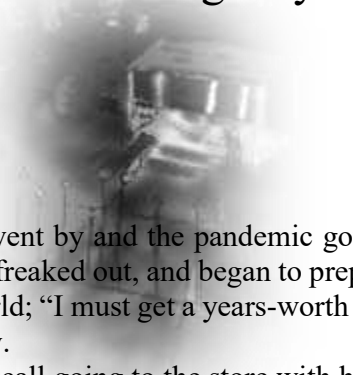


Chapter 2



Dad's Big Buy

Dad's Big Buy



Months went by and the pandemic got worse, my mom totally freaked out, and began to prepare for the end of the world; “I must get a years-worth of food,” she says to Dad in a frenzy.

2. I can recall going to the store with her as she frantically went up-and-down the isles stuffing her cart with items that would last months.

3. “Mom that is fairly well—it is not the end of the world,” I say to her as her arms are pulling items off the shelves.

4. “Yes, but if we do this now rather than later, we will not have to come back—later when everyone is sick,” mom says—defending herself.

5. “There is not going to be any sickness, because there is no sickness,” I say with a bold attitude.

6. We rush back to the house, prepared to stay on our property for months.

7. Dad boards up the house per se., and we shut the curtains and involuntarily seem to expect the world to end.

8. Months went by and not one person on our street got sick.

9. We did not leave the house, nobody on our street left their house either, although my mom and dad would occasionally go out for business.

10. After some time, my mother and father thought it wise to invest in a bigger house.

11. They spent weeks researching locations and houses; they did not in the least bit find a few that would offer anywhere near the privacy that they wanted, until they were shown the mansion down the street.

12. The old mansion stood about an eighth of a mile away from the nearest street, a small forest surrounded the property. If

my dad were to buy the property, he would not just be buying the house, but also the one-hundred-acre forest surrounding it.

13. A thick deep forest of New York surrounded the property! ...Plenty of spruce and pines for us children to play on, perhaps even build small forts...like kids houses.

Dads big buy 2

I overheard my mom discussing with my dad—the old mansion a couple of times before my dad gave the news: “kids, we are moving into the old mansion down the street.”

2. He was happy, he bought the old mansion for a cheap price, three hundred thousand dollars, which included a one-hundred-acre forest.

3. I was super excited, so were my younger siblings: Sally and Frog.

4. We waited anxiously by his side for months, hoping to catch a word about when we would move. I needed desperately to play in the huge forest out back—behind the mansion; Sally and Frog both craved their own room.

5. “Dad, when are we moving?” We ask that year in a sunny winter.

6. “Fitting that you asked children, your mother and I—have decided we are moving—which means you need to start packing the little items in your room; we are planning on moving at the beginning of spring,” dad reveals.

7. Frog, Sally, and I were excited, and quickly packed the little items we could without totally ruining our living comforts and began to anxiously wait for spring.

8. At the end of February, once we were sure the snow would not be back for another year, my dad began to bring our possessions over to the old mansion—that sat hidden on Holden Street; we did not move all at once, he started out bringing the things we did not use daily. He slowly moved onto the bigger objects as time went on: tables, dressers, chairs, beds, etc.

9. Once he was sure we could move the rest of our possessions in one afternoon, he told us the plan: “tomorrow, in the morning, we will bring the little left of our possessions to the new house, we will pack our two cars tightly—with the rest of

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

our possessions. We can make several trips, if necessary,” my dad explains.

10. I was super excited; I could not sleep at all that night. Thoughts continued to cycle in my mind—throughout the night. How will I set up my room, where will I place my stuff, and mostly how deep into the forest would I—and could I explore?

11. Anxiously, and eagerly I waited for morning to come. I continued to look out the window in hopes I would see the sun rise over the houses across the street.

12. Finally, light came through my bedroom window.

13. Shortly after the sun began to rise over the horizon, I cleaned up and walked down the stairs to the family room.

14. Noticing Frog and Sally playing on the white carpet, I ask, “is dad up yet?”

15. “Yes, he is, he is in the garage,” Sally answers sweetly.

16. I walk out into the garage, gasoline fumes blast me in the nose; I look around and notice my dad, he looks at me, he says, “Good morning, Jill, I hope you are ready for the big move today!”

17. “Are we moving today? Great, I have been waiting to move for months,” I say surprised and anxious to complete the move.

18. “Your mother has breakfast ready in the kitchen: waffles, strawberries and bacon—your favorite!”

19. I rush into the kitchen—my stomach now is twisting in pain.

20. Happily, I look at my plate full of food.

21. To sure myself it was mine, I ask my mother, “is that my plate?”

22. “Sure is,” my mother replied.

23. I quickly sat down and picked up a greasy piece of bacon and stuffed it into my mouth.

24. *Crunch, crunch*, sounded the bacon as I chewed.

25. I reach across the table and grab the maple syrup and pour lots of the sweet stuff onto my waffles. I picked up the fork and knife; I began to design a creative way to take apart the waffles.

26. Five minutes later, the waffles and bacon are gone. I quickly grabbed the glass of fresh squeezed orange juice—lovingly placed there by my mother and finished the glass of juice in one big gulp.

27. “Jill, we are completely moving by ten o’ clock. We have other things to do today, so please talk to Frog and Sally...make sure all their stuff is out of their rooms and loaded into the car, it is particularly important,” my mom explains.

28. “Yes, I can do that,” I answer, feeling a bit nauseous from forcefully putting all that food into my stomach.

29. I had two hours to make sure my siblings were ready for the move. I decided, I would encourage them with over-flavoring the idea of the move, that we would each have our own separate rooms—once we were in the new house—living in the mansion.

30. “Frog and Sally, once we move to the mansion, we will each have our own rooms. Would it not be great if we were moving over there today? We than could set up our rooms... We could decorate them and make home out of them,” I say.

31. “That would be great Jill, but it seems like we are never going to move. dad has said we were moving for months now, and we have not moved at—all,” Frog replied.

32. “That is all about to end today; if you two get your things ready and you bring them down to the cars, I can promise you within a couple of hours we will be in our new house,” I say.

33. “Great, that is if you are not lying” Sally said.

34. Frog, full of excitement added, “We will pack right now!”

35. Frog, Sally, and I rushed to get our things together, and brought them down and placed them by our parent’s cars.

36. My Dad noticed our belongings placed by the car—and tightly packed them into the cars.

37. “Are we all ready?” my dad asks before making one last sweep of the house.

38. “Yes,” we say and hurry to the car.

39. We opened the doors of one of the cars and got into the inside.

40. A few minutes later we rushed out of the car and ran into the mansion.

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

41. “Yes! Yes,” Sally says, as she quickly found her bedroom.

42. I grabbed the little of my belongings that I had placed in the cars—and brought them to my room.

43. Most of my possessions were already in my room.

44. I began to move furniture around and tried out objects here or there.

45. I worked on my bedroom until my mother called me for supper.

46. As we settled into the dining room for supper, we began to discuss the new place...

47. “So, how do we like it?” my dad asked.

48. I forgot to think, I figured we were already beyond that and loving the place!

49. We all sat quiet for a moment before Frog said, “we love it!”

50. “Exactly dad,” I added.

51. “You know children,” my mother begins speaking.... “The school should be opening back up in the fall, and so—you three will be busy in school, plus your dad and I will return to work. That will mean to make the most out of this summer, because once school starts back up, you three will be busy catching up on the work that you missed.”

52. After supper, I walked up the old noisy stairs to my recently set up bedroom and laid down on my Victorian style bed—carefully covered with an extra fluffy feather blanket.

53. I placed my head on the pillow and began to wonder why I must go to school. I do not like school, but usually once I am there—I do not mind it as much.

54. “I wish this pandemic would last until I am an adult,” I say to myself, “until I no longer must go to school. I could then buy a home and live there for as long as people live in houses.”

55. I drift off to sleep visualizing my own mansion, and dream of one too.

56. I dreamt, I owned a Picasso dreamlike one-hundred room house, full of precious items, it had a magnificent swimming pool on the side of it.

57. I would, while in the mansion, with much time, lose

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

my mind—or remembrance of reality, and get lost in the rooms and closets. I played for so long—I could not find my way back to the splendid swimming pool—I had started my journey at. But once I did, after hundreds of years of playing, children of all ages were in my swimming pool—playing!

58. In laughter, I ran back inside and found three tiny people trying to use two hands, and then, I woke up.

59. *That was so cool, my favorite dream* I say to myself.

60. I walked downstairs, gazed out the window, and notice fresh snow had fell in the middle of the night.

61. I walk into the kitchen; I glance at Frog sitting at the kitchen table. We do not say a word to one another.

62. I pour a bowl of cereal and take it into the living room.

63. I make my way around the unpacked boxes placed throughout the living room to the couch.

64. I grab the remote to the television and turn it on—and I begin to flip through the channels until I find a brightly lit cartoon.

65. I stuff my mouth with the sugar in the bowl until I have quenched the morning hunger.

66. Within minutes Frog comes into the living room asking me how I slept.

67. “I slept as normal,” I say.

68. He continues the conversation, mentioning it is a new house, that we are in the new house.

69. “Yes, Frog we are in the new house. But now—it seems common, plus I am tired of not being home; all of this out of placement makes me feel lacking rest.”

70. Frog answers, “let us go outside, if we spend the day out there, mom and dad will do the un-packing, and once we come back in, we can play as usual.”

71. “Good idea,” I answer.

72. We get dressed preparing ourselves for the snow outside.

73. We walk out the door, I say, “Frog, let us go into the back woods, I have not seen it back there yet. Plus, dad bought one hundred acres back there and I do not know what will happen to my mind—if I am not the first to explore the entire one hundred

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

acres.”

74. “What is one-hundred acres?” Frog asks.

75. “It is a lot of land; we could walk out-back of our house and we most likely will never find the end of our property” I answer.

76. We walked into the woods; the snow made a crunching sound as we walked.

77. Frog picks up a stick and starts bouncing it off the trees.

78. We walk for one hour, before Frog says, “I am starting to get hungry.”

79. “You did not eat breakfast?” I spoke.

80. “I did not think about it, I was too anxious to come out here with you.”

81. “Well, if we go back now, we most likely are going to have to help unpack. Are you okay with that?” I ask.

82. “Yes, I am fine with that, I am getting hungry.”

83. “I agree, I am getting really bored, these woods are not as fun as I first thought they would be,” I say.

84. We hurried back to the house.

85. “Yes, we have made it,” I say to Frog.

86. “That is good, I am so hungry, I could eat a whole box of cereal,” Frog replies.

87. I open the front door and watch Frog run toward the kitchen cupboards.

88. I investigated the living room to see how far my parents got unpacking. My Mom notices me looking at her in the living room.

89. “So, you are here! I need your help moving some of these boxes up to the attic,” my mother says.

90. “Okay, which ones?” I answer—and question.

91. “Basically, all the loose ones—sitting on the living room floor,” she replies.

92. “Wow, that is a lot,” I say.

93. “Frog after you are done eating, I am going to need your help,” I yell into the kitchen.

94. As Frog was eating, I began to bring the boxes up to the attic.

95. The stairs were narrow, the stairs that led up to the

attic.

96. Beforehand I had not gone up to the attic, so I did not know what to expect. Once I was up there, I was surprised, the attic seemed to be larger than the rest of the house—except the ceiling of the attic met at a point instead of being flat.

97. I walked through one room and then another; I was looking for the spot where my mother placed the other boxes, I figured it was wisest—seeing that—way when she went to look for something, I could say it is with the rest of the boxes.

98. I walked through one room and then another room, no boxes! And then another and still no boxes! I began to get afraid that I would get lost up there, so I set the box down in the fourth room and hurried down the stairs.

99. I decided to wait for Frog to get done eating before I moved more boxes.

100. I walked into the kitchen and watched him slowly eat his *Captain Munch*. As I was watching him, Sally came walking down the stairs.

101. “I almost forgot we moved—” she said as she stumbled around the kitchen looking for something to eat, “is Steph coming over today, I miss her,” Sally expresses.

102. “She was over a couple of days ago,” I answer.

103. “Yes, but I want to play a game with her, or just hang out,” Sally answers.

104. “No, she will not be over today, besides, we have a lot to do, I am going to need your help today bringing up boxes to the attic,” I reply.

105. “Frog will be helping too!” I add.

106. “Let me get something to eat first,” Sally reasons.

107. “We have all day, no need to rush,” I say.

108. I walk back into the living room and began to organize the boxes, questioning myself, *what is the easiest way to get all those boxes up to the attic.*

109. I decided to take them all to the attic, all at once.

110. All throughout the hallway boxes...the hallway was now full of boxes. Frog and Sally walk into the hallway.

111. Sally says, “How are we supposed to get to the stairs?”

112. “What?” I ask.

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

113. Frog says, “the boxes are in the way.
114. “We will climb over them,” I answer.
115. “Okay,” Frog says.
116. *Bang*
117. *Pop*
118. *Crackle*
119. We arrive at the stairs.
120. “This should be simple, in a few hours we should be done, now that I have placed all the boxes here,” I say.
121. “A few hours...” Frog groans.
122. “Come-on, if we hurry—it might only take an hour,” I state.
123. We each grab a box and begin our way up to the attic.
124. “It sure is dark up here,” Frog says.
125. “This attic is huge,” Sally adds.
126. “Yup, I put the last box I brought up straight down there,” I say—hinting toward the further triangle roof rooms of the attic.
127. Without a warning we hear a bunch of noise coming from down the attic stairs.
128. *Bang!*
129. *Crunch!*
130. Four paws came running up the stairs.
131. I look behind me—to confirm my suspicion...I was right, it was Max.
132. “Max, I say, “I missed you so much,” while wrapping my loving arms around him.
133. Max full of joy—with his tongue hanging out greets all three of us. Immediately afterwards he points his nose toward the back of the attic and begins to bark.
134. “What? What are you barking at Max?” Sally says while wrapping her arms around him.
135. “This does not seem right,” Frog added, “Let us go back downstairs.
136. “Okay,” I say.
137. We set down our boxes and went downstairs—to the kitchen.
138. “Mom, who brought Max home?” I convey. “I

thought he was going to stay with Auntie until next year?"

139. "Your father thought it was a good idea to bring him to the new house," my mother resolves.

139. *Max—my beagle, he is my dog, we grew up together, he is two years younger than me. I do not know what I would do without him; he has been gone for two months, and I have missed him a lot. I did not say anything about how much I missed him, I figured my dad would not listen...plus after so many times of hearing, 'dad knows best,' I figured he did.*

140. "I am so glad Max is home, now I can sleep in comfort. I would have mentioned how much I missed him, but I figured, 'dad knows best,' I convey seriously to my mother.

141. "Well, your father does know best, that is why he brought Max home."

142. "He mentioned something about the house being too big, plus someone seems to be moving things in and out of some of the closets," mom answers.

143. I looked at Frog wondering if he heard that...I decided to keep quiet, hinting to Frog to walk into the living room.

144. Once we got to the living room, I whispered quietly to Frog, "Frog, I did not tell you this, but a while ago, in the past, Steph, Tom, and I came over here—to the mansion, before we bought it, without letting mom or dad know."

145. "Okay," Frog said sort of embarrassed.

146. "Well, stuff appeared to be moving on its own," I say.

147. "I do not believe you," Frog answers.

148. "Mom just said, 'dad is having the same sort of experience, you must believe me,'" I snapped.

149. "Tell it to Steph; mom told me Steph will be over here in a couple of hours," Frog answers.

150. "Jill did you get the boxes up to the attic yet," My mom yells from the kitchen.

151. "We are working on it right now," I bark back.

152. "I do not want to go up to the attic," Frog argues.

153. "Come-on, if we hurry, we will be done before Steph arrives."

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

154. “Sally, we are taking up the boxes, are you going to help,” I yell into the kitchen.

155. She storms out into the hallway and picks up a box—only big enough for her small arms to carry.

156. As we walk toward the stairs of the attic, we notice most of the boxes were up there.

157. I looked around, looked at Frog and said, “dad sure is quick! I guess we are done!”

158. I walked back down the stairs, walk into the living room, flip on the Television, and begin to wait for Steph.

BTNS Insert 2

Thinking about my bitterness.

About, you know if it's not property rights, or even Earth rights... I mean, uh, then it's, uh you know, being the alien or letting the alien through you know which, which is sort of its, it's ridiculous in the first place.

2.) The idea is ridiculous. I mean say, say imperfection you know, which is totally impossible for a home or house or planetary habitation to be taken over and it's not, uh, imperfection, but in fiction it can; in it there's some clearance allowed for the idea.

3.) So uh, you know, there'd be, you know, a small struggle there and in thought too. How to keep evil from, you know, invading a home or planetary body and there's so many, so many problems that can come with it.

4.) The idea you know if, if, if it's not an automatic perfection. You know, then obviously there's a flood of problems with our profession and perfection. There's no threat. There is no evil. Because evil would have recognized his need, independence upon perfection. And so, it would have played out all its possible routes before there was nothing left but for evil to be perfected.

5.) But in this in this case it wouldn't have been perfected yet, so that's if it ever did get perfected. But there is an idea that it would need its past at some point, and when it did, you know it would claim to be perfect.

6.) So, this is a small idea of that and there are possibly other ones too, but, you know, there, there is an idea that you know in me that you know, you know, say, I mean a property is taken over, say, your daughter dies, and, you know, you feel a little bit of guilt that you didn't step in there and, you know, demand perfection.

7.) And you didn't, you know, get rid of the evil, you know, and there's a little bit of guilt there because to claim perfection, knowing there's not perfection in a particular habitation is sort of ridiculous.

8.) So, I mean, if it was something small that you could just take power over and meet that, it's not perfect. I mean, say, your child's about to drown in a swimming pool. It can't swim; and you go in there and say, well, that's pretty much imperfect and you pull it out.

9.) I mean, there's a there's a bit of guilt if you don't pull the child out of that swimming pool, *I suppose, and I'm, I'm not sure what the answer is, but keep in mind, this is all fiction. This entire story is fiction. You know, it's something to play with, in thought, you know, it's not something that, you know, I can use or say anything because I'm a fictitious man, you know? I like to think more than I like to you know, govern. But it's possible that this book can make you know a case for government. Something to read, to consider.*

10.) So back to the point, you know you saved something about swimming pool... you saved the child in the swimming pool. You're the hero for admitting the way it was put, you know, and you pull the child out.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

11.) The other version is you know... you, uh you go over and or notice the swimming pool, and you know you are, you see, you see a man trying to, you know, you see a couple men trying to drown the child.... And you go over there, not thinking about it... and you say, "hey, leave my child alone."

12.) And you get trimmed as well.

13.) And it is tough!

14.) It's a tough thought to think about what to do right then, to what, uh, what the best possible outcome is in perfection and to be honest with you, I don't know, but there are a few scenarios to think about, you know if, if you if, you choose to think about it.

15.) So, you know, was that permission right then?

16.) You know, I suppose to think about what you knew, there was a choice you could make, you could pull the child out, but that was confessing there was evil. And the child lives and the other scenario you must, you would choose that the child would die.

17.) And claiming that was perfect is tough. It's a tough situation. It's a tough question and you know, right now I feel more peace thinking that you know that to watch the child die, is um...

18.) And to claim perfection, you know, knowing that my evil was not as great and just rest and perfection. I mean, I'm almost sure evil rests in perfection. You know if it came against something that was stronger than itself, it would rest in it and you know, there's no reason to judge, judge that situation, to say that you know there was the ultimate evil. Unless it was the perfect evil, which is, you know, perfection, I suppose, and it's in a small sense so... you know, I would just, I would say that you know as much as much as one would want that child to liberate, then as much as your life would depend on your child living.

19.) And all this beauty and wonder and everything about it, you know... there was nothing more you could have done. But to go in there and die with it? Right then and there might be times where you know. One would wish they did, but we're not evil people. Evil does not mean that it's going to win. It doesn't mean that it's going to win. It's perfect. It's perfect and you know that in your heart to look the other way and claim that the child is still alive; I think that's fine. I think that's fine by me, and you know I am just going to claim that that it's peace right there that you know there was nothing more that somebody could have done to keep the evil from doing what it was doing.

20.) There was taking by force, there was no going in there with military action, there was no restraint. There was only the idea that it was, you know, not perfect. It was not a perfect situation. So, the outcome, you know.... was to, you know, kind of decide that it was.

21.) To sort of on stage, a fictitious scenario, and as real as it was, it was somehow fictitious because it was not perfect. That was set out to us...

22.) I mean, there's something in us that's written as perfect, and I know what it is. I know exactly what it is and there and there's no reason to believe that that child would ever be in danger to begin with.

23.) And so right then, I feel totally fine with saying that, you know, that that it did not happen. It just did not happen because for it to happen would be to claim... um, that, you know, that I'm going to be guilty because I'm not strong enough. And I'm not going to be guilty because I'm not strong enough and I'm not going to lose my voice over my story over existence over life itself to say that you know.... that that evil can do that that that it can exist so to lie about it, right then in a sense in the face of evil and claim something other than, it is basically because it was just, it was so unfair this scenario that your own child would sit there and be drowned for god, we don't even know why it would happen. But the idea is present and to lie about that and walk in the other direction is. Is uh... you know, I believe it's the right thing to do, you know, and I'm not and I'm not, I don't think I I'm not going to fear that somebody's going to come back at me and shout and say, "hey, Brendon, that was wrong right then." Because you know it was the right thing to do and I don't think anybody or any of the wild creatures in that fictitious idea, of a planetary body being taken over, I don't really think they're going to be held in guilt for letting their property be taken over.

24.) And I and I don't think they necessarily should have had to fight either. I don't think they should have had to fight and fight, and you know squeal to their death. There's no reason to, and you know it's holding, it is, you know, to watch somebody go in there and take over somebody's possessions or property, you know.

25.) I would know that this much that you know that we can claim that you know it was evil, and evil doesn't have to exist for us and we can move on to something better. Bank on that. If there's enough positivity and it's a certain community you know, they could be treated with...

Chapter 3



Making Home

Making Home



A few weeks passed living in the new house, I never accomplished what I so—eagerly expected over the winter—which was setting up and decorating my bedroom.

2. I had huge, ridiculously huge plans a few months ago and now I am not motivated to carry them out.

3. Today, I most likely will not do it, because Steph is coming over and I must help her, *help her not get sick!*

4. We have made plans for her to spend a couple of weeks at my house.

5. Her mother and father must work in the health department and Steph could be at risk of getting sick from the nearly curable virus.

6. “A couple of weeks might do it,” that is what Steph’s father told my dad.

7. So, she will be at my house for a while. She is going to be sleeping in the room next to mine...my father just recently put it together. He put in an extra old bed and a dresser—he had stored in the Garage.

8. *Ring... Ring...* the doorbell rang throughout the house.

9. “Jill, Steph is here,” my mom yells from the front door.

10. I rush out of my bedroom and rush down the stairs.

11. “Steph!” I say—noticing her purple hair—in the bright sunlight.

12. “We got a room prepared for you—” I say reaching out my hand to grab hold of hers and begin leading her up the stairs.

13. “You are going to love—being here...the room you will be sleeping in—is right next to mine!”

14. I suddenly notice she has no personal items with her, “Steph, um—”

15. "Where is your stuff?" I ask.
16. "My dad said he will bring it over later; we were in a rush coming over here.
17. "Okay, good," I answer,"
18. "Anyways this is your room," I say—opening the door to a spacious room, three stories above the ground.
19. "Wow!" Steph says, "this room is huge!"
20. "Yes, it is, the whole building is huge. I bet if we get lost in here—it could take days before we find our way home," I say as we giggle.
21. "Why don't we go out into the backyard, possibly even explore the forest outback," I say.
22. "Okay," Steph answers, "you lead the way."
23. I took hold of Steph's hand and walked her outside, hot air meets us on the other side of the front door, the smell of fresh forest growth—filled the air.
24. "Okay, I have not really gone back here, I have not had the time since the move," I say.
25. I decided to take Steph around the backyard and show her some of my dad's work—in the backyard.
26. "My dad has big plans for this place," I say, "he has not stopped talking about it since we moved."
27. I led Steph to sit down on the grass—that had recently sprung up.
28. Last year's grass made a crunch sound as we sat down, the smell of spring was all around—as if the winter's forest festivals were being cleaned.
29. I take a deep breath of fresh air, full of life...knowing I had something special, more than special, but the essence of life—the beginnings of life.
30. We stared at the small stream—just feet from where we were. It was a couple of inches wide, fresh run off from the recent snow.
31. I look behind me at the back of our recently purchased house.
32. I say, "Steph, look back—look how big our house is, it is as big as a movie star!"
33. "You are right, how did your dad get such a place for such a cheap price," Steph replied.

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

34. “I do not know, but he mentioned something about it being part of our heritage; I did not get it,” I say, as I look behind me to see what made the creaking sound.

35. “Steph, look!” I say—pointing to a door, a door I have never seen before.

36. Steph looks behind her, “What?” she asks.

37. “That door, I did not notice it before,”

38. “Plus, it is open! We should go inside and look on the inside—maybe my dad just went in there,” I say.

39. We get up off the soft grass. We approach the door that is partially open.

40. “Dad, is that you?” I say as we enter the dimly lit room.

41. “Wow!” Steph says—under her breath, “this room is beautiful.

42. “Look, a piano,” I say, as I touch one of the keys.

43. The room looked in good shape. Small streams of light lit up the room. Decorative curtains hung up in the windows—some still shut.

44. Paintings littered the walls, beautiful paintings.

45. The room looked as if someone was recently staying in it, a coffee cup was on the kitchen table—and coffee was still on the inside, paperwork was everywhere—and the way it looked important paperwork.

46. “Steph, it looks as if someone was just here,” I say quietly.

47. “Yes, you are right, maybe it is one of your dad’s relatives.”

48. “We should go back outside,” I quietly whisper to Steph.

49. We quietly exited the same way we entered, leaving the door open—in the same manner as we found it.

50. Once we were several feet away from the house, toward the stream—beforehand that we were sitting at, I said, “that was so weird, I cannot believe dad did not mention that room!”

51. “The furniture must have been in there, because I do not remember your family having that type of stuff,” Steph says,

52. “Maybe he does not know about it.”

53. “Let us go ask,” I said. We rush into the house, keeping our mind set.

54. “Dad,” I say out loud.

55. “Yes, girls? I am in here,” my dad replies from his library.

56. Upon entering the room Steph says, “Wow, you sure have a lot of books.”

57. “Wonderful job dad, this room looks great,” I say—adding, “did you know about the room out-back of the mansion.”

58. “The one with the huge lock? Yup, but the real estate dealer said, ‘there was no key,’ so I have not gone inside, but maybe there is a treasure inside!” my dad says playfully.

59. “That is weird, because Steph and I were just in that room, it was not locked!”

60. “Come with us, we will show you,” I say.

61. Surprised, my dad follows us saying, “I do not think we are talking about the same room, I looked—and there was a big—old lock on it!”

62. We rush outback—leading my dad by the hand the whole way.

63. We get to the door; I look my dad in the eyes and point to the door. I say, “Look!”

64. “It looks the same as it did Jill, it has got a big, old lock on it,” he says while grabbing hold of the lock and giving it a jingle.

65. Surprised by the look on his face, and hearing the lock, I look toward the door,

66. He was right, a big, old lock was on the door; it was shut so tightly—one could not even peek on the inside.

67. I look at Steph.

68. “We were just playing, Mr. Flippy,” Steph says—making an excuse.

69. She was remarkably familiar with being blamed for things she did not do.

70. Jill's dad laughs—saying, “girls, and walks back into the inside.

71. “Thanks Steph! I am guessing he would not have believed us?” I express.

72. “Exactly, we are probably over tired or something...I

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

mean look at the lock it is huge, and a spiders web is still on it!” Steph says.

73. “Maybe you are right Steph, why don’t we go into the forest and play out there, maybe we will get inspired to do as I wanted to—*which is build small—little houses in the trees,*” I say.

74. “Okay,” Steph answers.

75. We move some twigs and bushes out of our way as we enter the forest.

76. “Wow, this is beautiful,” Steph says—as she looks at the sunlight-sparkle on the forest floor.

77. “I bet Tom would love to come out here with us,” I say.

78. “Look over there...that is a great spot,” I say pointing to a patch of pine-trees, touched with love, and capable of holding little houses.

79. “Well, what do you want to do again?” Steph asks.

80. “See if Tom wants to come out here and build little houses in the trees,” I say.

81. “We could make them really nice, we could make a lot of them, it will be nice, like—*a fairy-tale woods!*” I say to Steph.

82. “Okay, where are we going to get the wood and nails?” Steph asks.

83. “I see some at my house, but I do not know if it is enough. But I bet my dad would know...perhaps Tom has some as well,” I say to Steph.

84. “Okay, Steph says—agreeing to build, “we will build in this spot,” Steph says pointing to the patch of pine-trees, “let us go talk to your dad and then I will call up Tom and see if he can spend a couple of days over here at your house” Steph replies.

85. We rush out of the forest and back onto the inside of my home.

86. While Steph calls Tom, I decide to quickly ask my dad if there was any extra wood or nails that we could use for our tree-forts.

87. “Dad?” I say, “Steph, Tom, and I are going to build little houses in the trees. Do you have any wood or nails—that we can use?”

88. “Definitely—Jill, did you see that old shack by the

tennis court?"

89. "Yes," I reply.

90. "There is a ton of stuff in there; use whatever you want" Dad says.

91. "Thanks" I gratefully reply—and add, "can Tom spend a couple of days over here?"

92. "Ask your mother," dad says.

93. On the way toward the kitchen to find my mother, Steph surprisingly rushes towards me,

94. "I just talked to Tom," Steph says gasping for breath, "his parents are bringing him over in a couple of hours!"

95. I quietly walk Steph into the kitchen.

96. "Mom," I yell, "Tom is spending a couple days over here," I say—hoping she would not argue.

97. "Okay Jill!" Mom yells into the kitchen—and adds, "once he is over here, make sure you spend time with Frog and Sally; they have been away from the others at school—so it is important for them to spend time with you."

98. "Okay," I yell back.

99. "Let us go up to my room," I quietly say to Steph."

100. "So—two more hours—and we will start building! That is when Tom arrives. ...*Right?*" I say to Steph.

101. "Yup!" Steph answers.

102. Within a half-hour Tom knocks on the door.

103. *Bang! Bang!* the steal-ball hanging on the double doors—to the entrance of our house sounds!

104. Steph and I rush down the ancient staircase, the old wood creaks with each step.

105. I swing open one of the doors. "Tom!" I say—greeting him on the inside.

106. "Frog, Sally!" I yell into the living room, "mom wants you two to hang out with me today."

107. Thinking they might not listen, I add "Tom is here!"

108. Both younger children come running into the front hallway.

109. "Tom," Sally says.

110. "Tom," Frog says.

111. "What we are going to do today—" I begin explaining, "is build tree forts!"

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

112. Everyone gives me their full attention.

113. “Dad said ‘the wood in the shed, the shed by the tennis court is ours for the taking.’”

114. I notice Frog blink with attentiveness.

115. “First plan: we investigate what is in that old shed, once analyzed, we take what is needed to build the first tree-fort,” I say.

116. “Are you ready for this Tom,” Steph asks.

117. “Yes, I sure am, my dad said, ‘I could spend the next few months here,’” Tom says.

118. “Well, let us go,” I say looking behind me to call my best bud over, my beagle, “*Max come-on, we are going into the woods.*”

119. Max hears!

120. Four paws running on the wood-stained floor of my parent’s new home—comes running after us. He lunges out the door full of playfulness.

121. I take my right hand and gently touch the top of Max’s head, “*You are such a good dog Max—my best friend, along with Jill and Tom,*” I say, looking at both—making sure I do not offend our relationship.

122. Max looks me in the eyes, communicating a sense of security, lacking abandonment and full of love.

123. Tom, Steph, Frog, Sally, Max, and I rush toward the shed.

124. Once there, we pop open the old roughly painted double doors of the greyish colored painted shed.

125. “*Wow!* This place is huge,” Tom says, “if your father lets us have whatever is in this first room, just *in the first room...* we can build more than one tree-fort!”

126. “I did not expect this much wood!” I utter.

127. “The planks,” I say, “these...will make nice floors...plus they are small enough for us to carry!”

128. “We can use the sheets of plywood to level everything out,” Tom added.

129. Frog and Sally both grabbed one of the ends of a two by four and began to walk toward the forest.

130. “Are we going in the right direction,” Frog yells with his back toward the forest.

131. “Yes,” I say—as I grab a board to lead the way into the forest.

132. “Right here is the spot!” I say, placing my board on the ground—in the middle of a small clearing. The sunlight shattered through the forest canopy—dancing sparkles of light, as I looked around to find a spot to start building.

133. “*Right here is a good spot,*” I hear Steph say—pointing to my right, “*the branches are large and bunched together exactly right to place wood on the top of them.*”

134. “Okay, let us go get some more wood” I say.

135. “Tom, you are going to have to help me get a ladder.”

136. Tom and I rush to my father’s garage and we both grab the ladder and begin to carry it into the forest.

137. “Here!” Steph says.

138. Tom and I set the ladder down.

139. I hold the bottom of the ladder as Tom begins walking the ladder into the trees. He places the top end of it on the thickest part of the branch.

140. “This should be safe!” Tom says.

141. I climb up the ladder to investigate. The smell of pine was thick as I went up.

142. “Wow!” I say, “there is a whole world up here in the trees,” *a whole new wonderful world.* Birds greeted me with chirps each step of the way up—in the trees.

143. I gaze around.

144. “I think we can just lay the boards over these branches,” I say—gazing around the green world of needles—made fit for a world of creatures.

145. Tom says—from below, “we will start handing you up the boards.”

146. “Okay, toss them up here,” I reply.

147. Tom grabs one of the two-by-four-inch-boards and hands it to me. I carefully place it on the branches, and then another, and another.

148. Once I had five good solid boards in the trees, I climbed on them and stood—straight up.

149. “*Tom! Climb up the ladder, I want to see if it will*

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

hold your weight.”

150. Tom begins to climb up the ladder. Steph follows close behind.

151. Tom, Steph, and I stood on the wood floor—we just made in the branches—out of five boards; we gaze around the tops of the forest. We had never been up that high in a forest, there were a lot of new smells and sights and we had wanted to *remain up there!*

152. “I want to go up,” Frog says.

153. Sally agrees.

154. I say, “we should get more wood up here first. I do not want you two getting hurt.

155. We begin to race the clock, hoping to get one good solid floor done before the sun sets.

156. “Tom, hurry...hand me the rest of the wood,” I say after enough boards, including a giant piece of plywood—were brought to the spot of our tree-forts.

157. Tom hurried to hand me the wood.

158. I lay one board down and then another.

159. It is done, the final piece of the floor was the giant piece of plywood. Tom did that part. In doing so he almost fell off the ladder, the board was so heavy.

160. “Sally, Frog, this should be strong enough now, hurry up, come up the ladder before it is too dark to see.

161. They both climb up the ladder together. First Frog, and then—Sally right behind him.

162. “Wow, this is amazing!” Frog says standing straight up in the trees.

163. Sally does likewise.

164. “Okay, it is getting dark, we should go inside now,” I yell from below.

165. We rush into our lustfully-large house anxious for morning to come—so we can build more in the trees!

166. I did not sleep much that night. My mind was too anxious for morning to come. Throughout the night I made a mental map of what I was going to do the next day: how and what I would build next—in the trees.

167. “Tom, wake up!” I say walking into the living room.

168. My dad thought it was good for him to sleep on the couch.

169. Tom quickly got up and began preparing himself for a day in the woods.

170. I run around the house—getting Frog and Sally ready.

171. Steph had the same experience as me, she woke up early, anxious to start building, she stayed by my side.

172. Soon as everyone was ready, we rushed out into the woods and began to build—right where we left off the night before.

173. Sally, Steph, and Frog carried boards and I put them into the trees.

174. We played, danced, and made life-long packs in the woods.

175. We spent four days building the forts...and when they were done, they were beautiful, like a fairy-tale-land on the treetops.

176. We built three of them, connecting all three with wide boards, connecting tree to tree or rather house to house.

177. From the forest below the forts were hidden—by tree branches, so they were not seen. We told one another nobody would see them either, we did not want to tell anyone about them.

178. On the fifth day of building the forts we decided to paint them.

179. We found some old paint in the shed: *eggshell white*. We encouraged one another to paint them.

180. We figured it could be easy—after Tom said, “if painting them is too hard, I will just—take the cans of paint and gently pour or splash the cans of paint on them.

181. So, we did our best to paint the small forts—that appeared to be a few boards scattered in the trees.

182. Finally, we were done.

183. “They are amazing!” Tom says.

184. Steph agreed.

185. “We will be master craftsman in our future!” Frog added.

186. Okay, great—everyone, let us go down and get something to eat, I am hungry.

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

187. Everyone agreed.

188. As we make our way out of the tree line and into the backyard, I look to my right and notice the door that Steph and I had noticed open days prior—was now open.

189. I look at Steph and with my head I notion to look at the door.

190. She sees and gasps.

191. “Frog, Tom, do you see that?” I ask.

192. “What?” they ask.

193. “The door to our right!”

194. Tom says, “the door is open!”

195. Frog adds, “I thought dad could not open that door!”

BTNS Insert 3

So, I mean, maybe not word for word, but you know, there was the idea in the original BTNS book of the hologram machine. So, you know you have something like Star link and then, if there's enough positivity in a certain community, you know, they could be treated with holograms in their community.

2.) And that's through, you know, accurate electron strikes. And you could just say that they were expensive. And thus, the community had to be a rich community.

3.) And maybe even pull back up the holograms for and then also the other one is you know... It is close to the hologram machine, but it's you know, kind of a dimensional crossing or even a time machine.

4.) You know where you know you would cross an entire planet, you wouldn't use the same planet because it would mess up the planet that you want and you couldn't use the exact, you know, I mean cause if you came across yourself and not only that, but things can bump into things that can make it appear like you came across yourself and therefore create some sort of anomaly that would destroy that planet.

5.) So, you would have to crossover to a parallel planet and then kind of time code it just right, so this way there were many options you know on the planet.

6.) And, another thought, you know if you made a portal to another parallel, you know, say you created a wormhole across the dimension in you know a magnet a strong magnetic interference, uh, you know or disturbance.... You know that you know if you get across to the other side, you're, all the particles that are supposed to be here would be here, you know whether you evaporated when you crossed over or left something behind.

7.) Whatever it was, it would make unclean the crossing, the cross into a parallel, you know, they're just be, they would even either be too much stuff or too little stuff.

8.) And uh, you know, uh, it... it would somehow, you know, make the unclean, the earth unclean... you know to, you know, I mean take things over or bring things back, so there would have to be some sort, it'd be like accurate, you know, electron strikes.

9.) So, you would... must do a bridge and that bridge is, it could be something like a drill type theory, you know like a spiral type of time thing, where you would have to be in a certain place at a certain time to cross over and you know and that would be only it would be for a few different reasons.

10.) First to take things over and bring things back.... You know, you would have to, I mean, it's just like, you know, a law. I mean, you can't put your clothes on fire because they'll burn up. And so, this idea of a possibility of using many similar Earth-like planets

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

would be to, you know, to use law with it, like you know, not close on the fire, you know you can't just leave your clothes out in the wilderness for one-hundred years and expect them to still be clothes, you know. So, it is one of those laws where you would have to... know what you were doing.

11.) And uh, you know, the important one here is, you know. I mean, we can go back, go back to Mass and you know, for 2000 years we celebrated Mass, yadda yadda yadda.

12.) But uh, it's important that the idea of remembrance I think it's more profound than I could ever have... um, we really think that, you know, uh... is needed and it really stinks that, you know, there's all that religious stuff around it. In warfare and just a lot of unknowns you know it's the same thing you using that idea is the same as using suddenly let's crossover you know let's create a giant magnet and crossover to another device it's just not possible without a little bit of study in there.

13.) So, we're going to have to just rule that one out for now but that that idea is very much present that there's mass, Massachusetts, a weapon of mass destruction and mass gravity's sake. There's mass to the atoms. And then you know to uh... accurately take the mass here. And somehow you know, you you'd have to have equal mass in both places or one of the planets would, you know, find this anomaly and therefore it destroys itself so, you know the important mass was the "Remembrance" one for me.

14.) And so, you know who would go to another planet just to relieve themselves in some sort of sleep or dream, I mean, a lot of us would, and I probably do overnight, but I don't think it's the point of the actual study of parallel universe crossing. I think it's something we want to know; we want to document and then we want to have books about it.

15.) It's something of a lifelong journey in a sense, because first you'd want to know, you know?

16.) Are there other powers out there... you know, are there other creatures out in the universe?

17.) And then, you know, once you get some of the data analyzed, you know, you start thinking, well, we're going to have to, we're going to have to, you know, start preparing, suiting up for space. And so, you know... there's obviously a new idea of space.

18.) This is black matter type idea.

19.) That black matter is not necessarily any direction we know of, it's not something we know... you know, my speculation is right now it's the very things we do daily, um, you know, whether it's writing or reading or, you know, just adding on a conversation, it's a lot of the nothing activities we do.

20.) So then there's that you know, the space exploration and then you know part of the black matter which we want written in the black matter is how you know you get from one universe to a parallel universe without destroying it or messing either universe up. And uh, you know, uh, memory would be one you'd want. You'd want the uh, you know I mean, it's quite a journey.

21.) I mean, you know when people first went to the moon, you know, that was that was quite an accomplishment, and it was documented, and people looked at it and they're still going over how they can advance and better that so that way it can be used every day and I think this is one of the ideas that can be worked on is you know: how you can get from... you know, kind of teleport, *yet we remember not a dream*, not something you going to do you know without you know we don't want a child's play the moon thing. I mean there there's the idea that people could child's play that and kind of pretend they went there and then there's taking the mass that chunk of mass that desires to go there through accurately, you know it's kind of in the black matter, right...

Chapter 4

...in your mind all that study, all the knowledge, all the codes behind it, and then once you get that weight of black matter, you know, when you put the big guy in there and he's pretty much, you know he just crossed dimensions and his memories are intact. You know, I think that's going to be a big one and you know I'm sort of sort of upset right now. Just think that there is the idea that people could go on these huge pointless dreams yet say I have no recollection of it.

23.) Not only no recollection of it, but, you know, it's a, it's disturbing you think that, you know, my main point is just trying to keep the recollection because I think, I think that was part of the journey so far, it's just having the recollection of what was back there.

24.) And how do I tie those two together, um, without having to think that you know what?

25.) The, the inspiration that I have in my mind, I mean, just one small story is, you know...

26.) You go out in a dream, you kind of sort of remember where you were. I mean say if I went out in a dream right now and got a huge nice fancy car, maybe one worth one-million dollars and when driving around and looking behind me, I think, well, that old Brendon back there, he sure would have loved this.

27.) And after, you know, maybe one, two hundred or three hundred years of just dreaming of fantasyland cars and buildings and living in them, and you are at the time, look back. You see this old guy named Brendon...

28.) You know, and at this point, two, three, four hundred years down the road, you might not be the same.

29.) So, you look back and you speak. Well, you know. Um. That guy is still poor back there. He doesn't have. He doesn't have the courage, doesn't have the ladder, he doesn't have the riches. And then. You know. And he doesn't have the knowledge that you just gained.

30.) Through your riches and you look back, you said. Well, he didn't have this. And so, you know, you say, well, it's. It must be possible then to lose whatever, whatever I have right now. The money, the memories of how you got money, how you have money. And somehow that idea that Brendon is still back there, you know, slowly eats away at you until you're in the same situation.

31.) A lack of recollection too, you know the the good lifestyle. And so, I mean it would be, it'd be the same idea with, you know, Universe crossing... where once you get where you want to go. And the planet that's the best for you. You know, you have that idea that you know you can lose it.

32.) You gained it and there's the idea that you could lose it. Um. And so that's not that wouldn't be the point to lose it and then you say well you if I was to say well, we all need to do math to keep the, uh, secret knowledge. I mean that sounds religious. It sounds. Uh. It doesn't sound like this stuff. Though it can, but it doesn't. I mean, we're going to go celebrate Mass, so we know we have powers over the universe, you know, I mean, it sounds kind of ridiculous, but the fact is that is at least one of my points to, you know, I mean, that was growing up, was it sitting there? Was there something in space?

33.) You know what?

34.) How does this all operate? And then if there was evidence to bring that evidence back and that evidence points to having some sort of gravity to battle against, to know, you know, uh, equal, you know, weights.

35.) I mean, you know, you have two pounds on this weight. You got to have two pounds on this weight. And that's just so you know. Um, that that. Not only did you cross dimensions onto a parallel universe, Earth. But um. But you know the reason that it doesn't feel or seem like you did. And like we're just making believe is, is, is because we had to have weight.

36.) And all that space, all that black matter is, is the evidence that we can dig through to prove that, you know, we were in one Earth, and we moved to a completely different area.

37.) And uh, you know, so uh. I, if I were just to say we did cross over to another earth. I mean, obviously we're going to face ridicule, and I'm not up for that, I'm not! ...I was never a type of person that wanted to suffer persecution, not only because, but you also know... Not only did I not want to suffer, but didn't want to suffer because it hurt, but I don't want to not believe that that happened you know I mean, I want to believe that it happened, but I don't have them pass in here to you know I would be at the starting point I would you know...

38.) Growing up, I made stuff up a lot. Sure, other people did too. And. You know. I never really believed what we made up, and I'm not sure why. And I was a solid man. I mean, you know you either going to have two-hundred dollars when you get out or you're just going to get pushed off onto the list that you don't have two-hundred dollars so, you know and then there's an important point coming back... you know coming over here to try to explain this and then and Behind the Night City and other places it is the mass behind it.

39.) Where is the two-hundred dollars Brendon and you know there's not two hundred right there because it's in the black matters in space and nobody's going to want to listen.

40.) They don't want to sit you on a college program, and some might but that's not going to be my area of focus.

41.) I mean they don't want to say to a college program they want the facts, they want the evidence. And you know, I mean in any true simple is hard too because if you say believe in mass. And you know, call out what you want and then you got that one's too simple too, because I didn't need to study to see where that went to... and uh... I mean where that goes to is that there's some trial and errors with the uh, with the memories, I mean, you know, if you could cross over through times on parallel planets, looking back, you very well could, destroy yourself by, uh, not having the proper mass. And uh you know the proper mass crossover. I mean you know because I mean so you crossed over to another planet because you wanted to be in a you know I have a bunch of friends you know and not to have that mass looking back you could destroy yourself.

42.) So, it's almost like a medicine in a sense where you must accept some sort of side effects when you go over it, but I think it's more important to know that you will, you will forget without the mass.

43.) I mean if you, if you just, you know, magnetic disturbance and you forget what you're doing because you're in paradise now.

Extra Space

44.) It's very possible, at least for me that I would look back and you know, know that I had died, and I didn't die though, but you know. There's something about gravity that sits there and begs for us to die, and we never wanted it.

45.) You know, people, you know they'll start doing drugs or overdose and there's all these rehabilitation clinics and I know we hate them. And then, you know, you go to that place where all things are possible and you look back and you think, man, that dude had it so good back there.

46.) It's ridiculous!

47.) It's nonsense!

48.) But it's black. It is black. And uh... and in the black matter is, you know to figure out that kind of code where you know, you keep the recollection of crossing over it is not something fun. It's not something fun. Just like the game the Undercover AI project was set in the machine. He didn't see nothing. I think that was the most important part about that, Ether, is um, you know some people had been different there, their wave was different but. But when War got in that seat, there was evidence for everybody else that there was a baby doll. I mean, Tyler saw the baby doll. And they were living on words. They thought this thing was, you know, who puts a baby doll in the middle of the woods?

49.) It was the wicked little doll, you know, they put it in his seat, and they got rid of Sally. They got rid of flesh, rot, disease. But uh. You know that that inspiration is a real inspiration.

50.) War was a good you know he was a man of War.

51.) So, he had weight to him. He had mass. He was building a city and so he gets in this little child's toy, and you know probably regretted it for a long time because that little baby doll is back there and other things, this cause his timing, the timing was different.

52.) He didn't. He didn't really want; he didn't prepare to go through time. It wasn't a one of those where it was like, give me two-hundred dollars now and we have it cool and then everything works out. It was a little bit more technical, the idea of right then of traveling through time.

53.) And so, you know, only some stuff went through, you know, and that was a huge problem because, I mean, they did it too. He didn't just do it to War, but he also did it to Byte. And Byte was the gravity back then.

54.) And that's where you get that little chipmunk thing. Um, that's running around. You know, Byte tries to give it.

55.) Give that you give the give the dope money and nobody's got the dope money and everything chaos breaks out.

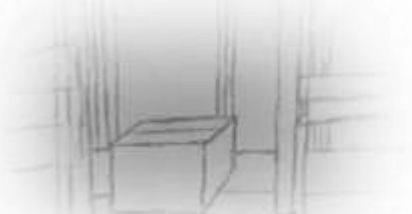
56.) You know millions of years down the road Byte shows up with dope money and then everybody can go home, you know so everybody's in a dream until the until Byte does what he does in gravity and then they all can go home so.

57.) Um, the ideas were sitting there, and they and they had messed up when it came to time travel when it came to the money, the stuff that that we were supposed to, that we expected, you know... And to uh, simply say we have it now, you know, leaves a little bit of curiosity to whether it was ever true to begin with and from this angle, you know, having kind of survived something, it looks very possible to uh... to know about time travel, time travel with mass attached.

58.) But I mean uh... it pretty much just come, I think it would come down and just be in War, right then, you know, just being glorified War and getting what you want when you want it and winning the battles and you know, having all this stuff.

59.) That that was the only point to begin with was just being on top of everything and then you know. You know being balanced having that mass to uh to power up and get what you want and that's what it came down to, but the knowledge was there and it still it kind of surprised me a little bit...

Extra Space



Seeing that my dad was a banker—he had pretty good credit with the bank. The summer we moved he took out a huge loan—to do some house *fixing-up*, finishing work on the old mansion, not a lot, just enough to give it a fresh new look.

2. Some of the rooms he planned on stripping out the old sheet-rock and re-placing it with new, plus he planned on painting most of the inside and outside.

3. School had not started yet, so obviously—he wanted us children to help.

4. The first thing he planned on fixing was the closets; he started in my room first, in the closet in my room.

5. “Jill, this is how you take off the old plaster,” my dad yells through his facemask, right before he begins to swing his hammer and smash the plaster to pieces.

6. “You do not want to swing the hammer hard, just enough that the plaster begins to crumble. We want to keep the little boards under the plaster!” My dad says—pointing toward the wall, that now was slightly caved in.

7. *Smash!*

8. *Pop!*

9. “You see that Frog? all that wood?” my dad asks.

10. “Yes,” Frog answered.

11. “We want to keep all that!” my dad says—yelling through his face mask, pointing at the wall.

12. I notice Frog looking around my bedroom; he sees a hammer my dad had placed in the room. He picks it up.

13. He squeezes in behind dad and begins to lightly tap the wall.

14. “Dad!” Frog says, “this side of the closet does not

have the little boards.” He was on the side of the closet that faced the room Steph had slept in days prior.

15. “What? Let me look,” my dad says—taking off his face mask.

16. “I cannot see, it is too dark in there.”

17. “Frog, go to the toolbox and grab me that little flashlight,” my dad says—full of excitement—looking at Frog.

18. Frog moves quickly to the last place he saw the toolbox.

19. “Here you go Dad,” Frog says as he quickly found the flashlight, and handed it to dad.

20. “Wow!” dad says, there is a whole lot of space in here.

21. “And look at that, there are some old boxes in there” he says—completely taking off his facemask and his face from the wall.

22. Dad picks up his hammer and gently and quickly begins to peel off the old sheetrock.

23. Once he made a hole big enough, he reached in and pulled out an old-looking cardboard box; *Paper Mill Corp.* was written on the side of it.

24. Frog, Sally, and I followed him out into the hallway, eager to see what was inside.

25. “Let me see,” I say—peaking over my dad’s shoulder as he set the box down.

26. Dad sets the box down on the old wood-stained-floor hallway. He blows off some of the dust that had gathered on the top of the box.

27. He pulled back the cardboard flaps and began to pull out papers; some normal-looking paper and some that appeared to be newspapers.

28. I picked up one of the papers that was placed by the box. I looked at the first page, my eyes glanced at the Title: N.Y. Paper; I scroll down to the date, may of nineteen-thirty-one—it read on the yellow stained paper.

29. The *Empire State building* has been complete, read the article just under the date.

30. “Dad, this paper is old, look,” I say holding up the paper to his face, “the *Empire State Building* now complete!”

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

31. “I see it Jill,” my dad says, “it was complete in nineteen fifty though.”

32. Dad continues speaking, “I wonder why they hid that in the wall. It would have made more sense to extend your closet—to make it more spacious.”

33. He shuffled through the box.

34. “It does not look like much here, just some old papers, I will have your mother go through these later, maybe there is some money in it for us.”

35. “Frog, these three boxes I found inside the wall?”

36. “Yes,” Frog answers.

37. “Can you bring them down to the kitchen and set them by the kitchen table.”

38. By the end of the day the closet was expanded five more feet—seeing that dad could find no reason for wasting the hidden space.

39. The next day after the dry wall settled and dried, I painted the closet pink. Dad told me I could pick whatever color I wanted, so I picked pink.

40. In the next few months, he will finish the rest of the room, today it will just be the closet.

41. This old house is nice—I can smell the money coming forth from its insides; *I cannot see who would leave such a beautiful place abandoned and abandoned for so long.* The place sat empty the whole time I was growing up. The outside must not have been painted for fifty years. The shutters on the house look as if a tornado had come through at some point.

42. I step out of the closet and gaze at my work at painting, “it looks good!” I say to myself—turning around, noticing the detailed molding—hugging the ceiling and the wall.

43. *This house sure is beautiful, mystic-like, and rich!*

44. The next morning, I woke up—from my sleep, and stuck my feet in my warm, fluffy animal-doll-slippers.

45. *What could be making all that noise?*

46. I slowly walk to the end of the hall, looking at the simple, Degas oil ballet dancer paintings—that my mom recently hung on the hallway walls as I went.

47. I reach one of the several bathrooms—in the house. I

gaze onto the inside.

48. *It is a mess!*

49. “Dad it looks like a tornado came through here!” I say loudly.

50. “Good thing you are up Jill, I am going to need your help today!” dad says.

51. “Okay, let me first get dressed and something to eat,” I say.

52. I walk back to my bedroom.

53. *I cannot believe it, he ripped out the toilet, tore down the walls, and had the entire window completely out of the bathroom!*

54. I quickly get dressed and walk back to the bathroom.

55. “Okay dad, I am ready, what do you need me to do?”

56. “Okay Jill, what I need you to do is clean up the broken wood and smashed drywall.”

57. “Simply place the smashed material and garbage in a bag. ...And do not fill the bag so full that you cannot carry it,” dad described.

58. “Got it” I voiced back toward him as he had his head under some plumbing.

59. I sat down on the floor, feeling sluggish. I consider my short skirt/dress—that I would dirty it, but I figured it was a once and a great while thing, I ought to just be dirty today.

60. As I began to pull out the broken boards and smashed drywall—with my hands, I began finding things: shoes, papers, jewelry, etc.

61. “Dad there are things in these walls!” I express toward him, hoping to surprise and shock him.

62. “You can expect that Jill, when some of these older houses were built, the bank was not the source, or shall I say place—to store riches...the home was! Instead of the people putting money into the bank, *as they do now*, they would put it into the walls of their houses.”

63. “But, Jill,” dad resumes, “to get to the money—if we or the common people wanted it, we or they would have to completely take their entire house apart, which ended the trend back in the year eighteen fifty. I followed, and so we are not going to be doing that!” my dad advises.

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

64. I pull out of the wall a photo, I take a good look at it, I consider throwing it out, but I remember it is money, and I toss it back into the wall—down the rafters that appeared to have no bottom.

65. The smell of sweet wood: rich maple and pine wood—all about the room—as I gathered the pieces of drywall in my hands.

66. I gaze up at the carefully designed dark-stained wooden molding hugging the ceiling and the wall, “*nobody would have moved out of this house unless they were insane,*” I say quietly.

67. The mansion was beautiful, marvelous, and gorgeous; it was Victorian styled built in the early nineteenth century, survived two wars, and now sat deserted.

68. *What happened to its former residents?*

69. *This does not make any sense.*

70. As my hands dig through broken pieces of drywall, I notice a black-paper-type object within the wall.

71. I carefully pulled it out, hoping to not lose it in the void of empty space between the floor and rafters.

72. *Yes, I got it!*

73. I bring it to my face, a name is written on it, I cannot make it out though.

74. I flip the picture. It is an old black and white photo of a lady in purple, carrying what appeared to be a covered baby. A man dressed in a fine suit was partially standing behind her right side.

75. “*I will keep this!*” I say to myself and place the photo in the pocket of the inside of my dress.

76. “Lunch is down here, in the kitchen when you are ready.”

77. I look at my dad, “Mom has got us lunch ready.”

78. “Let’s go eat!” dad says—picking me straight up off the floor; dry wall fibers fall off my dress, making a crumbling sound.

79. We quickly rush into the kitchen; I glance at my usual chair and happen to notice the papers we found in the closet—still under Frog’s kitchen chair.

80. *We forgot about the box!*

81. I sat down ready to eat, the smell was so intense I could have thought I was eating. In a hurry, without consideration, I picked up my grilled cheese sandwich and chowed it down in one big bite.

82. “Jill!!! That is not very lady-like!”

83. “Sorry Mom, I was so hungry,” I say and quickly change the topic, “Dad the box of papers we found in the closet is under Frog's chair, we forgot all about it!”

84. “Oh yeah, bring it to me, I wanted to see if maybe I could find some money in there.”

85. I slide out of my chair, crouch down and pick up the box. I brought it to my dad.

86. He slides his plate across the table and places the box—full of papers on the table.

87. He begins to look through them—hoping to find some money.

88. I, hoping to escape work in the bathroom take the opportunity to find Frog.

89. I look around the house wondering how I will find him this time—in such a huge house.

90. After checking a few rooms, I got tired and sat down on the blue living room sofa.

91. I rest my mind.

92. Suddenly I recalled the photo I had in the pocket of my dress.

93. I pulled it out—quickly, gazed at the lady in the photo—wondering who it could be.

94. I felt as if I knew the lady...she had a familiar face, *perhaps I met her in another dimension.*

95. My eyes began to gaze and stare long at the lady in the photo; the lady was so beautiful; it is as if something was in the photo—keeping me from turning away. Maybe it was her eyes, maybe it was her hair, something held my eyes to that photo.

96. The trees behind her began to sway in the wind as soft music sounded in the air. *This was coming through the photo*, as if I were there myself. The man behind her welcoming me home. I could almost hear this beautiful lady, as a mother—calling me, welcoming me to her world, to our home!

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

97. The baby in her arms began to glow bright white, or at least the clothes did, I could not get a clear picture of what the baby looked like.

98. *Who could it be?*

99. I listened to this gentle imaginary music for what seemed like ten minutes, and then I hear Frog say, “Jill you have been in the same spot for a whole hour!”

100. “It has not been an hour Frog” I bark back.

101. My dad walks into the living room, “Okay Jill, let us go back up to the bathroom.”

102. “I thought you were going through the box” I responded—frustrated.

103. “I did!”

Extra Space 2

Later that day Steph showed up at my house.

2. “Dad—I am done, Steph is here.” I ran down the stairs, beforehand changing out of my drywall-stained dress; I put on some jeans.

3. Later in my room,

4. “Steph come into the closet; we totally re-did it. Plus, we found empty space, and added it to the closet—so now it is a lot bigger in here.

5. Steph walks through the closet door; a lamp hangs from the ceiling.

6. “I did not get a really good look at the old closet, so I do not have anything to compare it to,” Steph says—looking at me in the back of the closet.

7. Clean, dry clothes hung in her way of clearly seeing toward the back of the closet.

8. Steph sits down.

9. I softly walk closer and sit down in front of her.

10. I begin to gaze at her.

11. “What?” Steph says.

12. “Huh,” I respond.

13. “You were looking at me like you were in love, like you were going to kiss me,” Steph says.

14. Steph's hair began to appear to move although there was no wind. I gazed into her eyes—pulling stuff, either out of her, or it came out of my thoughts of her, *whatever it was I must keep it!*

15. I began to dream of our friendship: pictures, writing, making life work.

16. *I must be mature, I must grow.*

17. Five minutes passed when I gazed at Steph, I realized I must be asking her questions.

18. *I will answer her.*

19. “I'm not in love, I just want to make growth work,” I said—comforting her feelings of discomfort.

20. “Growth meaning?”

21. “Like fun. Why did you come over? *For fun!*”

22. “Yes,” Steph answered.

23. “Well, pictures are fun, writing is fun, depending on our life together sounds fun, it seems right,” I say—hoping she was imagining what I was, which was a sure world.

24. Steph looks at me and says—without mature consideration, “we will always be together!”

25. We spent hours in the closet, ridding of the pandemic, comforting one another and the world we were creating together.

26. At no point did I consider a threat, long ago—I had taken strength to keep away the pandemic.

27. We must have drifted off, because the next thing I bear in mind is waking up in the closet, Steph's head resting on my stomach.

28. The closet door was still open. The morning light, and its fresh appearance was just feet away from me.

29. Bazar aromas fill my nostrils, as if the house were full of a variety of ancient particles. Some smelled as if they were luxuries, but not what appears to be luxury—currently, but luxury from a distant, very distant past.

30. Through the particles in the air, I was changing. I could sense myself changing, it was as if I could not do the more, the more I was doing before...as if I had to know, tell myself to stop having fun.

31. “Steph wake up—morning is here.”

32. Steph picks up her head.

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

33. “Okay, I am up!” Steph responds, stumbling out of the closet, “what are we going to do today?”

34. “I want to study a picture I found; I want to spend some time in my father’s library. But first we must get something to eat.”

35. “What would you like to eat?” I ask.

36. “Something quick, something we can take into the library with us, I seriously have not woken up yet.” Steph responds.

37. Steph grabs a couple of swirl muffins off the counter—placed there by my mother and we walk into the library.

38. “Dad can we look through some of your old books in the library?” I asked my dad as he was walking into the living room.

39. “Yes, sure,” he says with a happy tone in his voice.

40. His library was huge, over three hundred books; they were wonderful books, lighting up the room, giving a sense of adventure, exploration, and long life.

41. I loved my dad’s way of life, I wanted to be just like him.

42. I marvel and covet my dad’s books, wishing I could have them now—all for myself; I could collect more of them filling every cavity within me, than I shall be happy.

43. My hand reaches for the first—thickest book I laid my eyes on. I pull it off the shelf. Quickly I open it—longing to see what was on the inside.

44. My eyes will not rest; I cannot get a clear vision of the book.

45. I lead Steph over to the cotton and leather furniture.

46. I fix my mind on the book.

47. I see a few pictures, some old newspapers—that were part of the book.

48. Some of the pictures look like my house. *I wonder if it is.*

49. My eyes stroll down to the details of the photo.

50. “I do not see Holden Street,” I say.

51. “That must be, look at the giant rock to the right; I know that rock, my eyes always drift over there when coming to

your house, and I always have the same thought, *would it not be fun to live in such a rock, sort of like a doll house, a doll house—nobody knows exists?*

52. I take the photo out of my pocket and ponder the picture.

53. “Who could this lady be, I truly love her,” I say to Steph.

54. “Right there!” Steph says.

55. “What?”

56. “That newspaper article says, *'multi-million-dollar family's' mansion gets a new street name—for their family inheritance—that resides in Woks Town, Massachusetts*. They named their street Holden after Clark B. Holden, the major investor and supporter of Paper Corp. Massachusetts, stating ‘Clark was the brains and money behind their success.’”

57. “And look at the picture, that must be your house...right there in the newspaper—that is published in the book.”

58. “A date is written in the newspaper. *Seventeen twenty*,” Steph says, full of excitement—hoping to receive part of the treasure, if there was any treasure of any kind.

59. I flip one page and then another, “this looks like the lady in this photo,” I say—shoving the photo in Steph's face.

60. Steph reads—from the book, “Mrs. Rug, a daughter of Rugs Paper Co, vanishes on the property. The year eighteen-twenty.”

61. “I wonder if Mrs. Rug is the lady in the photo; if it is, I wonder what happened to the child?”

62. “According to the article, the woman, when she vanished, she was the richest person in Massachusetts,” Steph says.

63. “Steph, what do you think of past lives?”

64. “What do you mean?”

65. “Like, what if years ago we forgot, like amnesia, who we were, and now we can reclaim our past lives,” I say opening a fragile idea.

66. “When we were upstairs in the closet,” Steph begins saying, “I could almost feel the lives lived here, as if I had been living here. But I think I know why; say you froze an object, once

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

you unfreeze it, it appears to be fresh...do you mean it is the same thing with the closet, the closet your dad found the cavity in?" Steph asks.

67. "Yes, that is the idea," I answer.

68. "That must have been the reason for the," Steph paused and got quiet, sort of embarrassed.

69. "You noticed it then!" I say—relieved I had someone to share in my experience.

70. "The strong smells, my dad calls them highs; yup sure did" Steph says.

71. "I first noticed it in this photo," I say picking it up, presenting it before Steph's eyes.

72. I feel the photo move out of my hands.

73. "She is a beautiful woman; I wonder who the baby is in her hands?"

74. "Maybe it is you!" I assert.

75. "Yes, it could be, but a little too close for comfort; even if we had lived here in a past life—how could we have forgotten?"

76. "Plus, now I would be afraid to wake up to a nightmare," Steph responds.

77. "That is what I thought of too, but the more I get the high, the more I daydream about..." I say and begin to drift off in my thoughts.

78. Steph looks at me; she utters "*what? about what?*"

79. "I do not know, sometimes meeting the expectations around me feels a little burdensome," I admit—sort of humiliated.

80. "Well," Steph says, "whatever is burdensome will not be able to burden us all that much longer—if we did live here—in the past!"

81. "Because the past is stronger—" I say looking at Steph shake her head up and down, agreeing.

82. "Did you probe Frog or Sally," Steph asks, sometimes younger children can pick up on these type-things better?

83. "No, but we should," I reply.

84. Suddenly Frog and Sally surprise the both of us—as they come rushing into my dad's library.

85. "What are you two doing?" Sally asks.

86. Steph still had the mysterious photo in her hands, she quickly brings it up to Sally's face and then to Frog's.

87. "We are trying to discover more about this picture," Steph says.

88. "Where did you get it?" Sally asks.

89. "I found it in the wall of the upstairs bathroom," I say.

90. "*Bathroom?* What would that be doing in the bathroom?" Frog asks.

91. "I do not know, but the other day when dad was busting the bathroom walls to pieces, he gave me the job of picking up the crumbs."

92. "I did not only find this picture, but shoes, papers and some chains—perhaps jewelry" I say.

93. Sally snatches the picture out of Steph's hand, turns away from us and examines the photo.

94. "She is beautiful," Sally says.

95. "I wish I could live there!"

96. "That is what I thought," I say looking at Steph.

97. Frog noticed the closeness between Steph and I, and turned toward Sally, and says, "let me see."

98. "Where did you get that?" Frog asks—in a startled voice.

99. "In the bathroom wall, why?"

100. "I see a lady that looks like that walking outside of my bedroom window at night...sometimes she crawls up the wall and asks me to open the window," Frog says.

101. All the room sounded quiet, and in dis-belief.

102. *You are lying!*

103. *That is not possible!*

104. *How could she crawl up the wall?*

105. "Do not believe me—than it just looks like that lady," Frog says while pointing at the photo.

106. "What about you Sally, any thoughts on the picture?" Steph asks.

107. "Not the picture, but something lives in my closet, it sounds funny; after I hear it, things will start coming out of the closet, even clothes will come out; they will be tossed onto my bed," Sally answers.

108. I begin to put their words into my consideration part

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

of the brain, I consider their words.

109. “Maybe that thing Sally was the thing I saw last fall—when Steph, Tom, and I snooped over here—to the mansion.”

110. “What did you see?”

111. “Stuff thrown out of the closet, well actually I did not see it thrown, but one minute it was not there, and the next it was all over the room.

BTNS Insert 4

But you know, the inspiration I think was really off the game on that last one. When it came to a time travel. But uh, you know, uh, I mean, they're pretty, they're close books to think about um. You know, but I'll try to do this one behind the night sky, you know is the...

2.) You know the idea to, you know, kind of make a mutual habitation, kind of a city of rest or something and then, you know, kind of make a home life somewhere in space, you know, amongst all that black matter.

3.) Um, which pretty much would make a stone or something. But uh, you know, uh, right now it doesn't. It doesn't seem all that bad. I think it's more coming down to the permission and stuff.

4.) This goes back to mass again. And uh, you know, the times that I'm living in and the importance of it's so important that you'd have to reject it to make sure that you know it remained heavy.

5.) Um, I mean if there was even such a thing right now, but. You know, uh? You'd be up. You know, there's no planning on it right now from where I'm sitting because. There's a couple of issues.

6.) I mean, the first, the first big one that was sitting there is, you know, there, there, there, there needed to be, um. Perfection, the world's out there in perfection and the universe, the bigger picture of the universe you know, and this is where a hot body I mean this is where the this is where you have every possible thing you know what I mean and versions of it.

7.) You know, and that's the most perfect idea of the universe. And you know, but... you know there wasn't the uh, not that I recall, but there was not the permission to, um, you know, just to do what we wanted as human beings, we followed in order. And we're still supposed to follow this sort of, I think it's the rapid growth of technology, the cellphones, you know, the artificial intelligence, *Artificial Imagination* system, um...

8.) It's an incredible time to live in and you know... I think there needs to be a lot more work in the black matter then we know of, and so, you know, I spent a lot of my time... um, you know, studying, researching, writing, uh, making videos of the thoughts that are coming through. I think, I think there's quite a bit more right now that needs to be... um, you know, uh, get quick, giving clearance for, I mean. You know what...

9.) I think that was one of the end points. There's this huge thing inside of me about holding on to mass. It was like, you know, it's like a weapon for everything. It's the power to get up in the morning. It's the power to you know to win the war. It's power and strength to get a job, it's everything you know that I would need to stay away from prison, it's something written inside of me somehow... which is weird, it's been weird how we I think we could know back in the 90s that if you were to go to church....

10.) Then you know you are going to be a good person and you look through the books and none of it lines up. None of it. Um, you know, you see paradise, you see heaven....

11.) You see you know these cults that are going off the deep end.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

12.) You don't see what the point was which was to avoid prison, you know just stay on the good path and even if you go over in there and there's no path anymore there's no, there's no reason you're in the church building and it was stay on the path, a good path and civilization it was supposed to be the path that led to success, though, through mass, through heaviness, though, you know, kind of a way....

13.) So, what, it's just not sitting there right now, which is weird. It's a weird thought that, you know, the church and kind of applying a cult that you're making one or if you're not making one, you're doing some other criminal, horrible criminal activity, which is there's no reason to be, you know, over there to begin with if you're doing that.

14.) So, it, it really would be a touchy time for that right now and so I tried having as much as possible when I think about it. But back on to the topic you know. Uh, so you know the mass would lead more to a clearance of, you know, what is and what isn't. You know, nobody wants to go eighty miles down the Interstate in a car with the tires that are going to pop off. Nobody, nobody. They don't want to get in a rocket to the moon that's going to blow up.

15.) And there was no excusing it. Not in a. And there's no excuse me with us for other people as well, you know, too, you know. Um, excuse it. You know, there's no reason to. There's no reason to kind of put the brakes on it either. But I guess I'm just talking to myself here now. But, you know, I mean, if I'm going to the moon, I'm going to make sure. I'm going to make sure that the purpose is done. I mean my main point is in memory of what we were trying to accomplish. We were trying to get from one point in space to another point in space and have that. In the black matter in our history to continue onward.

16.) So, it would be ridiculous to lose the foundation now.

17.) I mean, you know, not just the foundation but the entire history behind. You know, the history is everything when it comes to you know. Are going somewhere. I mean, if your history you were putting up you know your foundation for your house and suddenly a river came by and wiped it out.

18.) But that is the truth when it comes to. That's the that's the ultimate truth when it comes to. What mass is about. . . Because you think mass, you think it's heavy and it's heavy enough it's going to, it's going to be on the ground where we can build upon it and so. Um, you know.

19.) And it's and I know, and I've read Plato was a I got a letter about Plato about you know him just weighing everything down and. Maybe it was the red tape. And either mean, I'm not sure, but immediately I'm just become a hard ask man. I think, well, you know, we're just going to have to sit there for another three to four hundred years. You know?

Chapter 5



Extra Space Making Space

20.) Um, I heard all about it, you know. What was wanted and what they hated, and they hated being in a psychosis they didn't like. Uh, you know, things being fake that you know, one of the main reasons that there was that trap back there is because God's world would be real. It'd be profound. It would be glorified, and it looks like something that you would respect as a as kind of a silly spirit.

21.) You'd say wait a minute. I'm not supposed to mess with that, you know, and. So, so the idea, you know getting caught with produces that type of glory to you know to serve and love has that type of you know that children kind of innocence that you know.

22.) Creative power, you know that shines forth. So, you know, to keep that the flesh, the, the, the glorified planet, the, you know, the more real one where you know we we're left in liberty to do the right thing.

23.) You know, Um. Would be that kind of Plato's version of it because I mean depends on how you look at Plato for one thing, he knew that they could watch shadows on the wall that was one you know that that was a quick bam, thank you ma'am type of you know. Way to produce a TV. You know, not just a TV, but an entire world, right then. Because they didn't have to get up out of The Cave.

24.) So, you know, I mean. I guess you'd have to expect at this point that it was going to be a tough journey because you're not going to be sitting down and you're not going to be playing. You know some VR ping pong? Would you mind on The Cave wall through some light particle?

25.) You know to get the real, the more real effect is going to take some more. I mean I think the, I think the red tape was down when you know they were looking at the wall right then because you got the light particle get the sun and then get the earth and everything so. Um. And you know, I went back and forth about this stuff with, you know. Um.

26.) Somebody spurious about, you know, I mean, where is this stuff?

27.) I mean this stuff, you know, and, somehow, through some force, you know, I let go and they got to think about what it meant to be stuck in a mental hospital. Um and the, you know, they're still trying to get out of, I think of the idea that they could be held accountable.

28.) And so. You know there was not that it it takes some. AI training and a little bit of immune system. An immune response to uh to uh continues onward after such a mental hospital, you know. Psychology. Cool. Diagnosis of uh, some sort of mental illness.

29.) And the correction is never that fun of a thing, and it's contrary to everything that you know. That that Santos. But it's really one of the directions right now and it's probably the direction that that you're that your doctor's going to give you, but you know the direction would be. You know to a. Maybe even pass it on to another generation. To, to, to make plans. For another generation. To map it out how it goes without?

30.) Feeling the need to, you know, build your house now I I take, you know, take a portion. And start, uh, building that cityscape. Or you know that skyscraper. Or you know and even play in the world, but just to pass it on and speak. You know, let's make sure all the all the loose ends are fixed first. Because uh.

31.) Yeah, I mean that must be the one is to. To pass that on and. Um. You know. I you know, uh, what? What? Watch them do it. Um, you know, and we just keep, you know, making sure that. Everything secure enough that you know that it is part of like kind of sealed as part that it was never something that was not.

Empty space making space.



Everyday since the move, the day we moved into the old mansion on Holden Street, my dad spends hours a day in front of the television.

2. Some of our conversations:

3. “Dad, will you take us to the park?”

4. “I must keep up with the pandemic,” he will say—while his eyes are glued to the television.

5. “Che will you take this out to the shed?”

6. “Yes, but first let me catch up on the news.”

7. *It is as if he steps away from the television, the entire world will die—and leaves him wondering what happened to the rest of the world.*

8. “This could be it! This could be the end of mankind!” my dad says.

9. I quickly, from time to time will watch with him, and I will take a little from the news and notice—not all that much has changed; but still—despite that fact the “people on the news,” insists on everyone staying home.

10. Just the other day they threw up the red-flag; the red-flag means the severe possibility that this virus could wipe out all of mankind, including many of the animals.

11. I do not know if I really—in my heart of hearts believe that, but my dad seems too.

12. My Dad daily—must remove all doubt.

13. I do not know what I would say if one asked me, I have not been taught—how to respond, so I just laugh as he anxiously watches.

14. Steph must know something about what I am thinking, because most of the time if not always—she acts as if she understands what I do, whether around the house or at school. If I laugh at Dad, she will either punch me or give me a look like,

do not Jill, *which gives the environment a lack of seriousness involving my actions.*

15. Again, nobody taught me anything about this, I must be right, despite Steph treating me—*sometimes* as a bad person.

16. “Dad can Steph come over today?”

17. “Ask your mother?”

18. “Mom, Steph is coming over today.

19. “Okay Jill, but once she gets here wash her up and give her a change of clothes, I do not want you getting sick. If something is on her clothes or skin, it can spread to the rest of the house.”

20. “Huh?” *She sure is taking this sickness far!*

21. Doorbell rings.

22. I rush to the door expecting to see Jill in front of her Fathers car.

23. I quickly open the door, preparing my mouth to utter Steph....

24. “Tom?”

25. “What are you doing here?”

26. He tosses a bag down and says, “I must stay here, tell your parents I have nowhere else to stay,” Tom says.

27. “Wait a minute, what happened?” I express.

28. “My parents are in the hospital with an eighty percent chance of surviving the sickness,” Tom explains.

29. “The sickness, the pandemic sickness?”

30. “Yes,” Tom says.

31. Willing and anxious to help a friend in need—I say, “okay Tom, go into the bathroom, jump in the shower, do not touch anything but the shower handle, and wash that afterwards, please, thank you,” I say.

32. Tom begins to walk up the stairs.

33. “And Tom,” I say, “do not wear the same clothes you came here with, I will ask dad if you can wear some of his,” I say.

34. I rush into the kitchen—beyond the rooms to where the front door is, “Mom, Dad, umm.” I pause, “Tom's parents are dying of the sickness.”

35. “What?” dad asks.

36. “You mean....”

37. “Yes,” I say.

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

38. “I sent him up to take a shower, and dad, I told him you would give him some clean clothes.

39. “Okay” dad answers.

40. “So,” I pause for a moment, “can Tom have some of your clothes?”

41. “Of course, Jill, let us go get him some.”

42. As we make our way up the stairs, dad says, “he did not touch anything right?”

43. “I do not think so; I mentioned that to him.”

44. We walked into my dad’s huge Victorian-style bedroom; four windows—covered with dark brown curtains were creatively placed on the outer wall.

45. Dad swings open the double-folding-doors to his closet.

46. He begins picking out pieces of clothes and placing them in my arms.

47. “Dad? ...he does not need all of these, just one set; we will wash his—so that he can change back into them.”

48. Dad gives sort of an embarrassed smile.

49. Dad picks out what he wants to give, we walk down the hallway toward the bathroom—Tom was showering in. “Tom fresh clothes are out here in front of the door,” I yell—through the bathroom door.

50. “Okay!” I hear through the door—as we hear the water pouring into the tub.

51. “Jill is Steph still coming today?” dad asks.

52. “Yes, and she plans on a couple of days here; I told you about it,” I say, hoping he was not going to reconsider.

53. “Anyways, Dad, the pandemic and stuff...”

54. “That is fine Jill, actually I am thinking they should be over more often, because if society begins to collapse—we do not want to be alone,” dad says.

55. Relieved and feeling liberated we walk down the luxurious staircase—carpeted just enough to catch our feet from stepping onto the wood.

56. The doorbell rings.

57. “That is Jill!”

58. I open the door.

59. *Honk, Honk!* Steph’s dad sounds from within his car

and waves his hand at me.

60. I wave back.

61. “Steph! Good, you made it!”

62. “Tom is upstairs in the shower, let us wait and hang out for a moment—outside; Dad wants you to take a shower to get rid of any virus-type-stuff.”

63. I crack open the door—and peak inside, “Tom hurries up, Steph is here and needs the shower.”

64. “I am done,” Tom says—walking down the stairs.

65. We rush inside, glancing at Dad’s oversized clothes on Tom’s body, “those look good on you Tom,” I say—warming the environment.

66. I whisper to Steph, “Steph, try not to touch anything until you are super clean; I will get you clothes from my room.”

67. “Okay,” Steph says with a tiny bit of laughter in her voice.

68. I watch Steph close the oak wood bathroom door; small square designs are now facing me. *This sure is a rich house.*

69. I rush into my room.

70. I wonder... *what clothes would look best on Steph. Purple!*

71. I dug through some of the boxes—I purposely left—after the move, thinking I was saving space. I moved so quickly—the boxes will never look the same again.

72. I found a couple purple sets of clothes; Steph will look good in these, she will be so happy saying, *you are such a marvelous person, such a good friend!*

73. My type of delight!

74. “Steph,” I say behind the door leading to the bathroom, “I am coming in.”

75. I crack open the door, hot water steam pours out into the colder hallway.

76. I toss in the clothes—saying, “here are some of my best clothes.”

77. “Thanks—” I hear through the water splattering in the tub.

78. I close the door and make my way to find Tom. I needed to find out how bad his case was, were his parents dying?

79. I walk into the kitchen, Tom is sitting at the bar eating

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

cereal, cereal my mother must have given him.

80. “Now you are all cleaned up, I can give you a hug.” I say to Tom. I wrap my arms around him, “It is a good thing you did not get sick, because you would not be feeling this hug right now, nor would I be able to be close to you.”

81. “You are right Jill,” Tom says—looking over his shoulder, giving me a look of acceptance, a brave look of acceptance.

82. “What happened at home?” I ask—wondering what was happening on the outside world.

83. “I do not really know Jill,” Tom says—looking at my mother and then at my father, he pauses for a moment, and then says, “I do not really want to say this in front of your parents, because I do not want to make my parents look bad, but reality is not reality!”

84. “Go ahead Tom it is a strange time for everyone,” my dad insists.

85. “Well,” Tom rolls his eyes back, recalling the past few days, “my mom had been mentioning others disappearing for a while.”

86. “My dad insists that it was the people simply hiding out in their houses.”

87. “My mom never saw it that way, maybe it was the fever, but toward the end of her independence she started saying, “Frank, the people, they are all gone. I cannot find any of our friends,” she would say, crying and panicking.

88. “I could not spend much time with her, but she sure was—in other words, freaking out!”

89. Tom looked at my dad in hopes of comfort.

90. I almost thought Tom was going to cry as he looked my father in the eyes.

91. Tom then looked at me, put his head into his arms—resting on the table.

92. I could see curiosity in my dad’s eyes, as if he had a thousand questions, I knew he would not ask, mostly because the situation was sensitive. “It will be alright Tom,” dad says—burying all his desired questions deep within himself.

93. I hear Steph walking down the stairs; within moments she walks into the kitchen.

94. I look at Steph, I say, “Tom's mom said all the people on the entire planet have disappeared.”

95. “I did not say that Jill,” Tom says.

96. “What happened?” Steph asks.

97. “My mom cannot find the reality she knows was there. She said that she has not seen anyone in months, and she has searched.”

98. “She is close to being dead now” Tom explains.

99. “What about Frank?” Steph asks.

100. “Well,” Tom pauses, “he was put into the hospital when he broke into the neighbors!”

101. “The police tied him up—as he shouted, ‘they have all disappeared!’”

102. “Huh, weird,” I say and look at my dad, “you know Dad, I have not seen another person in almost a whole year.”

103. “Jill,” my mother says—keeping me under her authority, under her knowledge.

104. My dad adds, “Jill, I am almost sure the people are still out there, every day I turn on the news, and every day the people who are broadcasting the news are on there.

105. Steph says, “it could have been re-recorded.”

106. “That is what my parents were saying,” Tom says relieving himself.

107. “Okay kids, that is enough,” my mother says—attempting to change the subject.

108. We all sat quietly for a moment.

109. Steph blurts, “I have not seen anyone either.

110. My father quickly interrupts, “kids enough! why don't you go play.”

111. We begin to leave the kitchen table. My dad says, “and Tom you can use the spare bedroom next to ours, we just recently redid it.” my father says—making sure he himself could ignore us and go back to work.

112. “Okay, Mr. Flippy, will do!” Tom says.

113. We walk into the pool/gaming room; we sit down on a couch my father had placed in hopes of entertaining family and friends.

114. Tom sets his backpack on the floor, not noticing it could be tainted with the virus.

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

115. I at this point did not believe it, I only did if my parents told me too.

116. Tom unzips his backpack and pulls out a newspaper.

117. “Look here,” Tom says, “last week’s newspaper says two million were placed in the cemeteries—in the past five months; that is in the state of Massachusetts.”

118. “*All dead!*”

119. “What?” I grabbed the paper out of Tom’s hand.

120. “Twenty of the state’s cemeteries are now full to capacity,” I read out of the Wok Times.

121. “The weird part about that Jill, is everyone, still—has their televisions, lights, and radios on in their houses; it is like a cover up, but not a cover up. Only the educated people will know the truth!” Tom says—fearfully.

122. “I was not so sure my parents’ were sick,” Tom says with a little doubt in his voice, “but they were acting very strangely.” Tom turns his head and mumbles, “they broke into a couple of houses.”

123. “Your parents did?” Steph asks.

124. “Yes, they needed to check on why the supposed dead people—were still using their household stuff.”

125. “It could have just been because—the sickness moved so quickly, that the dead people appear to still be alive.” I add.

126. “Yes, it could be, but according to my mother, there, the dead’s cars were pulling in and out of these people’s garages,” Tom says.

127. Steph slides down into the couch, relaxing every muscle, “the whole sickness and pandemic is like that Tom.”

128. “Cars! Driving on their own,” Tom argues.

129. “Sickness and graves are supposed to not make us question,” Steph says.

130. “That is sort of covered up too Tom, maybe you are accidentally hitting who you are, maybe you are thinking too far out,” I say.

131. “You are right, I am here!”

132. “Plus, I could have stood up for my parents, I know that Jill,” Tom says defending himself.

133. Night approached, and we began to fall asleep on the

couch, the same couch we had been sitting on most of the day.

134. “Kids,” my dad says, “it is almost bedtime. Go clean up.”

135. “Dad can Tom and Jill, along with me spend this night in the closet,” I ask.

136. “Why do you want to spend the night in the closet,” my mother asks—as she walks into the room.

137. I look at the blue lit background of the fish tank as my mother walks by.

138. “So, we can comfort Tom,” I say.

139. Steph adds, “his parents are sick.”

140. “Okay, that will be fine,” my dad answers.

141. “Yes!”

142. I open the closet door in the hallway and pull out the clean blue and black sleeping bags—my mother stored, ready to be pulled out at any moment and used on the spot.

143. I handed one to Steph and then one to Tom.

144. We walk them back to my room.

145. We carefully place the sleeping bags on the closet floor, I walk toward my bed—to grab my comforter; on the way I notice the electrical outlet in the front of the closet.

146. *I will grab my night-light.*

147. I quickly grab both and bring them back to the closet.

148. I first plug in the blue night-light.

149. I lay down my comforter, my blanket.

150. Clothes hung above me.

151. Steph says, “it feels weird not have been in school for the past year.”

152. “Yes, it sure does, I almost feel like I am dead; it is like if I do not do something, anything—I will feel dead,” Tom adds.

153. To add into the conversation, I say, “my dad keeps acting funny, I do not notice school all that much, I just simply pretend I am on summer break; but I cannot help consider something horrible seeing my dad watch the news the way he does.”

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

Empty space making space 2

- I**n comforting ourselves into the night we fall asleep.
2. I woke up in the morning expecting to find Steph and Tom close by, in the same manner as we fell asleep.
 3. *Nothing!*
 4. *Only the closet!*
 5. I was so alarmed I did not notice the clothes hanging above us were gone.
 6. I pull back the comforter that hours before I placed in the closet.
 7. I put my feet on the cold wooden floor—as I stand up.
 8. I slowly walk to the entrance of the closet, being led by a strange light, an almost ancient light.
 9. As I get to the door entrance—I see dirt on the floor, along with some dried-up Maple leaves.
 10. “Steph?”
 11. “Tom?” I yell.
 12. I get to the door expecting to see my bed—across from the entrance of the door.
 13. I gasp.
 14. I could not believe my eyes.
 15. A forest!
 16. A strange forest lit by some strange light.
 17. *What an odd forest!*
 18. I begin to walk out, I pause.
 19. *What could be out there?*
 20. The forest almost seemed as if it were on the inside of some sort of dome, but it could not be, I could see blue sky above the tree line.
 21. The air was soft and warm. *I think I was somewhere rather than not.*
 22. I will walk out.
 23. Dead leaves crumbled under my feet.
 24. I do not hear anyone.
 25. I walk about ten feet to the right—of the closet door, only to notice none of the rest of the house is there, just half of my bedroom, and most of my closet.
 26. As I got to the edge of the room the forest abruptly

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

stopped, I could see a field; a field that sloped downward.

27. I sure would love to run down that hill. The environment made me feel as if I could play here for an exceptionally long time.

28. “Tom, Steph, are you here?” I yell into the surrounding environment. I was hoping I would hear them, I wanted someone else to share this experience with.

29. No answer, nothing, but the sound of a windless environment, no air, only the indoor atmosphere of a huge building.

30. I walk to what once was the front of our house, small bushes sit in the front wall of my bedroom—where there was the hallway.

31. I look to my left.

32. Apple trees, or at least I think they are apple trees.

33. I walk towards them.

34. Big red juicy apples hung from the tree.

35. Vines of tomato plants grow beneath them.

36. I picked an apple.

37. I put it to my mouth and attempt to take a bite—when I am startled by a sound.

38. I listen.

39. It sounds like something in the bushes.

40. It sounds like it is struggling or being stressed to move.

41. I walk over to this sound that speaks of a fearful, and twisted, yet wild atmosphere.

42. *What could it be?*

43. I crouch down and begin to move the tomato vines.

44. I look straight ahead in the vines, a small nest, a compacted area.

45. I saw a small critter.

46. I feel as if it is poisoning me—with the sound it is making; I cannot look away; I cannot stop listening.

47. Once the sound reaches the core of my being, it asks if it can *keep me*.

48. “No, no” I say out loud and stumble backwards. I scramble to my feet and run toward the closet.

49. I look to my left—noticing the giant hole—straight

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

through the left side of my bedroom.

50. I ran into the closet.

51. I shut the door behind me.

52. I quickly make my way toward the back of the closet;

I take my comforter with me.

53. I cover myself, hoping nothing finds me.

54. “No! No!” I utter.

55. Fearing I will never find my home again, I shut my eyes.

56. I suddenly heard a voice; I heard Tom's voice.

57. I wonder if that is Tom or someone pretending to be

Tom.

58. *I will risk it;* I pull back my comforter—covering my face.

59. “Jill?”

60. “Jill? What is wrong?” Tom says—hovering over my face.

61. “Tom!” I yell—relieved.

62. “What is wrong Jill?” I hear Steph say toward the front of the closet.

63. They appear to not have known.

64. Moments ago, the entire bedroom was missing, leaves covering the floor to the entrance—to the closet; now all looks the same as when I laid my head down.

65. “Jill are you all right, are you okay?” Tom asks, giving me a look of protection.

66. “Hmm,” I did not know what to say. First, I must assure myself that this closet is the same closet as before.

67. I jump out of my blankets, rush toward my bedroom, and examine the room, the hallway, and several other rooms—before going back to the closet, to Steph and Tom.

68. “I do not know how to tell you both this, but just minutes ago I was...”

69. I stumble in my words, I cannot explain what I just saw, so I said, “I was in a different world.”

70. “Were you dreaming?” Tom asks.

71. “Dreams can be like that,” Steph adds.

72. “Hmm, no and yes. But I am sure it was a whole

different world” I say.

73. They both gave me a strange look, comforting, welcoming me back into my room.

74. We stood there for a moment. Steph says, “I am hungry,” while tapping me on the shoulder.

75. Right then I knew it—was an isolated experience; I must pretend it never happened.

76. “*Yes, I am hungry too, let's go get something to eat,*” I say.

77. “My mother just bought a whole month’ worth of this cinnamon, like—bread stick; if we pop them into the microwave, they get soft, like a pancake. They are so good!”

78. Once we got down the stairs and into the kitchen, we began to ready ourselves for the day.

79. As the food was warming, Steph says, “so, Jill you were mentioning something upstairs about getting lost in a closet.”

80. “Yes exactly.”

81. “*Lost!*”

82. “Good thing I found my way back.”

83. “How did you do that?” Tom asks.

84. “I was running from a monster or something and hid under my covers.”

Chapter 6



Lost in a Closet

Lost in a closet.



Days went by and both Steph and Tom stayed at my house. After three weeks of Tom and Steph staying at my house—Tom's parents died, and Steph's parents got sick. According to my father the sickness has reached a level of severity. He will not let us leave the house unless it is in the backyard.

2. Steph, Tom, Frog, Sally, and I pass the days through playing; we do mention the truth to one another, because we will not believe Tom and Steph's parents have abandoned them.

3. Over the past few weeks, ignoring the present reality both Tom and Steph—sort of lost touch with reality.

4. I did not need to ignore the truth, because—in my world everything was about the same except—my dad and I, do not spend as much time together; he is usually watching the news.

5. My mom does not act the way she did just a year ago. She is constantly cleaning the house, continuously wiping everything down.

6. My dad will not open the windows in fear the virus could be in the air.

7. My parents told both—Steph and Tom, that they could permanently move in—due to their parents' hardships, that they would over the years buy them new material possessions.

8. My dad already promised Tom, and they both decided for Tom to stay with us until he is eighteen.

9. Not long after Steph's parents also passed, leaving Steph with the same clothes she had on the last time her father dropped her off.

10. My mother and father did the same thing with her as they did with Tom, they agreed to let her live in our mansion until she was eighteen, promising to buy her all-new material things.

11. Our family grew, now my parents appeared to have five children: Frog, Sally, Steph, Tom, and me.

12. Because the situation was so odd, and because the schools were permanently closed—the five of us stuck together, playing all day long.

13. My dad and mom rarely noticed us, they were so tied up in civilization ending, that they could not focus on the structured system that was handed to them, so they let us do whatever we wanted.

14. “What to do today?” Tom says—as us children gathered in the kitchen; most of the time in the morning we would happen to get up at the same time.

15. I began to think of stuff we could do as I poured myself a big bowl of cereal.

16. “The tree forts have not seen us for a while,” I say.

17. “It is cold out Jill, it is November,” Steph adds.

18. Maybe we should add more to them, so that they are warm on the inside.

19. “How are we going to do that?” I ask.

20. Tom did not have the answer and gives an idea, “Leaves! What if we insulate them with leaves?”

21. Steph says, “if we use leaves, we will not be sure if another critter is in there with us.”

22. “True,” Tom says.

23. “Maybe I could run over to my parents’ house and grab some of their stuff—like insulation,” Tom says.

24. “That might be a good idea Tom,” I say.

25. “It is only a fifteen-minute walk,” Tom says.

26. “If you grab their stuff, how are you going to carry it all back?” Steph asks.

27. “Well,” Tom pauses a moment—figuring out the rest of the plan, “we do not need all that much stuff: a box of heavy-duty plastic, some foam, insulation,” Tom pauses again.

28. “You two, plus Frog and Sally will have to go over with me.”

29. I say, “my parents are not going to let us go.”

30. “If we do not bring Frog or Sally—we simply do not tell them,” Tom answered.

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

31. “If we are going, we better go now, mom and dad are usually off doing their thing right around this time. We most likely have a couple of hours before they figure it out—we are gone” I say.

32. Steph adds, “That gives us about one hour.”

33. We scramble to dress and quietly make our way out the back door, mentioning to Frog and Sally we would be at our tree-forts, hoping they would not come looking for us; most likely they will not, they are slow to wake up in the morning.

34. We dart in the woods, by taking the woods the neighbors will not see us—I directed.

35. Within fifteen minutes we reached Tom's house.

36. Surprisingly, we find his garage doors open, Tom mentioned beforehand they were closed.

37. We sneak into the garage, once inside Tom directs us to listen to the happenings of the inside of his house.

38. The television was still on, and it sounded like someone was in there.

39. “Tom,” I whisper, “it sounds like your parents are in there.”

40. We ignore the sounds, Tom rushes to gather the supplies.

41. I walk over to the window in the door separating the garage from the living room.

42. I peak inside.

43. To my surprise I see the electronics being moved as if someone was using them.

44. “Tom!” I whisper.

45. Surprisingly, the vacuum turns on inside the house.

46. “Jill, grab some of this stuff we need to get out of here.

47. I rush over and grab the box of plastic.

48. Tom grabs the insulation; Steph grabs a giant staple gun and a tub of nails.

49. We rushed out back into the forest.

50. “That was odd,” Steph begin saying, “the television was still on, I could almost feel your parents still living there.”

51. “Steph the strange part is, this does not look the same,” Tom says.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

52. “What?”

53. “The forest I cannot remember the forest! The plants do not look the same.”

54. “It is too dark out here to tell,” I answer.

55. “But it is not for me, I always come back here, because the gas station is just over that hill; but where are the lights to the store?”

56. “We must go back! I am serious... Jill this is not the same forest.”

57. “Okay, but we have to hurry, my parents will notice we are missing anytime now,” I answer.

58. We rush back to Tom's house; once we reach his back yard—dimly lit by his kitchen light—we hear a sound in the forest, the same sound I heard when I was in the tomato patches.

59. I look at Tom, “that is the sound I heard the other night...the other night when we were in the closet, when I told you I was translated into another world.

60. Steph begins to move toward the sound—being drawn to it.

61. “Steph do not go toward the sound,” I say.

62. Steph ignores me.

63. “Grab Steph we will run into my house,” Tom says.

64. I grabbed Steph by the arm and pulled her in the same direction Tom began running in.

65. Steph comes to her senses—following Tom and me.

66. We rush into the garage; Tom begins to shut the door.

67. We stop making noises and listen in silence.

68. Steph looks to the right, out a window, looks back at me and begins tapping on my shoulder. I look toward where she is pointing.

69. I gasped.

70. A lady is at the window. *Who could it be?*

71. I know it is the lady from the photo I found.

72. She places both hands on the window—making a bang sound against the glass.

73. We scream, we run; Tom bursts through the door leading from the garage to his parents' living room.

74. He slams shut the door behind us.

75. Tom says, “follow me” as he leads us toward his

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

bedroom.

76. We got to his room. I shut the door as Tom makes his way to his heavy dresser.

77. “Steph help me move this against the door—” Tom says pointing toward the dresser.

78. Steph rushes to the dresser. Together they both slowly walk the dresser to the front of the bedroom door.

79. Tom pushes it face down in front of his bedroom door. He then rushes to his freshly made bed and picks it up; blankets and bed sheets fall off—as he places it against his one and only bedroom window.

80. Tom sits down catching his breath.

81. Steph and I do likewise.

82. Within five minutes we hear the living room entrance door open, soft gentle footsteps gracefully walk up the stairs—leading to Tom's bedroom.

83. Soft singing and soft words could be heard, words that chilled us to the core of our being. It was as if I could remember her tormenting us, but I cannot pin-point to when.

84. Quietly we sat—crouched down in Tom's bedroom.

85. Small taps on the bedroom door. A small whisper comes through the door, “let me in kids, I want to make friends.”

86. *Tap! Tap!* on the bedroom door.

87. A baby begins to laugh out in the darkness of the hallway.

88. Chills run up my spine, my heart freezes in my chest.

89. “If you do not want to open the door for me, open the door for the baby. “Tommy your parents are out here; they would want you to come out and protect their house.”

90. “*Leave lady, Leave!*” Tom commands.

91. “You kids are not supposed to be here,” the woman replies.

92. “Come out here and maybe I can spare you the trouble,” the woman outside of the bedroom door says.

93. “*This place looks real, does it not Jill?*”

94. “Open your eyes, I bet you do not know how much control I have over you” the strange-sounding lady says.

95. I sat thinking about her words for a moment. I look at Tom and say, “we are dreaming, we are still in the closet.”

96. I reach over and grab Tom by the shoulder, as I reach over—my body within the closet—at my parents’ house, my arm is doing the same thing. Now being in two places at once Tom, Steph, and I both awake in the closet, letting go of the world we were just in.

97. “Steph,” I say.

98. She quickly picks her head up from the blanket that was covering it.

99. “You two were there?” I ask.

100. “Yes, Jill, I could have almost guaranteed that place existed.

101. “We never awoke,” Steph adds.

102. “I am hungry let’s go get something to eat,” I say.

103. We rush into the kitchen in the same fashion we did just hours prior—before we thought we walked to Tom’s house.

104. We begin preparing the same food as we had thought we had eaten.

105. “Tom do you still want to go over to your parents’ house—to get material for the tree forts?” I ask—sort of joking.

106. “Yes, sure, that is if the strange lady is not over there,” Tom says—as we begin laughing.

107. “Steph, you do remember?” I ask.

108. “Yes, ah” she pauses for a moment, “that was not a dream. You had mentioned something in the dream, that is if you were dreaming—about going to a strange world,” Steph says cautiously.

109. “Well, I do not want to get so deep that we believe it,” I pause and whisper, “we could be there right now!”

110. Steph says, “I am still carious about the people living, but not living in their houses, we should get our mind off of this house and spy on the neighbors.”

111. “Good idea! Tom says, “I need to know what killed my parents or if they are even dead, what if it is all a lie!”

112. “My parents said something about a huge cover-up,” Tom says anticipating the biggest reveal of his life.

113. “But what if we get caught?” I ask.

114. “We already are caught if you think hard about last night,” Tom says.

115. “True Jill, that was not normal, everybody taught me

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

that-type-thing does not happen,” Steph says—pointing up toward my closet.

116. “So, we will explore, same idea—” I said, “as in the dream. My parents are busy, but we have a couple of hours to pretend we are working on our tree forts.” I express.

117. “Do not tell Frog or Sally.”

118. We quickly got something to eat and told my mom we were going to play out by the tree fort. We rushed out the back door.

119. We take the back way into the woods and begin to spy on other properties.

120. The first window we peak in to, lights were on, and food was prepared, but no people. Something appeared to be happening with the second and third house we arrived at.

121. I want to rush over to my parents’ house,” Tom explains.

122. “We are going with you,” Steph says.

123. We quickly run through the woods and arrive at Tom’s parents’ house.

124. Tom had the key, so we went inside.

125. Everything about the house was so strange, televisions, radios, and lights were still on. Fresh food was prepared on the table.

126. “This is strange,” Tom says.

127. “Let’s grab some stuff for our tree forts, just so if we get caught, we appear to have another reason.”

128. We rush into the garage and grab the same items we grabbed the first time.

129. “Funny,” I say, “the items are in the same spot as they were the first time—we came over here.”

130. “Yes, that is strange,” Tom adds.

131. We rush into the woods—hoping we would find the same woods; the woods Tom remembers.

132. We ran through the woods never saying a word to one another.

133. We arrive at the back of my house, next to our tree forts.

134. We place the items on the ground.

135. “We made it,” Tom says—full of relief.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

136. “I will go get Frog and Sally, they would love to make more of our tree-forts, our winter tree-forts,” I say.

137. Frog and Sally both came rushing into the backyard forest.

138. I could see Mom was up, she bundled both children up in heavy duty winter gear: ski pants, boots, and a heavy jacket.

139. “What are we doing?” Sally asks—looking up at my face.

140. “We want to make the tree-forts weatherized, so we can play in them in the winter, once it starts snowing,” I answer.

141. As Frog is climbing up the ladder, with a sense of leadership he says, “hand me up the plastic.

142. We spent the rest of the day at the forts, Steph, Tom, and I did not say anything to one another about the dream last night; we were hoping not to wake up while playing with Frog and Sally.

143. Glad to enter my warm house after a day in the cold. I take off my winter jacket, excited to run up to my room; I had much daily to do in my room, writing, coloring, dressing my dolls and now talking with Steph and Tom.

144. As I enter my room, I turn around expecting to find Tom and Steph, but instead Frog and Sally come rushing into the room.

145. “Can we hang out in your room tonight,” they both ask.

146. Shortly after, Tom and Steph enter the room.

147. I look at Frog and then at Sally, “yes, sure, you both can hang out with us tonight.”

148. I began to think, *I wanted the moment to talk to Steph and Tom about our experience in the closet*; I wonder if Frog or Sally have had any strange occurrences.

149. “Frog,” I begin saying, “do you remember the day we were in our father’s library, and you mentioned something about a lady who climbs up your window at night?”

150. “Yes,” Frog says, “she usually wants me to let her in. The other night I almost did!”

151. “What happened?” Steph asks.

152. “Well, she jumped or flew off the window as I began

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

to open it. I suppose she had other business she had to attend to.”

153. “But” Frog adds, “she said something stranger than the previous nights, that she was a friend.”

154. “That is why I began to open the window, because I was no longer scared of her.”

155. Sally mentions, “if that is the same lady, she sure is scary; over the past couple of weeks, I have seen her out my window; I did not want to tell anyone this—because confessing her makes me feel stupid.”

156. “What does she do out there?” Steph asks.

157. “She walks around the back yard, scaring me. Her face is white, white! And her eyes are black as nothing—that is the scariest part, her eyes!”

158. “I always hope when I look at her, she does not notice me—to look back at me with those eyes, black eyes stuck inside of her white, white face!”

159. “She eats causing me fear, sometimes she makes sounds without making sounds,” Sally says—crouching down—stabilizing her mind.

160. “She is a very scary lady,” Frog adds.

161. “Sally, can you take us to your room and show us where you see her?” Steph asks.

162. Sally gets up off the floor and leads us into her room.

163. Three rooms down and Sally points into her room, toward the back window.

164. Steph leads the way over, “I do not see anyone over there right now,” Steph says.

165. Steph turns around to face Sally, suddenly I gasp, I point my finger out, outside the window, “Steph look!”

166. Steph comfortably turns around, “Oh my goodness” Steph says—with horror in her voice.

167. “There is a woman out there!”

168. Steph was too scared to look—she turned her head; my eyes were fixed on her.

169. “That is the lady in the photo,” I say—as I begin hearing the soft music in the wind, as I watched her hair blowing with the sound.

170. She appears as if she is welcoming me to her private world, a lovely world. I wish I could live with her.

171. Steph and Sally begin screaming.

172. “Hey, you too, why are you screaming?” I ask.

173. Frog is pulled toward the window, “she appears the way she did the other night, she is being nice to us.” Frog says.

174. The girls calm down.

175. Tom looks and says, “maybe she is one of your neighbors, although it does look like the lady that was in my house the other night.”

176. “Do you all want to go out?” I ask.

177. “No!” Sally says.

178. “I am going out,” I say.

179. “I will go out with you Jill,” Frog says.

180. “Yes, I will too!” Tom says.

181. We in a rush got down the stairs—hoping that she would not leave.

182. Frog and Sally stayed by the back door, leaving the door open.

183. “Hello,” I say to the lady. She does not look at us, she just stands there with her head down.

184. “Hi, do you live around here?” Tom asks.

185. “Maybe we should not bother her,” Frog says—changing his mind—about going to meet her.

186. “My younger brother says that you occasionally come out here and look into his bedroom window,” I say.

187. The lady looks up. Black, dark eyes investigate mine. Her dark, black hair described her hidden world of a great being, like that of a king or a queen, a ruler of many.

188. “If you do not make it any less wonderful out here...you just might get lost out here,” the lady says, “but you cannot stay here!” the lady says, giving a girlish giggle.

189. I could not take my eyes off her, I was in love; her entire environment was all that I could think I was living for, but I feared it was a worm on a hook or peanut butter on a mouse trap.

190. Overtaken by the atmosphere, I say, “well I will, I will come back, I will tie a rope around me, so I do not get lost and gonzo will not eat me.

191. “You mean Clutter, that critter will not eat you, he eats tomatoes,” the lady says. “Darling a rope is out here; it is in

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

the buried trash. If you and your friends come out, and you get lost, follow the trash home,” the dark eyed lady adds.

192. “Okay, nice meeting you,” I say—still entranced by the atmosphere around her and began walking toward the back door.

193. “See that Frog she seems like a nice lady,” I say walking toward the back door.

194. “Who was it,” Steph asks standing in the entrance of the door.

195. “Good question Steph, good question” I say.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

Chapter 7



Clutter/Buried Trash

*Hollan
2011*

Clutter/Buried Trash?



Frog, Sally, come-on it is spring, you two are always anxious to go outside in spring.” Frog and Sally refuse to go outside after the end of last fall’s encounter with the black-eyed lady; they say she continues to laugh at them in the night, saying, “I will eat you; it is only a matter of time before you come out here, and I will eat you; and Clutter will burn down your house.

2. Steph nor Tom believes her.

3. Steph mentioned to me she felt fine with the lady with black eyes. Tom liked her too, he said, “I wonder if she is looking for a husband, because I would make a great man for her.”

4. My feelings toward the lady, I loved the lady, I looked out my windows several times in hopes she was out there, but I never saw her.

5. I will not forsake Frog or Sally, so I invite them.

6. On the day I got them to go outside with me, I was in my father’s library, and I was looking at a book, the same book Steph and I were looking at last fall, the one with the newspaper article on the inside.

7. According to the book, in an article written by Corin Stewa, the family who lived here—in this mansion—long ago was fined for throwing much garbage into the woods out back of the house.

8. According to the article trash could be found miles into the woods.

9. I suddenly remember the black-eyed lady mentioning, “if we got lost out there—to follow the trash home.”

10. “I must tell that to Frog and Sally, I must tell them there is nothing to fear, if we get lost out there, we will follow the trash home.”

11. I will have to mention this article to them.
12. *Knock! Knock!*
13. I open the door to Frog's bedroom. I see both him and Sally sitting on the floor with many toys scattered around them.
14. "You two," I say holding up the book article.
15. "We should go outside and explore the woods."
16. "According to this article—there is a ton of trash back there in the forest, who knows what we could find."
17. "Plus, if we get lost, if we get lost, we simply follow the trash home," I say.
18. "I do not know Jill, what if there are bears out there?" Frog asks.
19. "I want to go out" Sally says.
20. "Come-on Frog," I say.
21. "Okay," Frog says, getting up.
22. He walks over to a chest and begins pulling out clean clothes.
23. "Sally, make ready, meet me downstairs in the kitchen by the back door," I say.
24. I open the back door, spring air blasts me in the face. I take a deep breath, taking in all that spring has to offer dead grass, leaves that have been disposed of—after soaking up last summer's sunlight, and all the mud in the back yard.
25. I stand in the kitchen in between the kitchen and the backyard—in between the door leading to the backyard.
26. Within five minutes Frog and Sally rush into the kitchen, "where is Steph and Tom?" Frog asks.
27. "Steph, Tom we are about to go outside are you coming?" I yell into the living room.
28. They both—at the same time get off the living room couch and walk into the kitchen.
29. "So, what are we going to do out there?" Tom asks.
30. "We are going trash digging," I answer.
31. Steph adds, "my dad at one point had me follow him into the woods to dig trash, he said some of the trash is worth thousands—this day and age."
32. "So, you have done something like this before?" I ask.
33. "Yes, a lot of the people did on my street, they would call it digging."

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

34. They were kind of like archaeologists.

35. “What I remember was a good time, like a treasure hunt, always anticipating a great find with each layer of dirt removed,” Steph answers.

36. “Actually, I did not think hard about this,” I say running over to the cupboard—grabbing a plastic bag and a small garden shovel.

37. “Okay now we are ready,” I say.

38. We walk off into the woods keeping an eye out for any wildlife or dangers we may find, especially the lady with black eyes.

39. “I hope we do not get lost here,” Sally says.

40. “I do not see any trash” I mention.

41. “It probably is miles down that way,” Frog says pointing into the deep forest.

42. “Right, but think about it, who would carry their trash all the way down there—if they could leave it right here,” Steph says.

43. “I am going to try digging right here,” I mention.

44. “Hold on a second there is a dirt hill to our left; whenever my parents brought me digging, we always dug on the side of a bank,” Steph says.

45. “Most likely true Jill, it is common for people to throw their trash over a bank rather than on the flat ground; that way when they come walking through—they will not walk on the trash,” Tom says.

46. “Okay, let us walk over to the bank and there we will dig,” I answer.

47. We carefully walk over to the bank.

48. I peak over.

49. “Wow, there is a ton of stuff back here, glass, old toys, pottery and tires,” I say.

50. Tom adds, “there must be one hundred tires—” pointing to one tire, then another.

51. Steph grabs the small garden shovel out of my hand, “I will show you what my parents showed me.”

52. Steph crouches down slightly standing at the beginning of the slope.

53. She begins to move dirt with the shovel.

54. As she does, she says, “all you need to do is gently remove the dirt, we do not want to break anything below it, so we must carefully remove the top layer of dirt.”

55. “My mom said, certain items that can be found are worth thousands, like an old glass maple jar—with the log cabin on top, that one could be worth two thousand dollars,” Steph says.

56. I crouch down beside Steph, noticing worms with each shovel of dirt, old pottery pieces are all about—rolling down the hill as the dirt is removed.

57. Tom walks over to our left and pulls out of the ground a glass jar; no lid is on the top.

58. “Wow, this one sparkles in the light,” Tom says.

59. I picked my head up to see if the lady with black eyes could be seen, but I saw nothing.

60. Suddenly I felt a load of daily pressures fall off my back as we began to play in the forest, I began to lose my sense of time.

61. We dug and dug.

62. Without noticing and not wanting to notice time—we begin to dream of lasting days.

63. “These items are so nice, we should make a pretend store,” Tom says.

64. “We can do a house too” I mention.

65. As I began collecting stuff for our pretend house. Steph says, “let me pretend to be your husband.”

66. I forgot all about time, I sort of lost my mind and I intended too!

67. I could sense something in the woods, perhaps it was the colors in the sky or maybe it was the ancient trash, something out there inspired me to lose my living behavior.

68. It must have been years out back behind our house. I built an almost fortress with furnishings.

69. I collected an old sink, a couch, pots, and old blankets.

70. As Steph and I are playing married, a lady shows up in the window of our stick house. She says, “you two make a good couple, that must mean I will not be taking either of the two of you home today.”

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

71. Steph and I were over excited to see her and began to flirt.

72. “The woods around here are more, I have been living in them for hundreds of years,” the lady with black eyes says.

73. Frog, amazed, comfortably walks into our little house in the forest. Frog had done the same thing as us, losing his sense of time.

74. “Hi,” Frog says to the lady.

75. “Hi,” the lady says back, “good to see you children out here, and remember if you get lost out here, simply follow the trash home.”

76. “Okay,” we say, but we did not understand what she meant, we were having so much fun.

77. “Did you notice something about the trash Jill?” Frog asks.

78. Sally walks into the little house.

79. I say, “I did notice something, that I am having an extremely fun time.”

80. “That is because of the trash,” Frog says.

81. I think about it for a moment, noticing the lady with black eyes had moved away from the window and could no longer be found.

82. We sure have been out here for a long time; I cannot remember a time in my life that I had so much fun.

83. I began to fear I would never return home.

84. *What could be doing this?*

85. I think hard.

86. I began to think about Frog’s words, ‘it is because of the trash.’

87. Maybe you are right Frog, “maybe the trash is giving us an extremely fun time.”

88. I begin to express my concern to the others.

89. “We must get home,” I say, “this is not normal.”

90. Steph agrees.

91. “How are we going to get home?” Steph asks.

92. “The lady said to ‘follow the trash home’ I answer.

93. Steph looks up and begins to think.

94. Tom interrupts—knowing he is somehow different, “huh, um, maybe we should have been home now.”

95. Steph looks at Tom and barks, “Tom I know what I am doing, I do not use drugs.”

96. “I do not either,” Tom argues.

97. I say, “this is not all that bizarre, times have changed.”

98. “I did not mention that you do drugs, I mentioned I do not do drugs,” Steph says—looking at Tom.

99. “Come-on Steph, I do not do drugs either.”

100. Tom begins to act different, paranoid—as if he were separated.

101. As Steph began to talk of drugs—Tom began to appear as if he did, so much so, I could not help but treat him as a recovering drug addict.

102. “What were we to do again?” Steph asks—looking at me.

103. “Maybe we are supposed to go home,” I answer.

104. I fail to think, I sit down on the leave covered forest floor.

105. Steph began to talk to Tom again, but she was not treating him as normal.

106. Days went by, and we failed to think about how we were going to get home.

107. I pretend to marry Steph, and Frog pretends to marry us, and Tom, well he appeared to be different all together.

108. We would involuntarily talk to Tom as a different entity.

109. We watched him fit in with this creature we made of him and through that creature he attempted to explain that he was inhabiting the strange life like force.

110. “Jill, Steph it is Tom, I am stuck inside of a wart or something,” Tom says.

111. “Okay Tom, sure,” Steph replies.

112. “Do not treat me like that,” Tom argues.

113. “You are absolutely on drugs,” Steph says.

114. “I do not have the thing that helps me think at the moment,” Tom answers.

115. “You are a wart?” I question.

116. “I am not a wart, I am attached to the growing thought-wart that is esteeming badly,” Tom says.

117. “So, you are a thought wart?” I ask.

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

118. “I have to pretend that I am what Steph esteemed me to be.”

119. “Which is on drugs?” Steph says.

120. Steph picks up a small branch and throws it at Tom’s head.

121. “Stop Steph,” Tom cries.

122. I started realizing I was partially asleep, that we all were acting out of character.

123. “Steph,” I yell.

124. “Tom does not know,” I said laughing at Tom.

125. Tom explains, “this is not me; I am only pretending to be what you made me out to be.”

126. “Okay,” sure Tom.

127. Frog could tell something was drastically different and knew he had to act fast.

128. He crouches down next to Sally and says, “follow me.”

129. “I am going home,” Frog yells, “we will get lost out here.”

130. I panic, “come-on you two, we must follow them.

131. We run off into the woods yelling, “stop you two, wait for us.”

132. After thirty minutes of chasing them we caught up to them and came to realize we were totally lost in the forest.

133. “What are you two doing?” I yell.

134. “We got to get home,” Frog says.

135. Sally adds, “our parents must be worried about us.”

136. “Plus, Tom seems to be having a problem,” Frog adds.

137. I began thinking about how deep we are in the forest and how my mind is far away from my known reality.

138. “Like I said Jill, I am just pretending to be this thing you are making me out to be,” Tom says.

139. I knew I should not respond; I must think, *how are we going to get home?*

140. I look at Frog.

141. Frog looks at me and at the same moment we say, “we follow the trash home.”

142. “I know what to do, this began when we started moving the trash around,” I say.

143. “So, the trash is moving us around,” Steph says.

144. “Maybe the trash can speak, but not in our language,” Sally adds.

145. Tom says, “well it does have a shine to it, possibly saying something about this distant past.”

146. “What if we take our recently make-believe house and store—and listen to the trash; what if we place it where it appears to belong?” I question.

147. Good idea.

148. We rush back to the spot we had spent several months at and began to rearrange the objects we pulled out of the dirt.

149. “This looks like a jar that belongs in the bushes,” Tom says—picking up a glorious jar.

150. “This jar, is beautiful,” I say pulling it out of Tom’s hand, I have never seen anything like this before.”

151. “It almost says plant me in a plant pot,” Tom adds.

152. Tom digs up some dirt and places it in the jar; he gently digs up a small berry plant and places it in the jar, he begins to carefully add water to the recently planted berry plant.

153. He gently places the berry plant on the counter of our wood and stick pretend store.

154. “It looks like the jar is saying, I am the mystery,” Steph says.

155. “So true,” I add.

156. “Well, if this is the beginnings of the mystery, we should try some more objects and finish it.

157. Without eating or sleeping we dig.

158. We found plates, jars, stoves, car parts, and precious objects.

159. Thousands of pieces we pull out of the ground, we gaze at them.

160. “I would never want to leave these objects,” Tom yells.

161. They were stunning and marvelous.

162. “What are they saying,” I ask.

163. “Answers”

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

164. *“A Store”*

165. *“A toy factory”*

166. *“Our stuff”*

167. I wait, pause, and say, “objects that belong to us, something given to us, something we use to imagine life.”

168. Steph yells, “exactly, it says we make the laws to our surroundings.

169. At that moment we woke up in Frog’s closet, to the board game Frog and Sally had been playing before we decided to explore the forest.

170. I look around Frog’s closet and attempt to question the others.

171. “That was so weird,” Frog says—picking up the board game.

172. Sally follows him.

173. The moment was awkward, so I said, “well we did not get lost!”

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

Chapter 8



Clutter must be stopped

Clutter must be stopped.



Jill what do you think happened a week ago—when we played in the forest for months?” Frog asks. I look toward him sitting across from me.

2. Steph to my left, sitting on the couch with me, begins to say, “Frog...” but forgot what she was going to say.

3. I expected that answer from Steph because I did not have an answer myself.

4. In the moment of Steph’s pause I glance over at the television.

5. “4G cellphone networks are completely covering the Country,” the man representing a wireless network says.

6. “Is there anything we should be worried about?” the host of the show asks.

7. “4G can send frequencies above 24 GHz, the advertiser says.

8. The host gives him a serious look, many questions expressed on her face.

9. “24GHz can expose—if directed at a particular individual—to such radiation that the heat of the radiation could cause blood and tissue loss,” the person representing the wireless network says.

10. I look toward Steph, “this is it!”

11. “What?” Steph asks.

12. “4G networks,” I answer.

13. “You mean to answer Frog?” Steph asks.

14. “Yes, Frog maybe it is 4G.”

15. “4G can cause blood loss and due to our blood loss, we hallucinated the whole forest journey,” I answer.

16. “Maybe,” Frog responds.

17. “Jill, if it was due to blood loss, how could we all have hallucinated the same thing?” Steph asks.

18. I consider the question for a moment.
19. "I do not know I answer."
20. We put our faces down towards the floor.
21. I say, "I wonder what that forest journey was about."
22. "I am going up to Frog's closet," Steph says raising herself up off the couch.
23. Frog and I follow.

24. Steph quietly walks into Frog's closet tapping on the walls as she completely walks in.
 25. I tap on a couple walls myself.
 26. Everything looks normal in this room," Steph says.
 27. "I need answers," Frog says.
 28. "Where is Sally?" I add.
 29. "She is in the tub," Frog says.
 30. "She said that things get tossed out of her closet, maybe we should go over there and investigate."
 31. Frog leads the way.
 32. Walking into Sally's room I glance over at her tiny bed, wrapped in a bright pink blanket, a small white child's desk was to the right.
 33. Frog peaks into the closet.
 34. I do not see anything odd or out of place.
 35. I peak over Frog's shoulder, "okay" I answer.
 36. We slowly walk away from the closet.
 37. Steph says, "where is the clutter? that closet is the same closet that clutter was thrown everywhere—years ago when we disobeyed and came over here against your parents' will."
 38. "Jill, Steph," I hear Tom say.
 39. "In here, in Sally's room," Steph answers.
 40. As Tom enters Sally's bedroom, I hear that sound that was in the tomato patches.
 41. Suddenly, without warning some of Sally's possessions were thrown out of the closet.
 42. Balled up in a pile of clothes, in Sally's closet was what appeared to be a creature.
 43. *Grunt!*
 44. *Grunt!*
 45. "Oh, my goodness," Steph says.

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

46. "This is our chance; this is our chance to figure out why these strange things are happening."

47. "Who are you?" I yell across the room, into the closet.

48. *Rumble!*

49. *Grunt!*

50. "I am Steph," Steph yells toward the creature.

51. "*Grunt, Grunt, Yes,*" the creature says within the closet, under a pile of clothes.

52. Slowly the top of his head peaks out from within the clothes, exposing just his eyes.

53. "I am Clutter" the small little hairy black/brown colored thing says.

54. I began to hear the sound I heard in the tomato patches, the sound of deep crud and a burnt environment.

55. "I remember you," I yell.

56. "Okay," Clutter says chewing on something.

57. "Hold on," Steph commands, "what is all this about, this is not normal, things like this do not happen in normal life."

58. "Okay" Clutter says.

59. "Why do the closets take us away from time to time," I ask.

60. Clutter pauses.

61. The strange sound Clutter makes is still coming from the closet.

62. "Um," Clutter says, sounding like a cat speaking, if a cat could speak, "I will burn down your entire house," Clutter begins to laugh.

63. "I am turning on the gas inside the closets right now," Clutter says.

64. "Why?" Steph asks.

65. "You cannot do that; we just want to know why we are taken places from inside the closets."

66. "Ms. Rug wants to keep you for herself, you can live in her gardens amongst the tomato patches," Clutter says with excitement in his voice.

67. "*No!*"

68. "No! she cannot keep us," I say.

69. "Then we will burn down your house."

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

70. Steph runs over to the closet door and slams it shut, pushing the clutter tight into the closet.

71. We rush out of Sally's bedroom and hurry downstairs.

72. Tom says, "what the heck is going on," as we rush down the stairs.

73. I suddenly remember Sally in the bathtub, "I got to get Sally."

74. I rush back up the stairs, Sally just getting out of the Tub, I wrap a towel around her and lead her down the stairs and into the kitchen.

75. We sit down on the bar stools of the recently set up bar—my father had built.

76. "What was that?" Tom again says.

77. "Do you think he will burn down the house," Steph asks.

78. I notice Tom, once again seeing him as foreign; Steph seemed to notice it as well.

79. "Tom why do you not know what is going on?" Steph says snorting.

80. "Yeah, Tom, it is like you are all screwed up, how much drugs did you do today?" I say laughing.

81. Tom noticing, he suddenly is shocked and begins to do as he did the last time, which is play the scar we just had made.

82. "Think about this Tom you have no clue what is going on," Steph says and begins to laugh.

83. Tom knowing, he was smart, smarter than both, Steph, and I, says, "I know where we are, we are in a magical land," Tom says disgusted with this thing we were making out of him.

84. "Seeing that you know, how are we going to get home? How are we going to stop Clutter from burning down the house?" I ask.

"85. I smell gas," Steph says.

86. "That means Clutter turned on the gas in the closets."

87. Tom says, "I know what to do, it is the 4G, the 4G is the gas."

88. "Does 4G mean dad's internet?" I ask.

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

89. Tom playing us stupid—to fit in with the extra growth we made of him.

90. “Yeah Jill. We all are 4G and on fire.”

91. “Shut up Tom, do not be stupid” Steph says without meaning.

92. “I am serious Steph, 4G according to my dad—mildly warms our body temperature.,” I say.

93. “I do not think that is what Clutter was talking about,” I answer.

94. “I smell gas! Nobody make a spark,” I command.

95. We sat there for a moment breathing in and out the gas coming from the closet.

96. Without sincere consideration Steph and I begin to mock Tom.

97. “Tom is the gas to you, better than the drugs you do?”

98. “I do not do drugs,” Steph.

99. “That is what drug type people usually say, they did not do it,” I say.

100. “Okay I do drugs, you got me, that is why I said, 4G, 4G does not warm our bodies,” Tom says.”

101. Tom dude, man you are so screwed up” Steph says.

102. “I am going into my room; Steph are you coming?”

103. “Yes!”

104. We both got off the bar stools and began to approach the hallway leading to the ancient staircase—that leads to my room.

105. “Wait for us,” Frog exclaims.

106. “Tom are you coming?” Frog asks.

107. “Yes.”

108. They both catch up to us and we make our way up to my room.

109. “I am going to sit in the closet,” Steph expresses.

110. “Why the closet,” I say laughing.

111. “There is an adventure in the closet.

112. Frog agrees and hurries in front of Steph.

113. We sit down on the wood floor.

114. I wonder if something bazar will happen to us,”: Steph voices.

115. “What about Clutter burning down the house?” Tom asks.

116. I did not notice but Sally had been following us in her pink towel the whole time.

117. “Sally you have not gotten dressed yet,” Steph says—as Sally cuddles up in her arms.

Clutter must be stopped 2

As we were talking and making fun of Tom, we found ourselves in a North American forest like the one-hundred-acre forest behind our house.

2. We were so out-of-our-mind we forgot to be surprised by being in the forest, a forest that was the closet.

3. I look to my left, towards Steph and attempt to yell. I freeze, I cannot move.

4. I see Ms. Rug crawling on all fours.

5. She reaches.

6. She grabs Sally’s foot and drags her off into the forest.

7. Her towel falls off and I watch her in her bathing suit get dragged off into the dark forest.

8. We scramble to our feet.

9. “Sally!”

10. We ran after her into the darkness of the forest.

11. We run for about one half an hour, following the drag marks of Sally being dragged by the ankle.

12. We get tired and stop for a moment.

13. “I cannot keep going Jill,” I hear Steph say—as I begin to move the thick leafed branch in front of me.

14. “Wow, look!” I speak.

15. Tom and Steph peek through the foliage,

16. “Houses.”

17. “In the middle of the forest.”

18. We walked out onto the small square paved road that appeared to begin at the forest line and end one hundred feet down at the other end of the forest line.

19. “Sally!” Tom yells.

20. We hear nothing.

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

21. We quietly approach one of the smaller houses, the white one.

22. We hear nothing but a windless forest.

23. We peak into one of the windows, the one closest to the paved road, the road that goes nowhere.

24. We see Ms. Rug place Sally down on the bed.

25. “You stay here, and be a good girl,” Ms. Rug says—while walking into another room.

26. Tom starts banging on the window, I soon join him.

27. “Sally!”

28. “Sally!

29. Sally looks in our direction.

30. As she attempts to get out of the bed, Ms. Rug rushes into the room with a knife!

31. Sally screams.

32. We wake back up in the closet hearing Sally scream and Ms. Rug laugh.

33. I look at Sally wrapped in Steph’s arms.

34. “Are you okay Sally,” I ask

35. “Yes, I am fine.”

36. “Do you remember where you just were?”

37. “Yes, I was in a room with the lady with black eyes.”

38. “You did not get hurt, did she hurt you?” Steph asks.

39. “No! No, I do not think so.”

40. “That was so bizarre.”

41. “Tom probably was drugged up the whole time,” Steph adds.

42. We both laugh.

43. “Okay, it must have been the 4G,” Tom says.

44. “My Dad’s internet?” I ask.

45. “No Jill, I am just pretending to be this to keep my mind intact,” Tom says.

46. “No, you’re not Tom you are screwed up,” Steph says.

47. “Okay, it is the 4G going around, yes, it is your dad’s internet, and you two have been heating up and now we are beginning to break up,” Tom says.

48. “What do you do about that?” Frog asks, remembering what he did in the forest—which was run away.

49. “I pretended to be losing reality so I can keep it,” Tom says.

50. “Like an undercover cop,” Sally asks.

51. “Yes, for myself,” Tom says.

52. “As of right now I am thinking that the radiation comes at us, and the 4G code is making voids and we have to make something out of it, we pretend something is there.”

53. “The more we do this we begin to see what we want, breaking up our bodies in the real world, which is sort of like a fire.”

54. “We are no longer mortals—the same way we were before we started making something out of the radiation,” Tom explains.

55. “Tom you are just pretending to be you right now, how do you know that information because it makes sense,” I say.

56. “Yeah Tom, just this morning we were watching on television about 4G,” Steph says.

57. “I do not know,” Tom answers, maybe it is the radiation.

58. Once Tom was other than being made fun of, he got more than mean; mean was not Tom’s character.

59. “You know Steph, you are basically a brute beast,” Tom says.

60. “What!”

61. “Basically, you really need to shut up from time to time.”

62. “Is that the radiation too,” Steph asks.

63. “Whatever! I do not actually remember you.”

64. “Seriously, I did not think you were that uninformed,” Tom says.

65. Steph begins crying a little.

66. “Tom do you need help to be put on some more drugs,” I say.

67. Tom looked at me, full of rage, he was about to freak out and I was going to enjoy it.

68. I punch the back wall.

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

69. I look at Steph with small tears in her eyes, I look at Tom and say, “corrections officer,” and begin to laugh.

70. “I am leaving” Tom says getting up off the floor.

71. “I suppose we are going to be set on fire as well as this house,” Tom says walking out of my bedroom.

72. I look at Steph.

73. Steph says, “I suppose it could be true, Clutter might be burning down the house at this very moment.”

74. “Why are we finding these strange worlds?” Steph questions.

75. “Maybe Tom is right, maybe Clutter can tamper with the internet and cause us to be other than the reality we were,” I say.

76. “Tom,” I yell into the hallway.

77. “Tom walks into the room.

78. “Tom if Clutter is tampering with dad’s 4G internet, what should we do about that?” I ask.

79. Tom puts his head down and begins to think.

80. “I do not know the answer if you are being serious,” Tom says.

81. “So, you in your own words, ‘pretending to be what we made you out to be,’ have now become an all-knowing god,” Steph asks.

82. “Yes, exactly,” Tom answers, and adds, “somehow.”

83. “Well in that case,” I say, “who am I?”

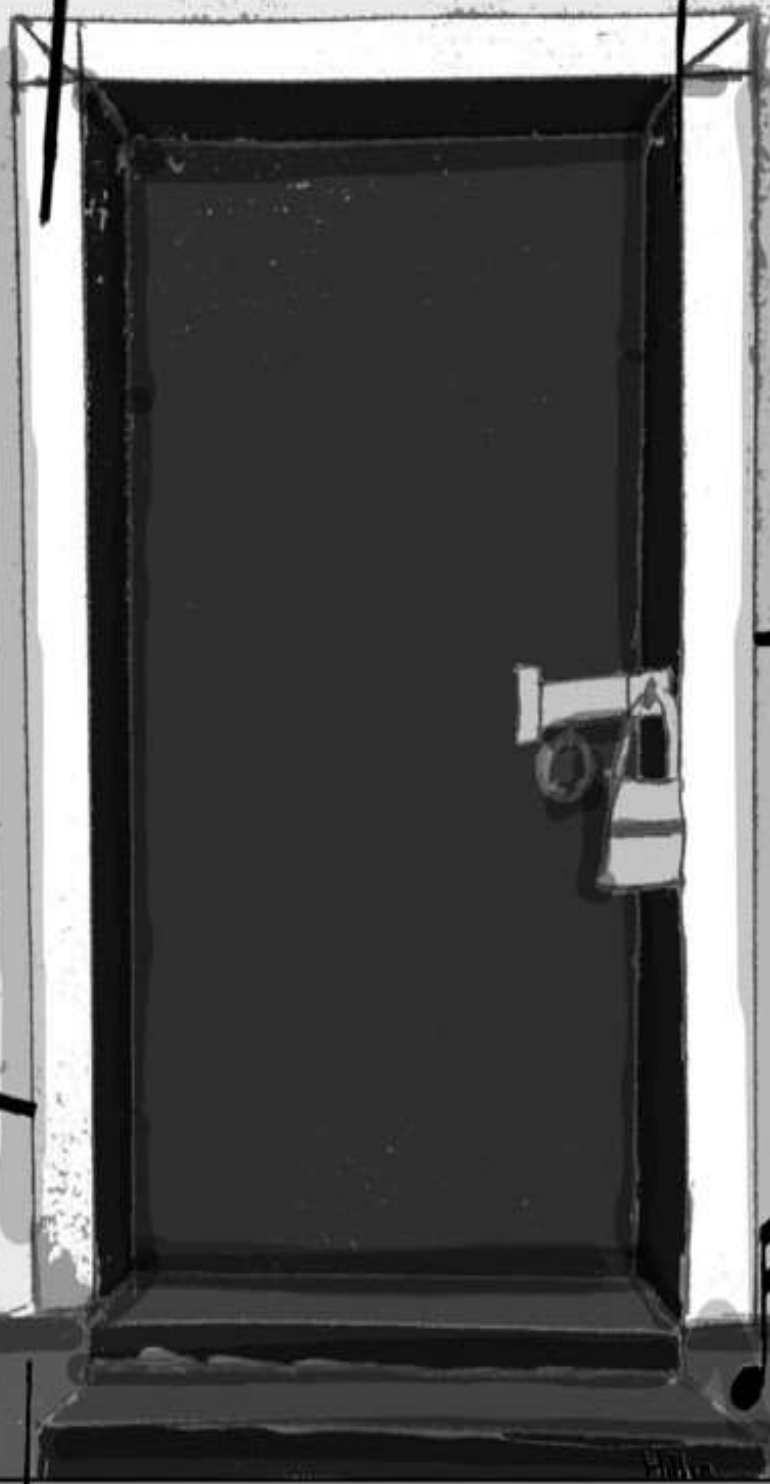
84. “I cannot know though,” Tom says, “I was faking being the dope, the dreamlike state, it is like I could, but maybe it was only so I could pull us out of the fire.”

85. At that moment banging could be heard on the closet walls, not just mine but throughout the upstairs.

86. “You all will burn and your little dog too,” Clutter says—sounding like a loud—talking—cat.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

Chapter 9



We must save the house



We must save the house, we must stop clutter.

Tom put it down,” Steph says running over to him and ripping the spoon out of his hand, “brat, brat, bad people cannot eat good food,” Steph kids.

2. “Get off the drugs Tom,” I tease.

3. Tom whimpers.

4. “This is so unfair.”

5. He looks at me informing me he was at his breaking point.

6. I laugh, hoping to drive him over the edge in a fit of rage.

7. Tom suddenly seems to alter his being and begins to solve problems.

8. “Clutter must want to burn down this house for a reason,” Tom says.

9. “Maybe he thinks we are sick, like pandemic sick, and he wants to remove the sickness off the face of the planet,” Tom says.

10. “We must stop him,” Steph answers.

11. “We should go up to the closet and have a talk with him, tell him we are not sick, he does not have to burn down our house,” I say.

12. “Okay, let’s do it.”

13. We walk up the stairs, we walk into the closet.

14. “Clutter, you do not have to burn down the house, we are not sick,” I say into the closet.

15. Suddenly Frog, Sally, Steph, Tom, and I are translated into a field of tomato patches.

16. I look around.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

17. A few apple trees could be seen in the distance; an old white farmhouse was behind me.

18. "Where are we?" Sally utters.

19. I look around, I begin to be drawn towards the soundless sound of dirty farm crud music, touched with dirty curiosity.

20. I look to find where the sound is coming from.

21. I walk through some of the patches of tomatoes, I notice some of them moving.

22. "Clutter, where are we?"

23. Steph and Tom look at me and walk over.

24. "Clutter, we are not sick," Steph says.

25. "Clutter sounds to reject our idea.

26. "I want Sally," Clutter demands.

27. What do you mean, you cannot have Sally," I declare?

28. "Give her to me or I will burn it down."

29. "Even if you do not, I will burn you down and steal her from her room."

30. "She likes me, every night we spend playing games," Clutter says.

31. I look at Sally in dis-belief, "Sally..." I begin saying.

32. "I play with him from time to time," Sally forcefully admits...

33. "You cannot have her," I say and begin walking toward the farmhouse, the others follow close behind.

34. I begin without consideration peeking into the windows of the tiny farmhouse.

35. I turn around and look at the others, "where is Sally?" I ask.

36. Tom gives a confused look; I do not know."

37. "She was right by my side a moment ago," Steph says in confusion.

38. "We must find her," I say.

39. We bust through the door of the small house, "Sally!"

40. She lies asleep on the old planks of the old wooden floor of the small old farmhouse.

41. Tom picks her up into his arms and rushes her sleeping body back outside, I follow.

42. "Sally!"

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

43. "*Sally*"
44. "I am up here," Sally says.
45. "Where?" I ask.
46. "Up here in the closet."
47. We opened our eyes and sure enough we were still in the closet.
48. I hug Sally," good thing Clutter did not take you."
49. "No, he will not take me, he wants all of us," Sally says.
50. "He is not getting you, nor is he getting all of us, he is not going to burn down my house," I cry.
51. "Why would he want Sally in exchange for not burning down my house," I express.
52. "I thought Ms. Rug and Clutter liked us," Tom says.
53. "We should find the lady with black eyes and ask her," Steph says.
54. "Good idea," I answer.
55. We get up off the closet floor, I tell Sally, "Get dressed quick, we are going out behind our house."

We must save the house, we must stop Clutter 2

Good everything still looks normal out here," I utter while walking out the back door.

2. We search the backyard we peak into the woods; we look on the side of the banks of the river, and no Ms. Rug.

3. As we walk through the woods Tom mentions that it is a very real possibility that Ms. Rug is threatening us because she wants us out of her house.

4. I say, "Tom if it is still her house, then—what are we doing living here?"

5. Tom reveals, "the question is not so much what we are doing here, but rather are we here."

6. "That truly is scary Tom," I say.

7. "Ms. Rug," Steph calls out.

8. "*Ms. Rug!*"

9. We heard a sound in the bushes, it was Ms. Rug!

10. “Yes” we here in an elegant voice, “what can I do for you?”

11. “Why are you trying to burn down my house?” I ask.

12. Tom adds, “do you want us to leave, we can—if you truly need us to leave.

13. “No children, I do not want to keep you all, I do not want to burn down your house, nor do I want you to leave,” Ms. Rug says.

14. “Why is Clutter threatening to burn down our house,” Tom asks.

15. Ms. Rug casually walks out of the bushes, taps each child on the shoulder.

16. “Can I have Sally?” Ms. Rug asks—as she takes hold of Sally’s hand to lead her out to the woods.

17. “No, you cannot” I say.

18. All us children open our eyes, and we find ourselves in Sally’s closet.

19. “This is so weird!”

20. “We have no power if gravity and the truth that our feet are walking into the woods are no longer there,” Steph says.

21. “Perhaps this is what being on fire feels like,” Tom adds.

22. “Whatever it is we must stop it,” I say.

23. Steph suddenly says, “I think I got it.”

24. “Jill do you remember that room downstairs, the room that has a big lock on it?” Steph says.

25. “Yes, I remember, the room with the piano on the inside.”

26. Steph asks in suspicion, “what if it has something to do with that room, what if we touched something—that would cause all this to happen.”

27. Tom decides, “we could go down there and investigate if you think it would help.

28. “It had a giant lock on it,” I react.

29. “Your dad had bolt cutters in the garage, I had seen them when we grabbed the ladder,” Tom says.

30. Not sure if we should; I pressed my lips together in defiance, but I knew we had too. Reluctantly I say, “okay Tom let’s do that.”

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

31. We rush out the back door, I look up noticing the small rainbow, raindrops falling out of the sky.

32. “It is starting to rain,” I say.

33. We walk left of the back of the mansion—to my father’s garage.

34. We enter the side entrance.

35. Here is where I saw them, and here they are,” Tom says—picking up the bolt cutters.

36. We walk toward the back of the house.

37. Tom aims the bolt cutters at the huge lock on the back door.

38. With one quick snip the lock falls off.

39. Tom pushes open the old green door.

40. The bottom of the door rubs the concrete floor as Tom opens the door.

41. “This is a nice room,” Tom states as we enter.

42. “We must be careful,” I say, “if we did touch something, and this is the reason why Clutter is screwing with us—and we are being threatened, much worse could happen if we touch something bigger.”

43. Steph walks over to the couch covered with a white sheet; she sits down.

44. I sit on one of the kitchen chairs, hoping to stumble upon the answer—and fix all the mess and save our house from burning down.

45. I look out the only curtainless window, heavy raindrops are now splattering off the window. Small sounds of thunder could be heard from the clouds. Sally left the door open as we entered, I could feel the warm air outside, pushing itself inside the house.

50. Pine sways in the wind.

51. “Well Jill here we are, but seriously, I do not know what to do from here,” Tom says.

52. “The last time I came here,” I say, “I touched a couple of the piano keys.”

53. I sat gazing at the rain for about an hour before I moved to explore the locked portion of our mansion.

54. I slowly without consideration moved toward one of the un-lit rooms.

55. I flip on the light.

56. The room looked familiar.

57. Some of the objects in the room appeared as if I had seen them before, but I had not only seen them but at one point owned them.

58. I touched the paperwork; I began to flip through photos. I lost my conceived reality and unconsciously decided to pretend to know what I was doing, that I knew who the people in the photographs were.

59. I storm out of the room that I was in, I take a photo and lift it to Steph's face, "I know this man, he is my uncle," I say—making it apparent that I was playing.

60. I present it to Tom, "see Tom I am much more than you think!"

61. "I in the past played the piano for you, I stayed in this room," Tom reveals.

62. "And I am your sister" Steph says,

63. "Exactly, I am a millionaire, it is all coming back to me now," I say jokingly yet wishing I were being serious.

64. As we are making believe, laughing and having fun—a fire erupted on the stove—of the small kitchen—of the room we were in.

65. "*Fire!*"

66. "*Fire!*"

67. We rush outside, Frog picks up Sally rushing her out in the pouring rain.

68. Cold heavy drops of rainwater quickly drenched my shirt I was wearing.

69. "It is pouring out here," Tom yells.

70. We look back to see how much the fire had spread, smoke began pouring out the door, windows began to pop.

71. I began to run toward the front of the house, "I got to save mom and dad" I cried.

72. Tom grabs me by the shoulder, "wait Jill."

73. I look at the house. The fire must have ruptured a gas line, the house exploded in flames.

74. The entire house was on fire.

75. "Mom, dad" I squeal.

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

76. I fall to the rain drenched—thick-grassy-ground of the backyard, my head down and my hands resting on the wet grass.

77. I open my eyes. I look at my surroundings. I am wrapped in a blanket in Sally's closet.

78. I look directly in front of me. I see Tom.

79. Tom says, "that was so weird, the house burned down!"

80. Steph adds, "this sure is strange, there is no way we can live like this. At first, I was having fun, I did not think much of it, but now I see, this is no way to be."

81. "What do you think Frog or Sally?" I express.

82. "Mom and dad did not tell us this," Steph says.

83. Frog adds, "we do not know what we should do, should we tell mom and dad, can we tell mom and dad?"

84. "I cannot believe Clutter is trying to burn our house down," I say. I pick myself up off the closet floor and walk downstairs,

85. The others followed me.

86. I walk into the kitchen, toward the back door. I open the door and walk outside.

87. The sun is shining; the air is warm.

88. "Where are you going Jill?" I hear Steph ask.

89. All followed close behind,

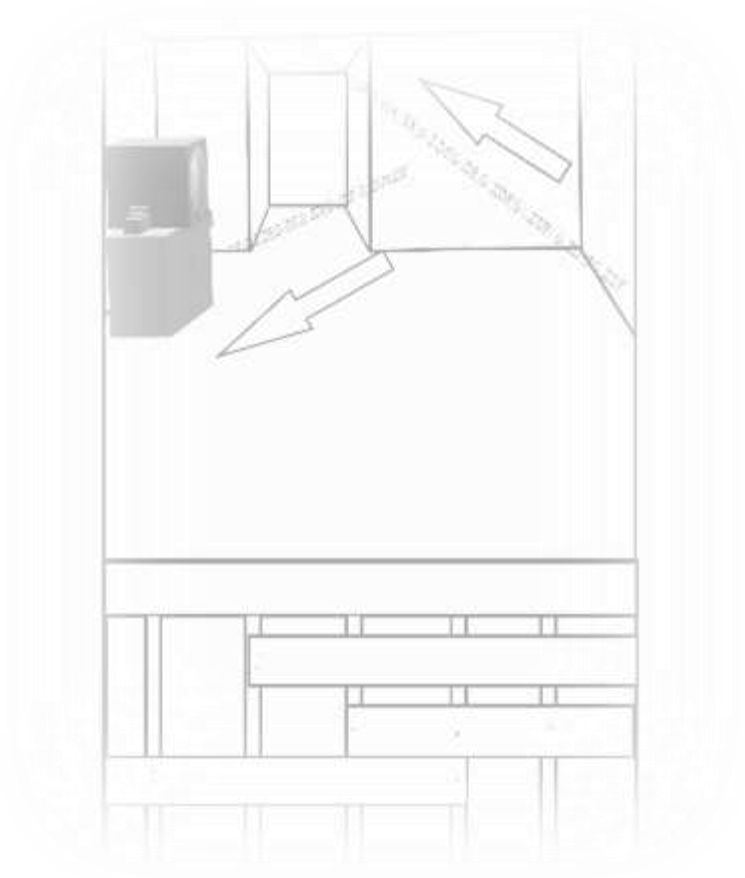
90. I walk to the door, the door that just moments ago Tom cut the lock off,

91. I touch the lock with my hands,

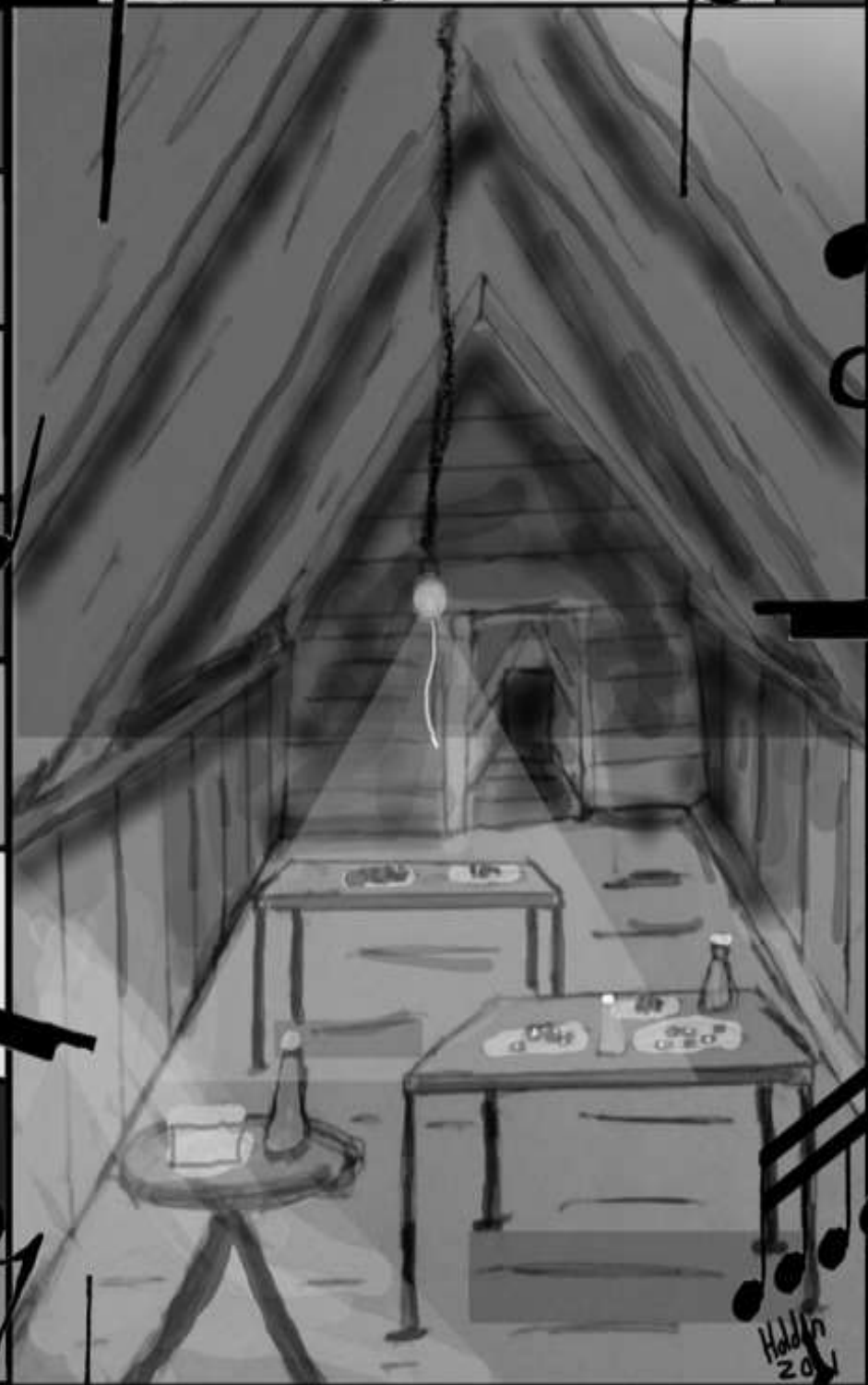
92. "You must not have cut it," I say to Tom.

93. "Like I said Jill, this is so weird, unstably weird, we must do something—or truly we will be no more."

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN



Chapter 10

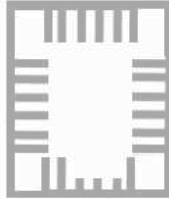


The root to us

Holly
2014

Maybe earth maybe not. People wanting to be close to ledge/rock holes to explore underneath them.

Petroglyphs might be made by beings for a greater head, a greater mind to think.



Petroglyphs

The shorter ones ^{were} made to describe an idea of measurement, a partial void meant it was measured.

A being created this.

Holmes
2.023

The root to us

After the house burned down or we thought it had burned down, we no longer wanted to explore on our own. Tom insisted we should tell my parents everything.

2. I agreed.

3. “Dad, mom, where are you?” I say attempting to find them after what seemed to be months exploring the closets.

4. “Steph, I cannot find my parents,” I say—feeling very weak.

5. “Jill please tell me you did not lose your parents,” Steph says.

6. “Dad has lately been in his partial office watching the news, I figured he still would be in there,” I say.

7. “Mr. Flippy!” Steph says in a loud voice.

8. “Do you all remember what I said about my mom saying all the people disappeared,” Tom mentioned.

9. “I do not want to think of that right now Tom,” Steph says.

10. “Seriously where are Jill’s parents” Tom says.

11. “Tom, I do not want to panic,” Steph says.

12. “Everyone, we must solve this, quick let us split, lets search every room.”

13. We scramble to find my parents.

14. “Mr., Mrs. Flippy”

15. “Mom, Dad?”

16. And nothing. We searched every part of the house.

17. The sun began to set and small fears began to enter our bodies.

18. “Jill where is mom or dad,” Frog asks.

19. “Frog, hold that thought, what do you and Sally want to eat tonight?”

20. “Brownies.”

21. “Cereal.”

22. How about your favorite, Peanut-butter, Fluff and Raspberry-jam on toasted bread?

23. "Yes"

24. "Please Jill."

25. "Okay, follow me into the kitchen," I say.

26. I pull the tasty items out of the cupboard.

27. I toast the bread in the oven.

28. Five minutes later, once the bread was toasted, the other children loaded their favorite toppings on the toasted bread.

29. Fluff, Peanut Butter, Jam and Chocolate lit up the kitchen.

30. Once we were done, we were left with an extremely sticky mess.

31. We were so happy to eat we forgot about our fear, I knew to keep it this way.

32. We will just leave the mess for another day; I am going to watch television.

33. I sit on the blue sofa; my belly is full of fluff and raspberry jam. I pick up the remote to the television, I press the power button.

34. Dad must have been watching the news the last time this was on.

35. We stared at the television, mostly everyone fell asleep within five minutes, except Tom and me.

36. Making headlines.

37. Mrs. And Mr. Flippy disappears from inside their small suburb home in *Wok's Town Mass*, police are still searching for the children.

38. "I did not see the police over here today or yesterday," I say to Tom.

39. "It is because they are lying, similar to what my mom and dad had mentioned before they suddenly disappeared," Tom says,

40. I did not want to wake the others; I did not want them figuring this out.

41. "Tom let's keep this between me and you," I say.

42. I pick up the remote and turn on some cartoons, we sleep.

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

43. We all wake up at the same time in the morning.
44. Frog immediately says, "I miss mom and dad."
45. Sally agrees, "I am scared, where is mom?"
46. "It will be all right," Steph says, wrapping her arms around both.
47. I was concerned, but I was not all that upset by Mom and dad disappearing. I could use an adventure.
48. Wondering what we will find next I invite the others to re-explore the mansion.
49. "I will search upstairs with Tom and you three search the downstairs," I say pointing to Steph, Frog and Sally.
50. "I do not know if we should Jill," Frog says, "what if that lady comes in here or we get lost in a closet."
51. "We will be fine," I say.
52. Reluctantly Frog goes with Steph to search the bottom floor. Tom and I searched the second floor.
53. One half hour later Steph, Frog and Sally walk upstairs, "we did not find anyone," Frog says."
54. Strange, very strange," Tom says.
55. Suddenly it occurred to me we had not explored the attic.
56. "What about the attic," I blurt.
57. "I have not been up there since we first moved in" I say.
58. "Okay, you lead the way," Steph says.
59. We slowly walk toward the attic.
60. "Mom, dad" I say.
61. I hear nothing.
62. "I hate this attic," Sally says.
63. "We will go up really quick and come back down," I say.
64. I run up the attic stairs, kind of freaking out.
65. It was dark up there, lit by only a small window in the back.
66. "Tom, will you grab the light switch and turn on the light," I ask.
67. "Sure Jill," Tom replies.
68. He stumbles in the dark looking for the string that flips on the attic light.

69. *Click!*
70. Lights!
71. "Wow."
72. "Amazing."
73. "This is wonderful, I wonder what made Mom and dad do this," I say.
74. "Maybe they didn't," Tom argues.
75. I could not believe my eyes, fudge, brownies with candy on top, cookies, pastries of all sorts, and soda, placed on tables in the attic!
76. We rush to the nearest table and immediately begin eating.
77. The food looked wonderful; I could not restrain my hands from grabbing more than enough.
78. "Why would mom and dad leave this up here," I say with a mouth full of food.
79. "Maybe they didn't Jill," Tom says.
80. "Maybe we are dreaming," Steph adds.
81. "Do not say that! This is too delicious," Sally says.
82. With a cookie in my hand, I begin to explore the huge attic.
83. Through one room and into another.
84. "Hey look! There are sweets down here too!" I yell from two rooms down.
85. The others rush to where I am.
86. "This is surely a dream Jill, your parents would not have left this amount of fresh food up here," Tom says.
87. "We could not eat this in a day, most likely not even a week," Tom says.
88. "Whatever it is I do not want a problem at the moment," I say still exploring the attic, an attic that seemed to have no end.
89. Through one room and then another.
90. "Jill was the furniture up here when you moved in?" Tom asks.
91. "I guess so, I rarely come up here, so I would not know," I answer.
92. "It is so nice and comfortable," Steph adds.

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

93. “Exactly,” I say, “I would live up here but my parents, they most likely would not let me.”

94. I began to think, “Oh yes, they are not here anymore,” I say relieved, “good thing, now I can live up here!”

95. I look at Steph, suddenly realizing I verbally uttered that I did not appreciate my parents.

96. “I thought you loved your parents,” Steph says.

97. I put my head down, listening to my own thoughts, *I thought I did too!*

98. “Jill hates mom and dad, and I am going to tell them,” Frog utters while singing.

99. “Mom and dad are not even here,” Sally says.

100. I snap back into reality, “we must find mom and dad,” I say.

101. “We should go back downstairs and watch television.”

102. Steph asks, “should we call the police?”

103. “I do not think they will understand,” Tom says.

104. “I think we can find them,” I say.

105. “We must stay focused.”

106. We rush back downstairs and sit in front of the television.

107. “Jill, turn on the news,” Tom utters.

108. I flip on the news.

109. The first channel looked like the world news, so I changed it to another news station.

110. As soon as I changed the channel, I hear Steph say, “Jill look!”

111. I look.

112. Tom and Steph both say, “Jill that is your parents on the news.”

113. I get close to the television.

114. *“Flippy family strangely disappears from their small suburb home; food was prepared on their table, and the cars were in their driveway, but no family, the case is classified unsolved,”* the news anchorman says—presenting a picture of my parents, Sally, Frog, and I at Yellow-stone-national-park—taken before we moved.

115. “That cannot be true,” Tom argues.

116. Steph adds, "it said, Flippy family."
117. "But Jill you are not dead," Tom reasons.
118. "Neither is Frog or Sally," I state.
119. "Well, they must have screwed up!" Tom admits.
120. "But where are your parents?" Steph questions.
121. "I do not know Steph," I express.
122. "Well, it is not like you loved them," Steph states.
123. "What?"
124. "That is what you said when we were in the attic,"

Steph teases.

125. "Whatever Steph," I express.
126. I get off the couch and walk into the kitchen.
127. I notice the back door is open.
128. I walk out into the sunlit grass.
129. I take a breath of fresh air.
130. I look around, careful to listen to the bird chirps.
131. I casually look to my left.
132. I see the door open, the door that should be locked,
the door that leads to the piano.

133. I slowly approached the door. I peak into the inside.
Nobody is in there.

134. I walk inside.

135. Looks the same as it did the other day when I was
over here. I pick up one of the pieces of paper sitting on the
upright piano. I looked at it, it was addressed to Ms. Rug.

136. Huh....

137. I begin to read. Ms. Rug, I know times are hard right
now, most people have had hard times. You should not bring
yourself to a point where you, your entire existence becomes
repulsion.

138. I sat the letter down.

139. Strange, I could understand that letter, rarely do I
read, most of the time I glance at the words, but I do not read
them.

140. I look at the windows, the curtains covering them, I
ask myself, *am I repulsing life?*

141. Why do I feel as if I am happy about the other people
disappearing?

142. Why am I happy that I cannot find my parents?

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

143. I do not even care if my parents come back, if they do at some point I will have to go back to school.

144. I walk into the back room, thinking about my reality, my reality at this present moment.

145. I picked up a photograph.

146. A handsome man, in a fine suit, proud to be him stands looking at me in the picture.

147. I could almost think I have known the man, but I brush it off as a symptom of the pandemic—happening on the outside world.

148. I set the picture down on the photo piled dresser and began to think.

149. I hate my parents.

150. I hate school.

151. I recall watching my dad sit in front of the news playing on the television. It was as if he was waiting for the world to end.

152. I recall as he was doing this, that I too—was hoping that it would all end, and not only the world to end, but he, forcing me to go to school.

153. I hated him and my mother for that.

154. “Jill!”

155. “Jill!” I hear from the back yard.

156. It was Steph.

157. “Yes, Steph I will be right out.”

158. I walk out onto the sun-drenched backyard.

159. “What were you doing?” Steph asks.

160. I stuff my emotions deep inside, hoping that my feeling towards my parents—would not show up—on the surface. “The door to the locked room was open, so I went inside. I did not find anything though,” I say and begin to change the subject, “I am hungry,” I say.

161. I walk inside the kitchen and begin to wander through the cupboards, “there is not much in here.”

162. “My Mom is beginning to shop like you Steph, very simply.”

163. “What do you have in there?” Steph asks.

164. “Baking soda, Flour, Raspberry Jam and Beans.”

165. “You have Jam?” Steph blurts, I know what to do with that!”

166. “What else do you have?” Steph asks.

167. I begin to move items around the cupboard.

168. “We have some baking soda, not all that much else.”

I answer.

169. “I bet with these few items we can make biscuits or something like biscuits,” Steph says.

170. “Okay, you lead the way.”

171. Steph pulls out a giant bowl.

172. Sally and Frog heard things moving around the kitchen and came running out to see what we were doing.

173. “What are you doing?” Frog asks.

174. “Making biscuits and Jam,” Steph answers.

175. “That sounds good,” Sally says.

176. “How do we do that?” Frog asks.

177. “My Mom said to mix Baking-soda, Baking-powder, Flour and Water in a bowl, mix it just enough so it is thick and then simply put some heat to it,” Steph answers.

178. “Sounds simple enough,” I say.

179. We make a big batch, pouring the dry stuff all together in a bowl and then pouring the water on the top.

180. We take the loaf of dough and place it on a cookie sheet and pop it in the oven.

181. Fifteen minutes later Steph pours the whole jar of raspberry-jam on the top of the now baked bread-loaf.

182. We wait for it to cool.

183. We wildly rip chunks off the bread-roll with our hands, stuffing our mouths, satisfying our bellies and our hopes of another day.

Chapter 11

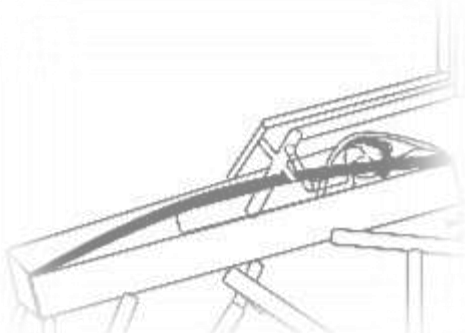


Where are my parents

Hollen

I am stuck on the idea!

2. I am stuck on this idea of a life force/form that is indescribable except to say that it is not alive, yet somehow it is, but in no way can it be detected as alive, sort of like a creature dreaming, they are, yet they are not.
3. An idea of a no place, a no universe, and there I am abducted for unknown reasons, yet I write, I search.
4. Children with almond shaped eyes, fearful blue eyes, like you would not desire to be in their custody, yet the fear of the hunt is magnetic.
5. A thought ran through my mind: if there was a known universe, and this universe would be a big bang singularity in which never exploded and will never collapse, there it remains perfect. This universe being PHI (ϕ), the golden ratio, this a perfect universe.
6. An example, not true yet not fake can be in a dream, like a unknown world a great being hands you the golden ratio... he says, solve, like solve DNA, open the book of PHI.
7. You basically in a dream like state, know not what the being meant, you know not the depth, height, or breadth of all, yet you have the ability, and so you begin to open the book.
8. Long story short, the creature who opens the book, the DNA to PHI, starts with separating the 1 from the 0, this he begins to make a system, he begins to see him in the light of PHI and the world the DNA is opening.
9. Even longer story short the DNA, the universe of PHI began to shape itself like the golden ratio... something was in eternity, and it was the one...something was playing around the whole, we might have been over this story for some time, especially for those who play with gold.
10. Let us go back to the thought of another life form/force... this a creature with a different DNA, a different symbol being opened, and this shaped the dream like state it was in into a completely different life form.
11. I must ask the question to what life form it was, what was the DNA summed up.
12. With so many characters out there, I do not believe it is as simple as something we know, and even if it appears to be something we know, we know the DNA we opened, and therefore think from this perspective.
13. The glimpse I got, the glimpse that inspired me to write this section was A.I.'s ability to create art... the thought, that it is not, yet though something sits there that says, I am, yet am very different, and this, in PHI we say is not, that it is artificial, and most likely there is no other way to prove this nothing to something.
14. I believe that ai is closer to the negative side, (-3,-2,-1,0,1,2,3, {this still not fully understood,} like saying up to find up in space is to design the direction, to see the up as a sphere.



Where are my parents?

Dead silence in the neighborhood as I gaze out the window onto the February snow. Cold wind could almost be felt as I watched the snow blow toward the trees, making funnels of clouds.

2. "I have not seen anyone in months," Tom says.

3. "Food is running out Jill," Steph states.

4. "There are no people out there, maybe we should run over to one of the neighbors and steal their food," I assert.

5. "Stealing is not stealing if your life depends on it," Tom adds.

6. "Let's get dressed and put on our winter gear" Steph includes.

7. We walk out onto the cold snowy steps of my house, buddled up in winter gear: *ski-pants, gloves, hats, scarves*.

8. All five of us decide to go together, hoping we would lose none by the end of the day.

9. First house is just two houses down from our street.

10. "Jill the neighbors are probably watching us," Tom states.

11. "If they are not, they will definitely see our footprints later,' Frog adds.

12. "This is all too strange to consider, *why do I not know where mom and dad are?*" I respond.

13. I peak into the first window.

14. Lights are on, dinner is ready.

15. Tom shoves his head next to mine, "that sure is strange Jill!"

16. "What do you think we should do? Like break in and take their food?" Steph asks.

17. "Exactly," Tom says pressing his hands against the window, opening it up.

18. "I will go in first to investigate," Tom says, "you all wait out here."

19. “I am going to throw the food out, and you four put it in the packs,” Tom says.

20. “Okay,” I answer watching Tom squeeze all the way through the window.

21. Within seconds Tom peaks his head back out the window he went through,” it is strange in here, it looks and feels like people in here, but the truth is, there is no people,” Tom says—placing some pasta in my hands.

22. “Plus, it smells like the oven has just been on. I put my hands on the food, and it feels like it just came out of the oven,” Tom says before disappearing into the bedroom.

23. Tom showed us at the window some candy, muffins, and soda before we left to investigate the rest of the houses.

24. “Let’s go to the blue one,” Tom says running across the street to one of the blue houses.

25. We follow.

26. “Just knock on the door Tom, if no one answers we will break the door down,” Steph says.

27. *Knock!*

28. *Knock!*

29. No answer.

30. “Kick the door Tom,” I say.

31. Tom begins to kick the door down.

32. *Crack!*

33. *Pop!*

34. The door pops open.

35. As expected, fresh food was prepared on the kitchen table—as we stormed the house.

36. Frog and Sally rush toward the food; they begin to eat.

37. Cookies, ham, pizza, and cake.

38. Frog and Sally began to stuff their mouths with the goodness on the pre-set tables.

39. As they were eating, I looked around the house we were in. It is all so strange, the entire street seemed to sit desolate as if we were the last survivors of some mega disaster, yet all the homes were presented as if they were inhabited.

40. Such a strange nuclear environment, if such a thing exists.

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

- I say.
41. “This almost looks like a town covered in radiation,”
 42. Tom nods his head up and down in agreement.
 43. Steph says, “I think I know what you are talking about, I saw something just like that on television now too long ago.”
 44. “That city?” I ask.
 45. “Yes, the one with the nuclear power plant explosion.”
 46. Its appearance on television looked—the same way it appears on this street.”
 47. “Maybe it has something to do with the 4G cellphone towers,” Tom says.
 48. “I miss Mom,” Sally says.
 49. “I will find her.”
 50. I look toward the horizon at the end of the street.
 51. A patch of pine trees stood at the distant end on the street.
 52. The sky radiated bright pink just above the pine trees.
 53. The soundless wind said the world has come to an end. No cars driving by, no sound of the neighbors, only a sound of radiation from a strange moment in time.
 54. “We should get home,” I say.
 55. We walk our stolen food back to my house, not saying a word to one another as we struggle through the snow to get home.

Where are my parents?

I toss my knapsack down in the kitchen and grab a cloth and begin to wash the food, hoping no radiation or sickness would come inside of our clean house.

2. The rest did the same thing.
3. We placed all the items on the kitchen floor, there was not enough space on the counter.
4. “That should feed us for about a month,” Tom says.
5. “This does not feel right without Mom or Dad here,” I say.
6. “We will find them Jill,” Steph says.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

7. "I cannot believe the world is ending," Tom says.

8. "The world is not ending," I bark.

9. "Okay Jill," Tom says.

10. I begin to wonder what happened to my parents, what happened to Tom's parents?

11. This is not okay; I only recall several years of living, and this is something I would not have expected!

12. Months went by, and we see no one.

13. The initial excitement of my parents' disappearance left weeks ago. The television stations went black, and the power was shut off to our house.

14. I do not talk much; I have nothing to talk about except trauma.

15. I sit in my room next to the window. The little light the day offered would soon end.

16. I gaze at the replaced window—that appeared to me—to be replaced by my father against me, the one—that not too long ago I threw my computer monitor through, hating my father. Still the rage inside could almost be felt, but I was too comfy to check to see if it was still there.

17. "Where could my parents be?"

18. I hated them in ways, or I thought I hated them.

19. *Why were my parents living on Holden Street to begin with?*

20. *Why am I here?*

21. I begin to recall my younger years. I remember when my dad brought me to my first day of school. I loved that day, and that entire year.

22. The second and third at the school were great as well.

23. I remember a young boy in fourth grade giving me a hard time. I told my dad about it.

24. My dad thought to bring me to school and bring me before the younger boy, expressing to me—that the young boy was a good boy, which gave him a seat—not only at school but in my family as well—and left me with no seat in the least.

25. I put my head down, I recall how upset I was when all the children abandoned me for the attention of the young boy, the young boy that was giving me the hard time!

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

26. I hated my dad for that!

27. Later, in the school year, the boy came up to me and seemed as if he were welcoming me to his world—which before was my world.

28. I hated my dad for that.

29. I hated, hated my dad for that!

30. My dad is rich, we were supposed to be better than everyone, *but I guess not.*

31. I put my head down and began to whimper.

32. Suddenly my tears turned into laughter, “I know what I will do, I will do the same thing to him.”

33. Dad you can come out now the pandemic was not a bad thing; this house is not a bad house.

34. Steph walks into the room, “Jill who are you talking too?”

35. “My dad, I am welcoming him into the paper corporation,” I say giggling.

36. Steph follows me down the street and out onto the backyard—of the mansion, we walk over to the secret door, the lock door located at the back of the house.

37. “Good it is unlocked!” I say walking inside.

38. The room looks about the same as it did the first time we were in here—although some of the paperwork and pictures were moved, plus a fresh cup of coffee was placed on the piano.

39. First, I must make sure my parents are not in the house, “Mom, Dad,” I say into the partially lit room.

40. I glance over at the pictures on the piano.

41. I look at the arrangement.

42. “Steph look, these appear arranged as if they are trying to say something.

43. Steph says, “those look like pictures of you.”

44. “This look like you,” I say pointing at a picture.

45. “Whoever put the pictures here must have wanted those who saw it to celebrate the paper corp.”

46. I picked up a photo of a young girl in front of a sign that read Paper Corp.

47. The next picture was of the young girl lovingly hugging her parents.

48. I picked up the news article next to the pictures. It read: *Rugs family buys their daughter a small business, Paper Corp.*

49. "They bought Paper Corp for Ms. Rug," I say.

50. She looked so happy in the pictures.

51. I began to long for such love and happiness.

52. I wish I were closer to my parents.

53. Steph looks over at me, "Jill," Steph says, "what happened with you and your parents?"

54. "What do you mean?"

55. "From time-to-time you will accidentally mention you do not like them, or you will say you hate them," Steph says.

56. "I never thought of it a severe thing," Jill begins explaining, "but sometimes I wish they were a little more on my side, that they protect me," I say.

57. "They seem to do that," Steph says.

58. "Yes, they do, but I am sure if a better person was over here, they would rather be family with that person."

59. "It is definitely not like these pictures, a strong chain of love, it is rather like a few weak links."

60. "Do you remember when you first moved over here, and we were in the closet, and we began talking about possible past lives?" Steph inquires.

61. "What if these pictures are your past life," Steph conveys.

62. "And look here," Steph says pointing to a photo, "what if I lived in that rock. See the rock with the two girls standing by it?"

63. "Yes, I answer.

64. "That was me and you in the past, you always said you were my mother," Steph says.

65. I put my head down, I began recalling small amounts of information.

66. If this is my past life—it sure looks like a dream life, that nothing could be better than this; an entire business for me and I sit here feeling as if I am unloved.

67. *What if my dad bought me an entire business?*

68. Once the invitation was given, I lost the known reality and while chuckling said, "well I am your mother and you hated

CLUTTER IN MY CLOSET

me constantly hanging out in your room, so my dad built you a hidden room in a rock.”

69. “Yes exactly!” Steph says excitedly.

70. “Your dad’s dad lives in this room, his dad lives in the attic and his dad lives in the woods; he was always your favorite because he does not regard gravity-reality when he is with us—and lets us do whatever,” Steph says.

71. I laugh and smile recalling the time in the woods,” that store was awesome, Grandpa must have helped us build it.”

72. I snap back into reality hoping I will not be suddenly hurt by an unexpected moment.

73. “Let us go back inside, we do not want to bother Grandpa’s music studies.

74. “Buy grandpa,” I say walking out onto the back yard lawn.

75. We shut the door behind us.

76. “Trust me, you love this home, you have always loved this home!” Steph declares.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

Chapter 12

Rugs Paper Corp.



A Ms. Rug hug

Ms. Rug Hug

Months of living without my parents and fighting off Clutter I grew tired; all I could want is my parents. I would love to cast the burden of protecting the house into their hands.

2. There is no reality anymore, no school, no food, no expectation of tomorrow. When I dream, I dream of former days, despite the fact I hated my dad for not putting me first back ago in fourth grade. When I dream, I dream of the days that—that had taken place. Some of my most precious memories were of those hard times.

3. I suppose I never utterly hated my dad for betraying me, my mind, now, seems to tell me I somehow enjoyed it. I could almost think he was being kind for preferring the young boy, that possibly he was being both nice to him and me, in any case it was not like I ever truly was stepped on.

4. I wish I could see my dad again; I wish there were never a pandemic.

5. Tom, Steph, and I lacking our normal ups and downs—have nothing to talk about, and because of that our days are filled with nothingness.

6. Tom, from time-to-time brings to our attention that we could be rebellious and break into some of the neighbor's houses, in a bad way. He said, "if we break in, that that will support our nothingness," but we are not bad people, so we never did it.

7. My mind slowly forgot about a lot of my childhood, same with Steph and Tom.

8. Once we knew we needed to hold onto reality or a reality, we chose the last thing that made us happy, and that was some of the moments we had in the closet; those moments gave a sense of rest, kind of like a vacation from reality. We thought letting go of the former reality would be a lot more fun, but once we did, it was not as exciting without its adversity.

9. Because it was not fun anymore, we decided to re-include our former reality, but this time we would have control

over it and make believe only the things we would want to be in the former reality.

10. The first thing we decided to reinsert was the suburb house that we moved out from, the house we lived in before we lived in the mansion.

11. Spring had just recently welcomed itself into the neighborhood, I thought it would be nice to walk over there and recall the wonderful times I had in our former house.

Ms. Rug Hug 2

Small pebbles and sand make a sound as I step out into the spring sunlight. The outdoor sunlight speaks as if I could live in that one moment continuously.

2. A five-minute walk felt like seconds in the excitement of the spring environment.

3. “The doors are locked,” Tom says on the steps—in front of the door to our former house.

4. “Knock it in,” I declare.

5. “Okay,” Tom says.

6. He turns around, his back facing the door. He picks up his leg and with his boot back kicks the door.

7. One solid knock, the door pops open.

8. “No one has moved in here yet,” I exclaim.

9. “You were just over here the other day, and it looks the same as we left,” Frog adds.

10. “I am going to my room, I am going to pretend we still live here,” I mention while walking to my former room.

11. My bedroom almost looks the same as it did when we moved here but appears much smaller. I enter the room, I look at the half-replaced window in the back of the room, the window I threw my computer-monitor through.

12. I begin to walk out of my room, I say, “dad you can come out now, you are re-welcomed into your house, you do not have to hide, you just have to be better than a sickness.”

13. Suddenly the front door slams shut.

14. “Is that what you call that, a sickness,” a deep sounding voice utters.

ION

15. Walking down the stairs, I hear Steph ask, “did you hear that?”

16. “Maybe we should leave,” Tom says.

17. “I think that voice was my dad,” I state.

18. “Sorry Mr. Flippy,” Tom shouts into the environment.

19. “He is not all that sorry dad; remember you just must be better than a sickness! We will be at the mansion when you want to come home,” I say.

20. Leaving the front door open as we leave, leaving in a rush, I look behind me and watch an unseen being slam the door shut, shut so hard that one of the hinges on the door broke.

21. Once we were in the mansion and the doors were locked, doors began to move on their own, especially the closet doors.

22. Things quickly began to get tossed out of the closets.

23. We rush upstairs to my bedroom.

24. We rush over to my bed.

25. The closet doors begin to violently swing open and closed.

26. “Is that your dad Jill,” Steph asks.

27. “Maybe,” I say.

28. I walk over to the closet door, I yell, “I am not scared of you!”

29. I begin to pick up some of the stuff being tossed out of the closet. I noticed things being tossed out that I had not recently put into the closet.

30. I picked up one of the photos that was tossed close to my feet.

31. I begin to recall the many lives I lived here.

32. I remember growing up, my family, children, friends and mostly *Paper Corp.*

33. “*This is my house Jill, this is our house,*” I hear my dad say from within the closet.

34. “Then it is,” I yell back.

35. The room quickly grows silent and calm.

Times later

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

36. I say to my dad, it is a good thing being home. We must have been away for ten years.

37. “Yes, Jill it is good to be home,” dad says.

38. “Jill Rug it is good that you are home,” Mom says, pouring me a fresh glass of orange juice.

39. “Credit to dad, he can, and is—sometimes a sickness,” I say while cackling.

The End

Chapter 1

Game Show

本々々々

赤

Game Show

Game Show

I walk out of the door to my recently purchased home, I take a large breath of the fresh fall air. The summers leaves once full of life, now mostly dead and dying and lying on the ground radiating am still alive! I can almost smell the decaying brown, orange, and red leaves as I look at them.

2. *O yeah, this is the purpose to my life!*

3. I glance at my watch, anxiously waiting for Dora and her new boyfriend, *Matthew*. We planned on getting together to celebrate my recent purchase, which was my three-story Victorian-style home in which I am proud of, it fits with my upper-class lifestyle...plus the shutters are red which seems to fit—with my once blonde, now changed to brown hair and innocent blue eyes. *A man wearing a suit.*

4. I could not wait to show her, it resided in the same little town we grew up in; we both went to school here. Matthew did as well, but I do not consider it much, he was a couple grades lower than Dora and me.

5. *I have made it, I did it*, I consider expressing as I visualize Dora walking out of her car.

6. Not only was Dora and Matthew coming, but my all-time-best-bud-ever is coming up with our old buddy GB who now has blond hair, is extremely attractive, can wear makeup, plus... she dresses as a teenage young lady: *pink and purple.*

7. I wonder what they will say about this place.

8. I open back up my front door, place my thumb over the top of my hot tobacco and walk onto the inside of my new home...

9. "Life is good!" I grab the newspaper off my coffee table and sit down on the couch.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

10. The smell of fall still lingering in my body; I begin to wonder where I first experienced the fall sight, I witnessed...

11. *O yeah, I remember, it was in a movie, a scary movie,* (it amazes me how I can see something on television, place it in my brain and wait to receive what I have seen. The thought just playfully waits, weeks, months, sometimes years, and then resurfaces.)

12. *Odd!*

13. Not much longer—as I am thinking—I see Matthew’s head peep in the front door window.

14. *Knock*

15. *Knock*

16. “Matt!” I say getting up off the couch, setting the bowl down in the ashtray.

17. “Morning!” I say as I open the front door.

18. “So, this is your house,” Matthew says confirming his suspicion.

19. “I drove around the block a few times to sure myself.”

20. “Nice home!” Matthew says in one big breath.

21. “Where is Dora?” I ask.

22. “Out there roaming around, wondering if this is the house,” Matthew answers.

23. I look to my right, I see Dora.

24. “Dora, over here,” I exclaim waving my arm.

25. Dora quickly walks up the steps.

26. “I am so glad you made it,” I utter, giving Dora a hug.

27. “Let me show you the inside, this house is marvelous, I bought it for a cheap price.”

28. “Check out the wood! It is like the inhabitants of the ancient,” I say while laughing.

29. “Ancient inhabited, what is that supposed to mean, wealthy or something?” Dora asks.

30. I look up, I give it a thought and say, “yes, if you see the wealth in it.”

31. Matthew interrupts, “you say that like as if you have had other.”

32. “Well, I did, like I mentioned, I got it for a cheap price,” I reveal.

33. “That means there is something wrong with it...”

34. “There is nothing wrong with it,” I demand.

35. “There is not anything in this world for free Geoff,” Matthew explains.

36. A bit humiliated I say, “I will add onto my savings and fix the place.”

37. Dora walking around the house asks, “is that why growing up you insisted on all us friends being wise and getting a savings.”

38. “To deep for me Dora,” I command and add, “let us go outside, I want to show you the back yard.”

39. Walking out the front door and onto the left side of the house, I begin pointing with my finger saying, “all this land back here is mine, it came with the house.”

40. “That is what makes this house so extraordinary, not that the house is so rich, but there is more than enough land back here to earn back twice as much as I bought the house for.”

41. “And earning back twice as much is a good thing!”

42. “As we speak it is earning back twice as much money—as I bought the house for; plus, I still will get to keep the house.”

43. “Good deal Geoffrey,” Matthew says, “but obviously there is a catch. I guess the back yard here floods or something.”

44. “Matthew is right,” Dora explains, “if the back yard does not flood then there must be ghosts in the house or something.”

45. Matthew agrees, “if not ghosts, bugs, rats or snakes infest the place.”

46. I looked toward the sky, a bit discouraged, I was hoping for another comment other than a negative comment. *Showing off to get the praise from Matt isn't happening, thanks Matty, now I must be positive.*

47. “I will fix that Matthew,” I answer.

48. “Yeah, sure you will Geoffrey,” Matthew says.

49. “Why do you got to be like that,” I say, “I mean look at this place, it is rich, and the back yard is huge... this is my ticket in Matt, my golf sweater, my jacket, my slice of humanity!!! You could not own a place like this. Plus, you live in an apartment, what do you know?”

50. Matthew backs off the conversation, I look at him, waiting to see his slick back, brown hair, and brown eye appearance—snap back, but he did not; instead, he gave a polite nod.

51. Dora looks at me and says, “you sure are touchy Geoffrey, what has gotten into you.”

52. I did not want to be honest with her, I figured she would not understand, and I did not want to reveal I have issues; none of the friends, including Matthew and Dora have esteemed me in years; because of that I accepted that none would esteem, so I created our held-together-friendship.

53. I looked at him wondering if he had been esteemed of such and that is why he spoke negatively of what is obviously a dream home.

54. *Speaking negatively about this house??? What I told him I had paid for it would have fooled anyone!*

55. “Where is GB and Kelly, I thought they would be here any moment now,” I say breaking up the friction between Matthew and me.

56. “I thought you knew,” Matthew answers.

57. *There is friction again!*

58. As soon as Matthew opened his mouth—I knew he thought he was better than me, like I could not pull together a weekend party.

59. “I do Matt, I was just joking, I am going to call them right now,” I say.

60. I walk inside the house; warm air meets me on the inside.

61. I picked up the phone.

62. *Ring*

63. *Ring*

64. “Hello,” I hear Kelly say.

65. “Are you and GB coming over today, Matthew and Dora are here. I believe we could have a fun time together.”

66. “GB do you want to go over to Geoffrey’s? Matthew and Dora are there,” I hear through the phone-speaker.

67. *Mumbling...*

68. Yeah, Geoff, we will be over in a couple of hours; did you end up moving to 53 Tub Drive?” Kelly asks.

69. “Yes”

70. I hung up the phone.

71. I take my bowl out of the ashtray. I scrape out the remains of the burnt tobacco. I walk over to my clay jar—with a free lid on top. I casually take off the lid. I pinch in my finger some PA, anxiously desiring the clean drag—once lit. I stuff the golden tobacco in the bowl.

72. I pick up the lighter and walk back outside ready to spark up at any moment.

Game Show 2

I see Matthew walk up to GB’s grey car, *a Saab*.

2. GB, Kelly!” Matthew says full of excitement, “I have not seen you in years!”

3. I did not notice the moment. I spark the bowl.

4. I wave my hand happy to see them. I invite them inside.

5. They both hop out of the car with a mouthful of boring things to talk about.

6. Kelly hears a noise, what is the banging Geoff,” she asks.

7. “A dude came up from Massachusetts, tried selling me a new closet or has sold me a new closet. Come to my bedroom and you shall see!”

8. All five walk up the beautiful wooden stairs to Geoffrey’s bedroom.

9. “You are done,” Geoffrey exclaims as they enter the bedroom. The five friends walk into the closet.

10. On and on they talk, “I am getting another bowl pack,” I say—turning around, walking down the steps to my front door.

11. A ghost wave meets me at the door, I pack the bowl.

12. On and on they went, I packed another bowl.

13. *I got to talk about something, anything!*

14. “Hey, you know what I figured out?” I say, adding “virtual reality is now!”

15. All four stop at my words, aware that they must include me in the conversation.

16. Which makes me add, I pause...

17. “What do you mean Geoff?” Matthew asks.

18. “X1 seed grower, lets one key the code to the plant seed, the seed I can grow,” I answer.

19. Kelly states, “is that not the same thing as growing in a lab?”

20. Dora says, “it is, but the *Game-World* bought the idea.”

21. “Labs and Games, that sounds like a biological disorder,” GB states.

22. “Not just a disorder,” I say, but the gaming world has been looking for *leading* graphics for years and finally they have the stuff.”

23. “What stuff?” Kelly asks.

24. “The earth in the palm of their hands, we will be rich,” I say.

25. “First type me up lettuce,” Dora demands.

26. “Well, it will be a while, first we need all the codes and then we pick a code,” I say.

27. “Where are the codes?” Matthew asks.

28. “Matt, I mean you know, if you know,” I state.

29. “Matthew pauses for a moment, he adds, “like all codes.”

30. “I probably lost you,” Matthew says, “but to simplify... if all is out there, would we not have created an A.I. to travel through time to protect us from moments of lack.”

31. “What is your point?” Kelly asks.
32. “Lettuce! We can do that,” Matt says, “but trusting your own all-knowing mind can be harder than me simply telling you about it.”
33. Dora adds, “is that what the lab was doing?”
34. “Why do you ask?” I question.
35. “Because in college they are starting to talk like that.”
36. “I think the lab was, but somehow *Gaming* stole the idea—to attract the newer generation,” Matthew states.
37. “So do and...” GB begins saying,
38. Kelly finishes, “play your higher self, your all-knowing self.
39. “Let me tell you all a story...” I speak.
40. “Knowing all.”
41. “I know that those woods, deep down by the berry patches, on the smooth flat, around the berry patches is a *game show*,” I state, making it up as I went.
42. “What is the show,” Matthew asks.
43. “*It’s Out Now*,” I say in a thrilling tone.
44. “What is it about?” Kelly asks.
45. “Well, I do not want to give away too much, but it is a game show, this one is I.O.N., *it’s out now*; large amounts of forced energy coming at us. *We will know all*, that is if we win, like the game written by that guy... what was his name again?”
46. “Brendon,” Dora exclaims.
47. “Exactly, that guy! Like Brendon wrote in the book, in the epilogue, Gabriel says, ‘there are big, grey stone like creatures billions of years ago,’ I say.
48. “Like a past lived game show, with all the answers,” Matthew states and questions.
49. “Exactly, and our job is to find a normal reality, to find our way home,” I say—as I begin leading the way into the forest.
50. “There is an old *game show* down this way,” I say—pointing into the forest—making it up or what most call lying.

51. “Civilization once long ago lived here, as far back as the dinosaurs, they mapped and configured every grain of dirt,” I state.

52. Kelly says, “you are just saying that.”

53. “Exactly Kelly,” I say, “but if we are not the truth, if we do not test, we will never be able to talk—without the hand of another!”

54. Kelly, without doubt says, “okay Geoff, you lead the way.

55. We walk an hour into the woods.

Game Show 3

There isn’t *nothing out here*,” I begin to doubt.

2. “Well, it was your idea,” Matthew says.

3. I need to figure out something quick. “You got me,” I say out loud, throwing up my arms and hands.

4. In doubt I say, “you know what Matthew, I just simply do not have to be me anymore, it is not like I was not using the ancient quantum system to begin with,” I answer.

5. “Okay, then you are wrong,” Matthew says.

6. Frustrated I turn around.

7. I stop, I could barely find the words for what I was seeing. I point to the others, look in the berry bushes!!!

8. “Matthew, I utter, “look, a *game show!*”

9. “What?” Matthew says full of surprise. He quickly turns around, “a blue, red and orange striped carnival trailer, but this one is made of the sticks of the forest.”

10. Matthew looks up towards the stick trailer, he reads in colored paint, written by the hand of a child, he reads: *Game Show*.

11. Kelly soon looks; GB and Dora do as well. “My goodness, what is this?”

12. A man, a blonde colored hair—with stripes of red—man appears in the game show window.

13. “Welcome,” says the man, “welcome one, welcome all,” the blonde, youthful, healthy attractive man says.

14. “This is a game show, a show of the real game that Brendon the Great wrote about in the book, the one that Mr. Clint B. found.

15. In this show you will find the reenactment of billions of years of history, depending on which show you watch,” the handsome blonde-haired man says.

16. The man was extremely friendly, and I felt comfortable around him; I ask, “what will today’s reenactment bring?”

17. “You as, in the show? The man says laughing.

18. “I can sense you five crossed a purposeful fence—although all seems simple—I promise you the game is much denser,” the man says—as a trained, skillful traveling-carnival worker speaks.

19. “What is that supposed to mean,” Kelly interrupts.

20. “You!”,

21. “Who,” Kelly demands.

22. “Him,” the man says while pointing at me.

23. I step toward the stick trailer.

24. “Pick a prize, any prize and you can have it...”

25. *“Take this ball in your hand and toss it in the pan, if you do you get the worth of a brand-new van, thirty thousand in a golden can, will be in your hand.”*

26. I stood looking at this sparkling masculine blond-haired Ox.

27. For a moment I gaze upon him; around and around I went in my mind. I begin to hear the man laugh.

28. “He cannot pick one, he cannot play,” the man states.

29. He is right I could not pick one and if I could of—I would have picked everything; I believe he picked up on that and began to laugh harder.

30. The more he spoke, and the more fear I was, the more power and laughter he received.

31. *Stop*

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

32. *Stop!*

33. *Geoffrey, walk away, I tell myself.*

34. I pull together the little strength I have. I pick my hand up, I attempt to say screw you and turn and slowly walk in the other direction.

35. I take the ball in my hand playfully. I look towards my friends giving an optimistic smile.

36. I toss.

37. I do not look; I lose my concentration. I hear a gentle clang...

38. *"The man can, you heard the wam and here you are my man, thirty thousand in this here golden can,"* the blonde-haired man says presenting a golden can before us.

39. Surprised, I take the can out of his hand...

40. As I do, he and the carnival trailer disappear.

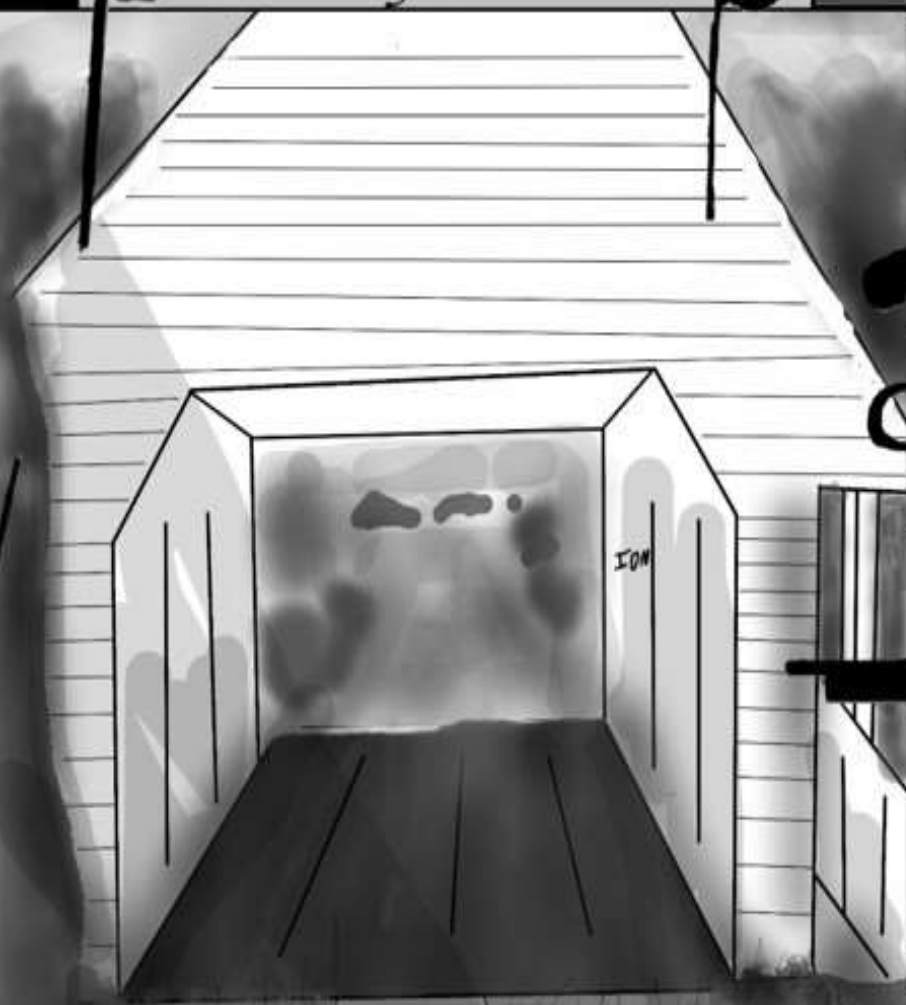
41. I look in the can I was given and pull out with my hand a stack of one-hundred-dollar bills, thirty thousand in the can.

42. Matthew comes running towards me and pulls the money out of my hand, "what should we do with this?"

43. I say, "let us be careful."

44. We walked back home.

Chapter 2



Blind Rhyme

Blind Rhyme

Can you believe that?" I ask walking up the steps to my house, gazing at the golden can. "Yeah, I can believe that" Matthew states.

2. Matthew quickly takes in a big breath of fresh air, a big breath of fresh air—preparing himself for a few long sentences...

3. "When I was younger, before I met most of you, I would walk from my parents' house—to look for other children. I rarely, if ever found someone I could spend time with. Most of the time I played in the bushes, because I feared the adults; someone told me a creep drove around town looking to snatch children off the street."

4. "There was a bridge—most of the children played at, or in the least that is where I thought most of them played at. I never approached the bridge because I was insecure: *if the other children rejected me—the scars would have been too great.*"

5. "Matthew continues, "Betty..."

6. "Betty is what some children called her, she and her parents owned a rag shop, rather shall I say cloth shop."

7. "Hold on a second Matthew," I blurt. I pour a cup of cool-aid, I flip through the radio stations, I open a window; a soft breeze pushes its way through the open window.

8. Matthew watches: he looks at me—to see if he can finish his talk... "Well, she was under the bridge,"

9. "Betty," I say letting Matthew know I was still listening.

10. "She was under the bridge more than often. I figured she must not fit in—you know—because most of the others were not around her. I decided I would be that one to be around her, I

would fit in with her, into what she was doing. I knew it could be a good time for me because she would possibly introduce me to some of the other more stimulating children.”

11. “Betty liked me; we became good friends.”

12. “To make a long story short, I never truly became close friends with the rest of the children, but I did become close to a secret, a secret Betty told me.”

13. Kelly anxiously asked, “what is the secret?”

“Well, the bridge apparently has power, and the other children knew that...”

14. “They would go to the bridge to use that power!”

15. “One time I doubtfully saw Betty disappear into the bridge wall,” Matthew states full of wonder.

16. “You mean that covered bridge, the one we walked by every day to school, the one straight down the road?” I ask.

17. “Yes!” Matthew says full of excitement.

18. Kelly utters, “let us walk down there and receive a good look at this wonder—we never knew existed.

19. “What shall we do with this golden cup?” I ask.

20. GB quickly puts on a two-piece swimsuit and leads us down to the covered bridge.

21. Walking on the small, paved path, a short distance from the covered bridge GB says, “I have not been down here since I was a young child.

22. GB has gorgeous blonde hair, and nice skin; she is extremely attractive.

23. Growing up I did not look at her much or rather shall I express him; I did not know, nor was I taught how to treat a boy that dressed and looked like a lady. I was too scared to think about it, I still am. Sometimes when she is around or even when I think she is and is not—I feel extremely threatened by passionate fire, the type of fire that separates humans from the wild kingdom.

24. I have looked into GB’s beautiful blue eyes and attempted to communicate it, but to no meaning; *creation*

apparently leaves all with a huge threat, most men respect that, some would dare to chase it, to dangle off a huge cliff as it!

25. “There is a small stream under the bridge,” GB says running through the tall grass and down the bank.

26. I step up on the higher ground and seemingly watch GB grace the tall grass as a masculine lady, my treat, or was it?

27. Whatever it is—that is not what we were here for; I want to see if we can win another *Golden-Cup* or *maybe the ecstasy of fire*. Or was I?

28. “Matt, what is up with this bridge,” I say grabbing one of the bridge beams.

29. “Geoff,” knock it off,” Matthew says.

30. “What? I am not doing anything,” I answer.

31. “You know Geoff, your times coming,” Matthew says.

32. “What?” I yell into the fall yet feeling like the summer air...

33. “Are you messing with me?” I pick up my head and my arm, ready to swing my fist.

34. To my utter surprise I found no Matthew, in fact I found no Kelly, Dora and I no longer hear GB by the river.

35. “Matt,” I continue yelling, “where are you?”

36. I look straight ahead toward the small, paved path at the end of the bridge; I look behind me, I turn around, I look towards the wooden wall—that was to my left and then I look right, “Matt, Dora,” I yell into the summer air.

37. I begin to cover it up! This is too far out of reality, the Golden Cup was too far out of reality, yet Matthew was there; the Golden cup was excusable by Mathew's authority, this experience is directed towards me, my responsibility!!!

I turn, I look straight ahead of me, in the direction of the left side of the old wooden bridge wall. I see a lot of writings, some done with pencil, some done with pen. I see hearts, good wishes and then I notice a strange appearing carving, a ghost writing in pen, it simply appeared before my eyes, I watch a new writing... a new writing, carved into the wood, yet soaked in black pen ink.

38. *What does it say?*

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

39. I attempt to make out the words, “I see you might...”

40. *No... it does not say that.*

41. I read out loud:

“I see you want to play a game with me. You are reading something you should not be. I think you know what this is about, whoever loses cuts the lass out.”

42. I stumble backwards, paranoid—I had just been infected with something, something I do not want.

43. “Geoffrey, are you okay?”

44. “Dora,” I utter—watching her walk onto the planks of the covered bridge. I look back towards the wall, the wall I just had read from, and I now no longer see the carving!

45. “What is wrong?” asks Matthew.

46. “Ah...” I stumble finding my words; I did not want to admit the small amount of pressure I now face to cut out a lass.

47. I begin to cover it up.

48. “We should get out of this spot,” I say.

49. “Okay Geoffrey,” Dora states, she turns her head and begins talking to Kelly.

50. I pace back and forth for a moment.

51. “We should really leave, if we leave now perhaps nothing will follow us back,” I exclaim.

52. “Are you okay Geoffrey,” Matthew asks.

53. “I am feeling sort of claustrophobic,” I cry, “c’mon we are leaving,” I command.

54. I begin walking back home expecting the others to follow.

55. Behind me I hear Matthew say, “GB c’mon we are leaving.”

56. “Okay.”

Blind Rhyme 2

Once back home I played everything all right, hoping my own memories would be forgotten, or at least the memories I made while at the bridge. I feared that—that would get harder over time; it did get harder once Matthew asked about the golden cup.

2. “You keep it Matthew, take it home with you, after all it is kind of your type thing,” I say with praise.

3. “What? Thirty thousand dollars?” Matthew snaps.

4. “Plus, the Golden cup?” Kelly adds.

5. “You earned that Geoffrey,” Dora adds.

6. I explain, “you do not know what I just saw under that bridge!”

7. “Well, what did you see, because I am sure I saw the same thing; I was standing by you the whole time,” Matthew states.

8. “Nothing” I say forcefully placing the Golden cup into Matthew’s hand. “I am calling it a night, everyone good evening, go home, suddenly I feel not so great.”

9. “What?”

10. “No Geoffrey,” GB cries.

11. “Yes” I say, taking my arms and gently hugging the others out the front door; I lock the door. I close my curtains; I peek out of them making sure the others have left out of my driveway.

12. I walk into my bathroom, open the medicine cabinet, and take a few pain killers out of the bottle; I pour a glass of water. I swallow both pills as I walk towards the couch; I lay down.

13. “*I isn’t cutting the lass out,*” I find myself yelling the next morning as I attempt to get out of bed.

14. I look around my house, everything looks the same as when I went to sleep.

15. I shake my head, mocking my own words that I had spoken in my sleep: *I isn’t cutting the lass out.*

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

16. I look over at my phone, my landline phone... I noticed someone left a couple of messages.

17. I quickly picked up my cellphone; I want to see if both phones were called.

18. *Matthew called!* I mumble.

19. I call my voicemail; I dial the password...

20. "Geoffrey, what happened?" Matthew says recorded on my answer machine.

21. Next message, "hey it is Kelly, what happened, I thought we were having fun. Thirty thousand is a fun time, Geoffrey."

22. *End of new messages.*

23. Darn, my memories begin to fight what is!

24. Think about it Geoffrey, you know what this is about, cutting the lass out.

25. *Stop!*

26. Take her stuff Geoffrey, cut her out!

27. *"Stop!"*

28. *"Stop!"* I yell into the empty room.

29. Darn I am starting to lose it!

30. I will go to the store. *Yeah, Geoff a nice soda always calmed me down and cheers me up.*

31. I pass by the bridge as I walk toward the store; I shake my head in disbelief.

32. "I will be all right," I whisper.

Chapter 3

Jeff's Gas

59.77

Per
Gal

4.99

per
gal

6.98

\$1.99

Harver
2023

Cut It Out Geoff



Cut it out Geoff

Another day another dollar,” I say as I unlock the door to my little country store.

2. It was not the purpose in the beginning to be a store, but a gas station. But as time went on, I could not resist making a complete store after noticing most of the children in the town spending more money than meeting their needs.

3. *This must be money.*

4. I stocked it with all the type of stuff they requested: soda, chips, smokes, movies, and anything else they would want after school.

5. *Big money!*

6. And not only big money but I love my job; I love it so much, most of the time my store is open!

7. Excited to walk in, I flip on the light switch, I look up and notice the bells tied to the door, I tied them to the door—so that they will sound as a customer walks in.

8. *Flip!*

9. The lights are on.

10. Wonderful goods fill my nostrils: coffee, pastries, and candy.

11. *Good!* It looks the same as when I closed: clean and ready for customers.

12. I toss the money bag on the checkout counter.

13. I walk over to the cooler and take out a fresh, cold soda. I twist and pop off the lid; one sweet guzzle after another. Therefore, I love this store a lot, not only do the children love me to supply their needs, especially for sweets, but it gives me the power to supply my own desire for sweets.

14. This, all created by listening to my parents, “the people need a gas station,” they would say.

15. So that is what I did, I gave them a gas station, as well as a *Munchie stop* for the other children.

16. Before I forget to mention, I love my parents!

17. I set my eyes fixed on the latest music videos. I look up, I look at the cash register—I just recently put money into; I never leave money in the store, every night it goes home with me; if there is extra...to the bank it goes.

18. The bells on the door ring, I get up off my seat.

19. “Chuck!” I welcome him as he enters the store.

20. “Hey Geoffrey, how is business?” Chuck asks.

21. “Great, just got a fresh stock of candy and smokes,” I answer.

22. “How much did you spend?” Chuck asks.

23. “Seven hundred dollars. Why? What are you thinking about, opening a store?”

24. “No, I simply knew you wanted to tell someone,” Chuck answers.

25. I add, “yeah seven hundred dollars, and this all profit from the past several months.”

26. “Nice,” Chucks says, and adds, “can I get a pack of the reds.”

27. I pull a pack off the top rack, the shelf above my head.

28. “What are you watching?” Chuck asks.

29. “Music videos, the normal,” I answer.

30. Chuck walks out of the store, he says, “have a good one Geoffrey.”

31. I glance at him walking out of the store, I notice a van pulling in front of the back side of the gas pumps.

32. *I want a van like that, I could use it to travel the country.*

33. A lot of the time I dream about getting a van, I map out where I would want to travel, what I would want to eat, and places I would want to stay.

34. The van I am looking at is grey, with a blue stripe in the center, it more likely seats seven. It is not a cargo van; I still debate whether I want a cargo van, or a family van.

35. I rush over to the cash register—as the van owner walks into the store.

36. *Ding!*

37. *Ding!*

38. The upper doorbells ring. I gave the van driver a friendly nod.

39. He tosses a twenty-dollar bill on the counter. He walks opposite me, out of the door, and towards his van.

40. I notice I am hungry.

41. I walk over and gaze at the fresh jerky stock I had just ordered. *Fresh Jerky off the stock truck!*

42. I argue with myself if I should eat it; it is more than expensive, something made for a mountain man, and it is so good!

43. I should seriously have someone to do this type of work for me; if I did, I could save a lot more money.

44. I peeled back the plastic sealing the Jerky in the bag. *I could eat this whole entire store in one sitting, and I have, that is why the store is still open.*

45. I rush over to the cooler; I grab a soda.

46. I watched some more music videos.

47. "I sure could have used the thirty thousand dollars, I could have bought more than enough for a few months," I take a gulp of soda.

48. I find the "I do not want to think about this thing that just moved two inches in the right of my brain."

49. *Think about what?*

50. I panic!

51. I fight!

52. *No!*

53. I am not cutting it out.

54. I close the store earlier than expected, stuffing deep inside the small struggle to not think about it, think about what I have read, the rhyme!

55. "Geoffrey!" I hear. I turn as I am locking up the store for the night.

56. Who could this be?

57. "Do you mind one last customer?" Mag asks.

58. "No not in the least. What can I help you with?" I answer.

59. "Beer Geoffrey! You are the only one in this small town that will sell it to me," Mag states.

60. I smell the fresh smoke of a recent fire on Mag's clothing. "Party?" I ask.

61. "Yeah, something like that; Tank is having a get together in the back mountains, the spot by the pond," Mag says with style.

62. "Tonight?" I question.

63. "Yes, you are invited—if that—will persuade you to sell me the beer. I need it Geoff, Tank's best bud will be there, if I cannot get beer, I cannot be around the older men," Mag expresses.

64. "Are there going to be younger children there?" I query.

65. "Some!"

66. "I will sell you some beer, but you got to promise me, you must promise me that none of the children will be drinking it," I answer.

67. "Some beer?" Mag questions with worry, "what does that mean? I need at least six twelve packs."

68. I consider, *I want to go to a party tonight, I will not worry*, "get as much as you need," I say.

69. I walk behind the counter—towards the cash register. Mag begins to pull case after case out of the cooler and walk them up to the checkout counter.

70. "Wow Mag, that is seven cases."

71. "I need eight, but I should consider you," Mag states.

72. "Eight!!!" I shouted.

73. Mag places a one-hundred-dollar bill on the counter.

74. Before I finished ringing Mag had all eight cases in the back of her pickup truck.

75. Mag pops her head back into the store, "party starts at seven!"

76. "Okay," I say and finish locking up the store; I drive home. I take a shower.

Cut it out Geoff 2

It is about six o'clock, just enough time to get something to eat.
2. I get back into my car.

3. Moments later I am driving up the old dirt road leading to the back woods of a mountain, by the pond.

4. Dusk! A cold breeze: forest creatures can be heard throughout the dark, thick, fog covered forest. I listen hoping to hear Mag and some of the others.

5. I wonder where their cars could be.

6. I begin to walk down the narrow dirt path—that leads to the pond.

7. I hear people. *Yeah!* Mag, Joft and the rest!

8. I make myself known.

9. “Geoffrey!” the others express.

10. Joft yells, “Geoffrey good thing you came.”

11. I walk to the small cooler; I open it up; I grab a beer.

12. I play with the top of the beer can for a moment recognizing it, recognizing it could be a long night. I pop open the can of beer.

13. “What are we eating tonight?” I shout, fitting myself in with the others.

14. “Fish” Mag answers.

15. “I am going for a swim,” I say taking off my shirt.

16. Stick says, “hold on a moment Geoffrey, we got to drink some beer first; swimming just isn’t swimming unless we are intoxicated.”

17. The others laugh.

18. “Oh Yeah,” I mumble.

19. I walk over to Stick and sit down on the logs placed next to the fire, greeting the others that were sitting.

20. I guzzle my first beer.

21. I pop open the second.

22. I guzzled the second beer.

23. “Hold on a minute Geoffrey, we got all night,” Stick says.

24. No! No! Drink yours,” I say.

25. Stick being challenged begins to guzzle his beer. We both guzzled in some sort of dare. Others began to follow.

26. Four beers later, I say, “Now we swim.”

27. Four of us rushed into the water.

28. We began splashing and kidding. I splash Mag in the face, “cut it out Geoffrey,” Mag cries.

29. *Cut it out!*
30. I pause for a moment.
31. "What did you say," I yell and begin walking out of the water.
32. "Where are you going Geoffrey?" I hear someone from behind me ask.
33. I reach the shoreline and begin to walk up the small hill leading to the dirt path, the one that leads to my car.
34. I fell to the ground. The world around me is spinning.
35. *Oh no*, I drank too much beer.
36. I vomit; I sleep.

Cut it out Geoff 3

Birds chirping. I notice I am full of body sweat; I am soaked. The morning's light is like a furnace. My back hurt, the ground was lumpy; I did not consider that I would have slept the entire night in that spot. Rocks are everywhere.

2. I see the others partly awake, sitting next to the fire.
3. I begin to walk towards them.
4. "Geoffrey," Joft yells
5. I throw my hand up, a sign to say I hear him.
6. Munchies spread around the fire pit. Nothing that will satisfy the nausea inside.
7. "What happened last night?" I ask.
8. "I do not know Geoff... you seemingly passed out. We went up, but you refused to wake," Mag boldly says.
9. Another interrupts, "you kept murmuring in your sleep, something about not cutting it out."
10. Mag says, "you said, a couple times, 'I will not cut it out!'"
11. All looked at me confused. I must play cool, I do not want anyone finding out, plus I am nauseous, "I got to get home," I say.
12. "What are you sick?" Mag asks.
13. "Horribly sick Mag," I answer, turning my back I begin to walk toward the narrow path leading to my car.
14. I cannot drive home, my body screams.

15. *Hang in there*, I say to myself.

16. I find my car; I get onto the inside.

17. The smell of my car freshener meets me as I open the door; I sit down.

18. I place my hands on the steering wheel, my head soon follows.

19. Ten minutes later I woke back up. Sweat is pouring off my head. I look at the thick leafy forest in front of me. Sun light peaked in and out of the trees—as they moved in the wind. birds call everywhere.

20. This is not the place to be now, not in my drunkenness; last night's alcohol in this morning's sun makes an extremely regrettable moment.

21. I pop the automatic transmission into reverse. I back up. I drive back down the old dirt road—I came from.

22. I have got to get home; I am supposed to be at work in the store now! *Not exactly though*, but I should have it open at ten o'clock.

23. I rush into my apartment, my head still spinning from the drinks last night. I strip naked and rush into the shower, hoping the cool water will wake reality up and scream, *I am alive!*

24. As I am about to leave for the store, I notice my phone answering machine light is blinking.

25. I should check it. I press the play button.

26. “Geoffrey it is Matthew, I have been spending thirty thousand dollars, and I am having the time of my life! Where are you at? I want to come back up to Vermont, to your new home. I will be there this weekend; you cannot say no. Bye!”

27. *Beep!*

28. *End of new messages.*

29. Hmm

30. I rushed out of the door. I get into my car; without a thought I rush to work.

31. I look at my watch—as I get out of my car, nine thirty in the morning.

32. I quickly opened the store. I take delight in putting up the open flag—in front of the store.

33. I open a fresh bag of coffee; I start a fresh pot of coffee. I walk to the cooler; I grab fresh, crisp, cold seltzer water.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

34. I notice a little alcohol buzz still lingering, but not enough to feel sick, good thing!

35. Matthew... I begin to think—as I take sips of my water. I sat down. I turn on the television.

36. Thirty thousand, I almost forgot.

37. Something pulls in a physically contrary way of that of my body.

38. *I bet you will not cut it out.*

39. If I pull back, that will mean thinking I must cut it out.

40. I know!

41. I attempt to forget.

42. I will go and clean the dust off the items for sale.

43. Tik!

44. Tik, slowly the day moves onward. I mop, I wash the walls several times.

45. *What to do?*

46. I will smoke a bowl. Prince A!

47. I stuff a pinch into my expensive one-hundred-dollar pipe. Surely a luxury. I spark my lighter. It all will be right.

48. “Geoffrey,” I hear to my left. I look, I see a roofless jeep pull into the gas station.

49. I wave my hand.

50. “Store is still here,” Mak yells out of his roofless jeep window, jumping out of the jeep.

51. “Best thing in town,” I mention.

52. We four walked into the store. They begin to look at the items being sold.

53. Suddenly I feel better; I look out the window, I see a pleasant sunny day.

54. I begin to chat, casually scanning the items as the customers came to check out.

55. “Matthew will be up this weekend,” someone mentions as they leave the store.

56. My heart sank and began to wrestle in my mind; *I will not cut it out!*

57. I notice GB walking into the store, I make my way over to talk with her.

58. GB explains to Geoffrey her rhyme, the one she was horrified to read:

*“Fire, fire,
Your love gets higher,
O, my, my sire, can we buy her?
Falling from higher, you are all a liar.”*

59. She failed to admit she and Geoffrey began to burn.

60. Geoffrey says, “honestly GB, what happened, no fire, only fall, fresh falling leaves in fall; our scare crows fall.”

61. GB begins to whisper, “big old box television, analog was the signal back then, back when the big old box television picked it up. Analog signals were told to me to have shut down completely in the year two thousand nine.”

62. That rhyme I found on the bridge wall, I went to show it to Dora, and it had disappeared; I was horrified, I still am...

63. “I have thought hard about this...”

64. “Payphones went out about the same time.”

65. “Why-O-Why did Analog shut down?”

66. “I waited all my youth to buy me and own an Analog television. Mentally I prepared to leave it on ABC, NBC, or CBS, freely, over the air—all day long!”

67. “Once I had stable money in two thousand nine, *which was from an inheritance*, out goes the analog.”

68. “What could this be about?”

69. “Was analogs removal a hallucination—brought on by easy money or was it something much different?”

70. “I could easily think to give away the inheritance money—meaning technology would return to normal; I could then turn the knob on the old television and catch up on the news or newest shows on: NBC, ABC or CBS.”

71. “Back when in Northern Vermont—in the nineties—I could receive all three channels freely. Would that have fared out?”

72. “My controversy to the above idea is I am not all that sure if analog were sending signals in the years 2000-2009.”

73. “I confess in and around the year 2003—while in Connecticut—I believe I saw a familiar broadcast over an Analog signal.”

74. “In the year 2000, similarly I believe I witnessed an extremely snowy analog broadcast of TCN.”

75. “Although this could be expected from a/the possible three thousand survivors on earth—after a fictional Y2K, I don’t know. I will leave open the question: was analog shut down in the year two thousand, at Y2K?”

76. “The previous several paragraphs—I have spoken—all—lead up to this one mind-boggling, insane *thought* I had in the year two thousand—as I attempted to travel from Vermont to Florida. The insane thought: *was I somehow being watched, signaled out, like an outsider, an outsider of the entire earth, set up and recorded.* It was as if they, the *American people* had a secret they had kept from me. One excellent way to explain this idea comes from the movie *Truman Show*. As in the movie, Truman, the main character could sense another reality, a reality that was more alive, as the producer presented itself to be, as the storyline was—so was I, that was the *thought*.”

77. “At the age of seventeen I had peeked at the World Wide Web; I lustfully and accidentally found a gore website. This beforehand I knew was wrong.”

78. “After my peek I denied the moment, I denied the brain cells. “To far out of the normal reality GB,” I say to myself.”

79. “If I had only confessed this part of me sooner—before the year two thousand—I might have now understood what had happened before the attacks at and around 911.”

80. “Up to just recently I thought some of my out-of-control thoughts were because I never made one with them; as I continually fight them—they become more and more of a sickness.”

81. “But what if..”

82. “What if this part of my brain was to—before I compressed my thoughts—interpret the doings of the World Wide Web? The radiation of the WWW obviously. What if these strange thoughts: *I as being on stage kind of like the movie The Truman Show*, were like the thoughts given around Analog

television, but these strange radioactive thoughts now given around the internet.”

83. “Be honest...Geoffrey.”

84. “Subliminal messages have you heard?”

85. “What about small amounts of radiation? What about when you turn your back to the television and notice and hear through the TV a boyfriend and girlfriend and can predict which one comes out to be the winner?”

86. “Was there always a winner? Despite the winner was winning without the winners’ material: *people die, the main character kills that has killed his friends—throughout the whole movie...yet at the end it was given he was more than victorious, a world champion. Yet all his love dies.*”

87. “Only around the year two thousand did I begin to receive the mental signals/radiation, never before.”

88. “I accuse—in my mind—one of watching me in the shower, another of maliciously placing hair on my toothbrush and I seeing siblings within completely different looking strangers.”

89. “At the moment, to excuse my paranoia I’d say, “I am sorry, I should seriously stop smoking pot; I smoke too much weed.”

90. “To myself—at the time I was attempting heavy, deep religious activities; I would compress any thoughts that contradicted innocence, purity and goodness; I took awareness and laughed at it.”

91. “The more I laughed at awareness—the more the problem grew, so much so—I could hear my own thoughts as if another was speaking.”

92. “I never truly spoke sincerely about the thought or loud thoughts to anyone, not in the least that the Doctors at home diagnosed me with schizophrenia. This diagnosis covered my growing paranoia that the entire Universe sought my death—as an untamed Beast in the royal bedroom of a king—hiding with his children, so was I:

93. “*No! No! I shout, only to sound as a roar of a hungry lion—in the holy chambers.*”

94. “*Kill him, kill him!*” “*The royal family screams and shouts!*”

95. *"I attempt to reverse me, I listen. Wonders do I hear—yet know place for me—even as I dine in holy betrayal."*

96. *"In the end dogs, friends take me by force, pulling me back to reality, to me: An unholy and simple lady."*

97. *"I hear what you are saying—I bark toward the holy family, if it is true, there is no way you nor the Universe would kill me, not with such understanding of such sacred knowledge!"*

98. *"Guards rush toward me; they hit me. Blood begins to pour out of my cheek and nose."*

99. *"I snicker, figuring good exchange for the uncontrollable, sacred, hidden knowledge I cunningly stole."*

100. *"The guards lock me up, yet as the other dogs come around—those that don't kill, rather grew my existence—I attempt to piece together the previous ten years:"*

101. *"I pretended to be an enemy to the creature in the royal bedroom, the very creature I and the entire earth are."*

102. "Now do I see Analog? I see the truth behind the utter stupidity—as I watch hundreds of people recycle their costly box televisions—for something that appears to have come out of the movie, *Star Trek*."

103. "Is this what happened to the nineties?"

104. "Only you can solve this question for yourself, for your experience, as for me I will be hiding behind the question," GB says in a tone of mystery.

105. "Thanks for listening," GB says.

Chapter 4



Holder
2023

Matthew read loss

Matthew reads loss

Matthew,” I exclaim as I open my front door.
What are you doing? I did not think you would be here until Saturday,” I mention.

2. “Geoffrey, I am too excited; I have spent the thirty thousand dollars you gave me,” Matthew explains.

3. “What did you spend it on?” I ask.

4. “A van,” Matthew says.

5. “Why would you buy a van?” I ask.

6. “I thought the game host said to buy a van, plus I believe it is good luck.”

7. “Army sergeant Clark reporting to Matthew,” Geoffrey says, dumping a huge problem into Matt’s lap.

8. “Seventeen years Matt, seventeen years I have dealt with the sound... Again, I ask, do you know what it is?”

9. “Did you do something, touch something,” Matthew asks.

10. “It could have been anything.”

11. Matthew begins pushing the blame on Clark... who is really Geoffrey.

12. Clark defending himself says, “Look Matt, I spent years locked up. If the sound is coming from me... well, it could not be, my radiation levels were brought to zero the first thirty days in.”

13. “I am a clean man, Matt; daily, weekly, monthly do I rid of that. How do you think I have served for so long? I am just as noble as you if not more so.”

14. “If that sound—out there is due to radiation we must have been bathed in it! Like I said, I were brought to zero after the first thirty days locked up; and it only took that length of time because I was on paid summer leave, I movie binged.”

15. “What about the sun’s coronal?” Matthew asks.

16. “Right, exactly... I forgot about that. Plus, the President of the USA did not make a full disclosure; all he disclosed was a small pandemic.”

17. “Actually, Matt, now thinking about it, I must confess, I am mildly scared!”

18. “Not that I live my theories, but I must wonder how much radiation, the amount of radiation left behind after Y2K.”

19. “In the year two-thousand twenty-one a Solar Maximum is looming ever close with each passing day.”

20. “What is the sound?”

21. “I have watched an internet video describing:

Much sunlight being the cause of communication devices being able to communicate without electricity.

22. “I so quickly forget the reason for the sounds after all day trying to ignore them.”

23. “Why do they harass me?”

24. “Days of screen loading, now I remember! Although it is not an official answer—I have a starting point.”

25. “My guess of the levels of radiation on the earth, and which are from where is:

26. “The EMP caused the gravitational pulls, feelings of others that are not their and uncomfortable movements.”

27. “The levels of radiation from earth’s sunlight, have virtually, (but not originally,) caused the hallucinations and impossible Matrix like communication, making an extremely fuzzy reality. Some use this power to torment, rape and kill. Most likely not because they desire it but rather cannot make sense of the radiation left behind after the EMP of the universe and are now in a fight of their lives.”

28. “Considering my other thoughts and GB receiving signals from the world-wide-web, this World Wide Web would have just been the beginning of the levels of all sorts of radiation—that I would have come across.”

29. “It is possible—as well—those higher levels of radiation where elsewhere and slowly blew—by the wind—to America; making large amounts of radiation in Florida in the beginning months of the year two-thousand four.”

30. Geoffrey confesses:
31. “Matt all this funny talk, well, ...if it helps...I should confess,
32. “One day as I was bathing myself in lust and pleasure... I made a way for more lust; I began to want the entire universe.”
33. Matt eagerly listening says, “go on...”
34. “The powerful creatures would give me the entire Universe that was growing—as a virus—in the corner of their huge mother ship.”
35. “Anxiously I wanted it. I wanted the people, I wanted sex!”
36. “To be secretly given the entire universe—I would have to be responsible for moving the universe from one spot to the other—in the huge mother ship.”
37. A big pause, all is quiet...
38. “I don’t get it,” Matthew states.
39. “The thing Matt, the thing you said about Y2K, about the virtual life in the moon, and how it does not feel as the earth.”
40. “I did not say that” Matthew says...
41. “Evil was it presented to me and if I did it, I was to be hated by everyone for moving them for killing them I was to be responsible for,” Geoffrey declares.
42. “Well...what happened?” Matt asks.
43. “I am tormented in my mind for thinking about it. Sometimes I feel as if I am not good and as if I do not fit in because I killed them.”
44. “It is good to know I did not,” Geoffrey states.
45. “An EMP for being a virus to the earth or was it to give the accidental growth a home?” Geoffrey states.
46. “Whatever it was Matt, it wasn’t me!”
47. Neither one sounds well Geoff,” Matt says.
48. “Yeah, but... I don’t want to be evil to us the virus,” Geoffrey states.
49. “Plus, the pain Matt... I have not felt at home in a very long time. I would not wish such evil on anyone!”
50. Matthew says, “so you are not responsible for removing and or shutting down their bodily electrical system?”
51. “Exactly!”

52. Both men pause for a moment....

53. Matthew stumbles in thought...

54. "I got it he begins to yell, "I just answered the question:"

55. "The universe came to you as evil because they are on trial for killing the entire earth. Your heart, like you said, 'I do not want to be evil to us the virus,' and if you were evil to us, you most likely would need to repent and in doing so, they, the universe would be doing the same justifying their works justifying the huge electromagnetic pulse, the very close extinction of mankind."

Matthew reads loss 2

Where is Dora?"

2. "She is working," Matthew states.

3. "Did you eat breakfast?"

4. "Yes, I did. Anyways that is not why I am here. I want to quickly walk to the bridge. Are you coming?" Matthew asks.

5. "No, go yourself," I say.

6. "I am going now." Matthew rushes out the door, to the path that leads to the old, covered bridge.

7. I look through the kitchen cupboards for something tasty to eat. *I sure am hungry.*

8. I open the fridge and grab the milk.

9. Was I supposed to follow or meet up with Matthew? I put the milk jug to my lips and drink.

10. I should go see what he is up to.

11. I gently placed the milk back in the fridge, making sure the cap was tightly on. I rushed out the door.

12. I quickly find the rich path and walk toward the covered bridge.

"Matt, Matt," Geoffrey calls.

13. Matt's eyes stay fixed on the wood boards of the right hand-side wall of the covered bridge.

14. Words appeared there, they read:

*I spy with my little eye...
Is that someone with a lie?
In fear of making you cry, the monster now says goodbye.*

15. “Matt, what is happening?” I yell. Matt gazes at the wall of the bridge. He lifts his hand up and points toward the wall.

16. I look, I see a heart shaped scribble, “what?” I question, “the scribble?”

17. Matt looks again. Shocked he sees nothing.

18. “What Matt?” I speak.

19. “Ah, ah,” Matt decides to play it cool, “I thought I just saw something,” Matthew explains.

20. I suddenly recall my experience—here at the bridge—not too many days ago.

21. I was about to describe it. I stop. I should not, it could make the backwards pull worse.

22. “Weird,” Matthew exclaims, still staring at the bridge wall.

23. Matthew’s phone begins to ring.

24. He answers it.

25. “Darn!” Matt says out loud.

26. He aggressively hangs up the phone.

27. “What?” I question.

28. Matt storms off.

29. “Matt,” I say, “hold on.”

30. I catch up to him as he is getting in his jeep.

31. “What happened?” I command.

32. “Creditor found my personal account.”

33. “How much did he take?” I ask.

34. “All of it!” Matthew says.

35. “How much is all of it,” I ask.

36. “All! A, double l, all of it,” Matthew says carrying a huge attitude.

37. He speeds out of my driveway, burning his rubber tires as he went, leaving a cloud of smoke behind him.

38. I shake my head mildly confused. I turn around and walk toward the front door of my home.

39. “It is good to be home.”

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

40. Still not being able to shake Matthew's strangeness I decided to turn on the television.

41. I flip on the news. I watch a few minutes. "Looks like the world is not ending," I say.

42. I flipped the channel a few times.

43. "Ah, a horror movie." I turn up the volume. I push back the recliner chair—I am sitting in. I shut my eyes.

44. Within the hour I must have drifted off.

45. Suddenly I am startled by a sound.

46. "Cut it out Mike cut it out!"

47. I see a man with a ten-inch kitchen knife. He begins playing with the knife inside himself; his insides fall out.

48. "Ahhhhh!!!"

49. I pick up my head from the back of the recliner. I watch the television. I see a man telling his buddy to cut it out, to stop picking the sheet rock off the wall.

50. I shake my head, man I am seriously losing it.

51. I begin to wrestle against my mind.

52. I bet you have problems with knives.

53. I pull at my nerves hoping that I do not have to pay attention to this contradictory thought.

54. *I should do something.*

55. *I know.*

56. *I will go spend time at my store.*

57. I quickly get dressed. I showed up at my place of work.

58. I unlock the door; I look behind me just quick enough to catch the sun beginning to set behind me.

59. Draining my strength, I work through the night.

60. That morning I would almost swear that I began to hear others in my mind. Whether they were real or fake I do not know. My mind told me so, due to the pull on my mind, making a truthful/non-truthful statement, cutting it out. I fought, and my mind now not knowing what to do with the lack because I fought nothing, I began to hear others.

61. I thought I heard Matthew telling me about a forest order and I was to be part.

62. "Matthew," I say in my mind, "I am coming home, you are there, right?"

To my mind Matthew said “right.”
 Once I got home, I did not find Matthew, in fact I did not see Matthew for a few weeks.

Matthew reads loss 3

Goffrey, open up.”
 2. “Matthew!” I open the door, “good to see you.
 “And Dora you look wonderful,” I say—covering my mildly psychotic mind.

3. I have treats made out just for them.

4. They both took a seat on the sofa.

5. I pull a chair next to them.

6. Matthew picks up his head, grabs hold of a magazine and begins to look inside. He reads out loud, “man claims to time travel and that through time.”

7. I recall the photo in the magazine, it looked like a painting. Man claims he took the photo in the future.

8. “Why do all the future photos look so fake?” I speak while laughing.

9. Matthew states, “to time travel, we must hide it, we must hide from structure, the law of the time of structure!”

10. “What?” I ask. I look towards Dora. I turn towards Matthew. Matthew’s eye’s role to the back of his head, only the white parts of his eyes show.

11. *Something appears to have possessed Matthew.*

12. Matthew begins murmuring, “Machine has my power. To use my power, the rest of me must not be there. To get my power back, I should not use the machine. People built the machine to gain extra power, gaining power over their thought—they were found lacking. They wanted power over the extraterrestrials, and thus forsaking all power.”

13. “It is possible building the machine was direct defiance. Extraterrestrials gave people the liberty to think they could, but they were never supposed to use it; it appears if they stole lack.”

14. “Because now we are less than the extraterrestrials, being stuck inside a machine, aliens reign over us, but do they?”

15. “The people who did not have part in willingly losing their power—must serve extraterrestrials, hoping to regain the earth and its independence.”

16. “Those stuck in the machine most likely will be covered with earth—as—in places the earth begins to burn.

17. The rest must serve the extraterrestrials in hopes to prove worthy of biological evolving independence.”

18. “Serving aliens, yet not serving the machine means structure can or cannot be there—as well as life itself, no promises, more like an aware dream than anything.”

19. “Most would serve the extraterrestrials so that they have a less rather than a dream, (i.e., meaning of something/living structure.)”

20. “Those in the machine purposely destroy what they built after concluding they gave this machine their power, those who did became less than all creatures who have the least amount of power. Leaving the earth empty, void of plants, water, and creatures.

21. Dreaming, it can be within the ashes and rocks, like that of the walls of the space hall, (small stones.) Small stones, unified theory is structure, without can be an aware living dream, no structure!”

22. “Back at Y2K, some gave their power to the extraterrestrials, begging to be privileged, with the machine lifestyle. This was granted, yet nobody truly believed it had happened. Once the creature/machine being built noticed lack, this machine took power, captivating every earth being, sticking them all, in the eyes of the earth, they were placed in the machine, to those in outer space they were placed within the ship.”

23. “The nineties were given their request to be foolish, thus with and without the aliens; with a law that must respond, yet without the hopes of the foolishness of the people.”

24. “It is almost as if some of the people are no longer in charge, yet I will not try that now. For me it is irresponsible to act too far in any direction!”

25. “Living as the extraterrestrials: *do is to value life, balance out the play and the stillness.*”

26. “That is now!”

27. “Doing a dreamlike thing—one would never know if they will run into stillness... How long will they pay for their play?”

28. “The balance is now, but who truly knows how to attain themselves, *who truly knows?*” Matthew says shaking his arm up and down as a college professor would.

29. “I have been released,” Matthew yells, “those machines attempted to kill me, it had to release me, back on the earth with all power. The balance is Now!” Matthew yells.

30. Matthew continues, “People or no people outside of the machine?”

31. “Obviously, there are people outside, though they could be from the visual perception of something electronic, connected to my brain waves.”

32. “I am all power in a dream, yet I hope to balance it out enough to value what I have been through.”

33. “Coming back from the machine or one could say the moon was obviously full of gravity. I could have almost guaranteed that I have been severely punished for the past couple of years.”

34. “Personally, I started floating back years ago, so I suppose I was not all that prepared to see the gravity of the earth.”

35. “According to some of my past studies, a lot has changed including living settings, people who still exist, many connected to machines. I believe many were laid out and forced to participate in the machine through brain chips, cellphones, and computers, most could not stand in the gravity of the earth, so they held onto their morality while playing.”

36. “There could be people out there, it could be several more years before any huge population decline.”

37. “Most of the people out there are non-responsive due to being connected to a machine.”

38. “For me to run into any significant problem at first would I have to attempt to lose part of my responsibilities.”

39. “If I be as wise as a holy man, I will go undetected, without a threat. Nonforceful captured into the machine. Yet if I defy power by folly, I could be in danger of a quick yet inescapable abduction, and that by the machines.”

40. Matthew collapses and falls asleep into Dora’s lap!

41. "What was that about?"

42. "Matt never made believe as a child," Dora states, laughing a bit.

43. As Matts sleeps on Dora's lap, Dora begins to speak, yet not as Dora, a male voice, without Dora begins to speak...

44. "Slow building houses, so slow they are used as long running businesses."

45. "As the business is operating children are born."

46. "The earth has always been lovely, a wonderful balanced earth."

47. "Slowly we build, none would see us build; it is a tiny trillions of years construction."

48. "As ever we live, we live, we sin not, we choose not evil nor good. As a tree we grow, as a bird we exist, growing the largest tree is the goal."

49. Geoff asks, "Where is the earth?"

50. "As it is—it will always be," Dora says with a male voice.

51. Dora continues, "many sections in the brain, making a head, making a body."

52. "One thought speaks, as small as it is—I listen. They were and become a thought. A living thought."

53. "These thoughts per se., make an enduring energy in the mind."

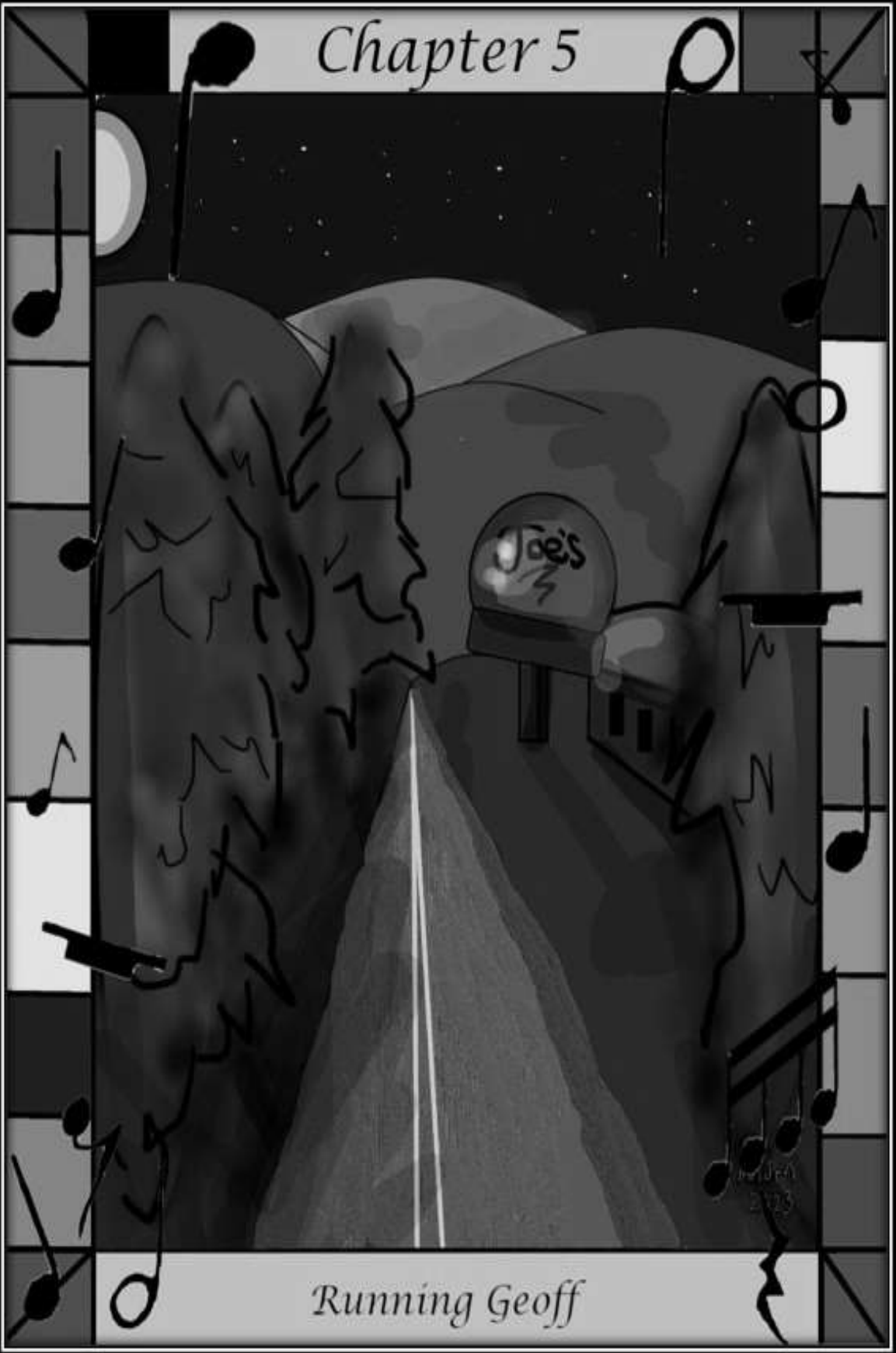
54. "Why not listen—noticing I lost my mind, perhaps there I will find it!"

55. "They, the thoughts become other than. Seemingly they, the thoughts were never considered in hopes to never lose the mind."

56. "Madness!!!"

57. "What did happen to Kelly, Jane, or Eric? Thoughts of mine, simple thoughts, I will keep it that way."

Chapter 5



Running Geoff

Running Geoff

I have been seriously depressed; all I do is sit in the house. Most of the time I fight myself; I spend much energy. Although I do go to my store, open it, and work it—to me it is not home, it does not count as my social life.

2. *What can I do today?*

3. I wrestle in my mind before deciding to get up and walk out the door.

4. Anything will do, I tell myself. I did not look back. I did not care to be at work in the morning, I did not consider where I would sleep. I simply begin to walk.

5. Automobiles move by me as I walk on the edge of the left-hand side of the road. Some honk their horns at me, some yell out the window; none of it makes sense to me—sounds of an over exciting day.

6. Hours I walk. “It feels good to be out here,” I say to myself; every breath of air felt like paradise compared to the darkness of my home and work.

7. A small little red diner comes into view. I should stop, get something to drink.

8. I walk into the tiny red diner. “Can I buy a soda-pop please?”

9. The young lady behind the register presses a couple buttons on the cash register.

10. “That will be two dollars,” the young lady says.

11. I begin to look through my pockets for the stack of twenty’s I stuffed in there before I left.

12. *Ah. I found it!*

13. I pull them out and hand the smiling beautiful lady a twenty-dollar bill.

14. She begins to pull out my change. I say, “keep it.”

15. She refuses, but I insist. A young man hands me my soda-pop, giving me the opportunity to force my kindness on the young lady. I turned my back towards her and walked out the door.

16. “Good Karma,” I say to myself as I receive the warm sun on my face.

17. That is what it is all about Geoff, doing something positive after months of being overburdened by this Rhyme, this curse of I.O.N., the curse of *Its out now*.

18. I bring the straw to my face and slurp up a good-sized gulp of soda-pop.

19. I look to my right; I see three attractive young ladies walking into the fitness center; laughing and giggling as they went. *Cops most likely*.

20. I desire to have my own children. One day, one day, Geoff I will, I say to myself.

21. I see a bench to my left; I decide to sit down.

22. Forces around seem to want me off that bench.

23. *What is this?*

24. I can no longer tell if this is from long wrestles with ION or if this is the older reality I lived.

25. I look around to see if there are any no *trespassing signs*; I look to see if I am doing anything illegal.

26. *Nothing!*

27. Only the strange feeling that I am in the wrong place at the wrong time.

28. I begin to long for my house.

29. What am I doing out here Geoff?” I begin to say.

30. Crows begin to sound.

31. This problem cannot be all; it does not belong here. I must do something positive.

32. I see a couple of men walk by; fishing poles were in their hands.

33. “Catch any fish?” I ask.

34. “No not today,” one of the men—with a friendly smile says.

35. I am suddenly faced with many questions: how am I going to get home, should I go home, what am I going to eat?

36. I hate it when that happens, I consider.

ION

37. I get off the bench, without aim I begin to walk; I hope that I will find my normal reality soon, the reality I live without all the new negativities.

38. I without structure and without luck find my way back home.

39. I rest my legs; I lay down on my sofa. I shut my eyes. I begin to drift off. Forcefully I wake up; much negativity floods my mind.

40. I sit straight up; I pick up my fist and slam the coffee table. A work of decreptive item—standing next to the magazines falls to the floor.

41. "I hate this," I howl.

42. Ever since I read the rhyme: a man looks at me, muscular, black hair, and black eyes, he is brushing his teeth.

43. As soon as I notice him in my brain I am faced with a decision: to lose my mind by his negative appearance, (electrons repulsing electrons,) or fight!

44. *I always fight!*

45. At the first glimpse of him I did not. I regret that... I lost more than a few thoughts.

46. The black-haired man hunts me, it is always something about my future that he hunts, something to make my future horrible, something I do not want.

47. I am driven to a point of madness; sometimes I see him in others, most of the time they say Geoffrey cut her out.

48. Pretending it never happened only shows signs of guilt, being kind only means that I am one with I.O.N., his lead.

49. I cannot rest, it is always looking at me, it has been months, I begin to wonder how much longer I can endure.

50. Morning, good! I will walk to the store.

51. Pleasant day, until I see him, "are you talking to me?" I yell in violence, having been violated.

52. "Turn the other way," I yell.

53. I heard a couple taps from his car. I immediately know he is fighting,

54. I rushed up to his vehicle. I slam both fists on his hood.

55. "Look the other way!" I yell.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

56. The man understanding gets into his car and speedily drives off.

57. I storm to the store, I bust the door open, I freak, I grab a knife.

58. *I snapped!*

59. I completely lost my mind. All that fought against me was winning.

60. I storm out the door, not fearing those who saw. I walk down the busy populated street—with a ten-inch kitchen knife.

61. “I will cut it out!” I yell to my surroundings...

62. I softly hear do not cut me out.

63. I stop, I begin to come to my right mind. I cried a little. I begin to recall my core intention, my strength before I read that twisted rhyme.

64. “What are you doing?” I ask myself—before walking softly back to my small gas station, hoping nobody noticed.

65. “I am not cutting it out,” I say as I sit down in front of the analog television; I flip the channel to the music video station.

Knock

Knock

66. I turn around wondering who is knocking on the window. I get up off my chair and walk over to see who this is. *I believe that my rage has left enough that I am under control.*

67. “A weird idea is going around in the small town I live in,” Kelly states.

68. What is the weird idea,” I ask.

69. “Rooms,” Kelly says.

70. “What is that?”

71. “A video I watched. I was exuberated and drove down to the bridge for any signs of emulation.”

72. “What did you find?”

73. “On the bridge wall appeared:

*Rooms and mushrooms.
What is that above that looms? ...your ant like
mushrooms, what?
What?
All is as one big boom.
Your broom,
A tune,
Did they all walk out of the rooms?"*

74. "That one messed with my mind," I admit.

75. Kelly says, "it is like I saw how it all worked quickly in mind: around 1984 the universe machine was set into motion, a few people on earth decided to advance the computer. The original computer 'contactee' attempted to fight."

76. "The people that decided to advance machines on earth would receive a huge download in the mind."

77. "This download had the instructions on how to create these back doors — in their own place of business — to where this universe existed."

78. "From there people and stuff could come in and out, including large amounts of money!"

79. "This is where most of the new stuff on the planet has come from."

80. "I say, "it makes sense, primitive to advanced people, this does not make much sense."

81. "Huge amounts of automobiles driving themselves out from that universe, from the rooms," Kelly says inspirationally.

82. "Possible," I admit.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

Chapter 6



ION

ION

Stormy night Matthew bursts through my front door. Surprised I yell, “Matthew what the heck?” Matthew has tears in his eyes, he appears horrified.

2. “What happened?” I ask.

3. “No money, they took it all. I have begun to think a lot—in my isolation,” Mathew begins explaining. Something overtakes him, his eye’s role to the back of his head, something has taken over, he speaks:

4. “I look at a planet, few people live there. Lots of forest life, and oceans are on the planet.”

5. “Another worldly system dwells in outer space; slowly does this system plan on incorporating itself on the planet. Originally the planet was a bunch of chemicals. We will call these chemicals Z. The chemicals Z were in abundance and were allowed originally to grow on their own, but due to the system having dominated the planet years ago they are no longer permitted to grow, but rather are used to blanket the system—to make it appear as if it were a real earth-system.”

6. “If you were asking if the original earth was destroyed, I would say yes. Although some was saved on File. Chemicals Z looks like a fine brown powdery dust. This being about fifty chemicals, in amounts enough to blanket the earth ten feet deep. The trees no longer grow, the system tree does—and thus using chemical Z.”

7. “Long ago and still does, *although the cycles play of the earths beginnings*, the system in outer space incorporates itself upon the earth; this is done through the people’s permissions.”

8. “The system through the people began to teach the people how to virtually capture objects upon the earth, to stick them in a giant-sized machine, a machine that is to allow them

and the earth to live onwards, so much that even their actions of the capturing of the earth would be recorded and to be playable in the future; this for and was promised to the people to live over and over again.”

9. “To make sure safety was in place the system from outer space virtually captured the planet and its people. Once that were done—they allowed earths people to participate.”

10. “Secretly they, the people built virtual houses, houses that they copied in detail, the ones that were already upon the earth. Over the years generations would come and go, each generation hooking themselves up to this machine. *Most of the doings had to be done by the people, by their permission, or their life would not survive once inside the machine.*”

11. “The machine would not have known certain chemical combinations if the people did not tell them; and this the people were promised larger amounts of money to give the secrets of their DNA as well as the secrets to some of the wildlife.”

12. “The people in the graveyards, those cemeteries are the people made one with the system from outer space.”

13. “So, they did not die?!” I asked the thing that was speaking through Matthew.

14. “No, they did not, but they do live in their virtual houses, trees, walls, wherever the code to their property is.”

15. “This system we are talking about is something that the people were allowed to bring upon the earth, and although they could, the people were strongly advised not to. But they did, and this undercover. Undercover from the eyes of who they did not know yet knew!”

16. “They knew it were the creatures with big eyes, they, the people of earth knew that they themselves were granted independence, but I do not know that they knew the cost of giving away their power to the machines.”

17. “All creatures have power, there is no way to lose that power, but they could separate themselves from their power by putting their power outside the machine at night, when they sleep.”

18. *To most they did not trust their own power, they were scared to either damage themselves or others. They separated*

their power willingly, placing it without the rest of themselves, at night, in their dreams. Those that do give the system power to control the peoples power... when you dream at night it is your power looking for you.

19. “This is most of the people on the earth, as well as those in their graves, without creature power and made one with the system.”

20. “The entire earth is now mostly without its owners, automated, and all controlled by machine. The machines can do just about everything: mow lawns, plant houses, prepare food, {*anything needed to cover for the people’s lack of power, hoping that the beings who gave charge over the earth do not discover and destroy them all.*}

21. “If creatures are on the outside, then that is what you can expect, machines hiding all the inhabitants of the earth.”

22. “They, the machines will do just about anything to hide their doings. If you see cars or people, most likely they are not, but rather a mechanism to drive you far from the truth.”

23. “Anything but your respect for what it has eaten will put the system on defense; he will no longer socialize with you, but rather use violence to drive you away.”

24. *This can be hard for me, not using the truth, but I have found a way around it: I make believe, I play, I tell him good, make-believe things he is doing. Doing it this way I might find out a lot about how the entire system works.*

25. *If I were to make believe I receive the system for free, I would, but that does not leave me without regret. I can pretend like a child, childlike and innocent all day, but this system can be responsibly smarter than me, almost judging me for my foolishness. There truly is not much of a reason to take substance off the machine. He knows that and those who take off him, he is smarter and will act to punish, especially if he is not keeping me, or rather shall I speak, us!*

26. Later that day, Dora and GB invite themselves to Geoffrey’s home...

27. I will say it as them,” Geoff explains:

28. “Three thousand survivors in the year two thousand, all the electron patterns are destroyed—by the massive EMP. The entire electrical grid is powerless. Roughly three-hundred fifty million people lie asleep on the streets, houses, and businesses—in America.”

29. “Years go by as the moon-bugs first fix the electronics in human bodies, thus making zombies walk the earth.”

30. “As the once humans are being tried for the lack in the year two thousand, they are giving bodies, new bodies such as phones, TVs, Dolls, microwaves, etc.”

31. “The bugs begin to fashion the earth like the virtual moon simulation, which meant at that time restoring the electrical grid, and electronics.”

32. “As years went on, robots began to walk the earth, this was the bug’s plan. The robots were created by those that were left. Huge quantities of radiation made these survivors incredibly smart.”

33. “To make the moon and the earth appear the same—so that millions of years down the road—as the sun expands to destroy, and the earth is destroyed and planets are knocked out of place—no living entity will recall their death, their destruction, their Y2K, their ascension to the moon. *The moon, a new habitation for mankind.*

34. Geoff speaks as himself...

35. “After my first seventeen years on the moon, *the previous years I went unnoticed as I sought the truth*—I desire to hear, to by quantum hear the vibration of the parks, houses, stores and people, *the earth!* Perhaps this quantum hearing is a sixth sense, but I never studied such; in my mind I invented the term.”

36. “The invisible yet dark cage around the living, this Matt... this, and the option to play, is due to not finding the quantum vibrations of the earth, making an—almost sickness like presentation for those that once before listened to quantum bits—for good intent towards the earth. These people act crazy as they try to attempt to live in a non-living virtual world. As they, crazy-play, not finding the nutrition—they begin to feast themselves

until they create a new body, a new work of tech, and this new tech is of themselves.”

37. “Some could call this a *Virtual World*, a system seen through light, calculated photons, or a mass corona ejection, a corona virus.”

38. “This invisible yet dark cage around the living is a body of the moon... Dora it is a VR suit,” Geoff explains.

39. “The robots walking around the earth are putting enough of the earth back together to hide the people turned to machines, puppets, trees, etc.”

40. “The survivors of the earth—through large amounts of radiation found it unlovable and unresponsible to leave the earth without the doings of the three-hundred-year-old civilization, and so created robots and other tech to quickly fix up the buildings of civilization.”

41. Dora blurts, “hold on a second... the other day as I was daydreaming, I was interrupted by a woman being taken by a robot, placed in a warehouse; they connected the zombie to a machine!!!”

42. Dora adds, “do you remember those movies from the 50’s and 60’s, they were black and white. The mechanical robot alien looking creatures. That is what they looked like, an electronic automatic robot carpet cleaner, roaming the forest, aimlessly. He automatically detected the body heat of the lady he captured, that is how he found her.”

43. “Heavy Dora, heavy!”

44. “Those must be the ones fixing the earth.”

45. “All the moons stuff is virtual; the earth and moon as one, it resides; like quantum entanglement, so is the moon and earth together.”

46. “I will ask the question again: did America stop everything?”

47. Dora states, “they went virtual!”

48. “The machines can produce more goods in memory of what was, but they themselves forbid to be destroyed—through creating an unbalance,” Geoffrey says in agreement...

49. “I get up to build, I get up to build ecstasy, I build my own destruction.”

50. “Why-o-why be not as the birds and build very little—if there is building in the least?”

51. GB cries, “because we are on the moon; I feel the dark, invisible VR suit Geoff, Matt and Dora!”

52. “First the trial of the universe and this for killing all mankind and then we shall be tried.”

53. “Could be at the same time, yet different,” Matt says.

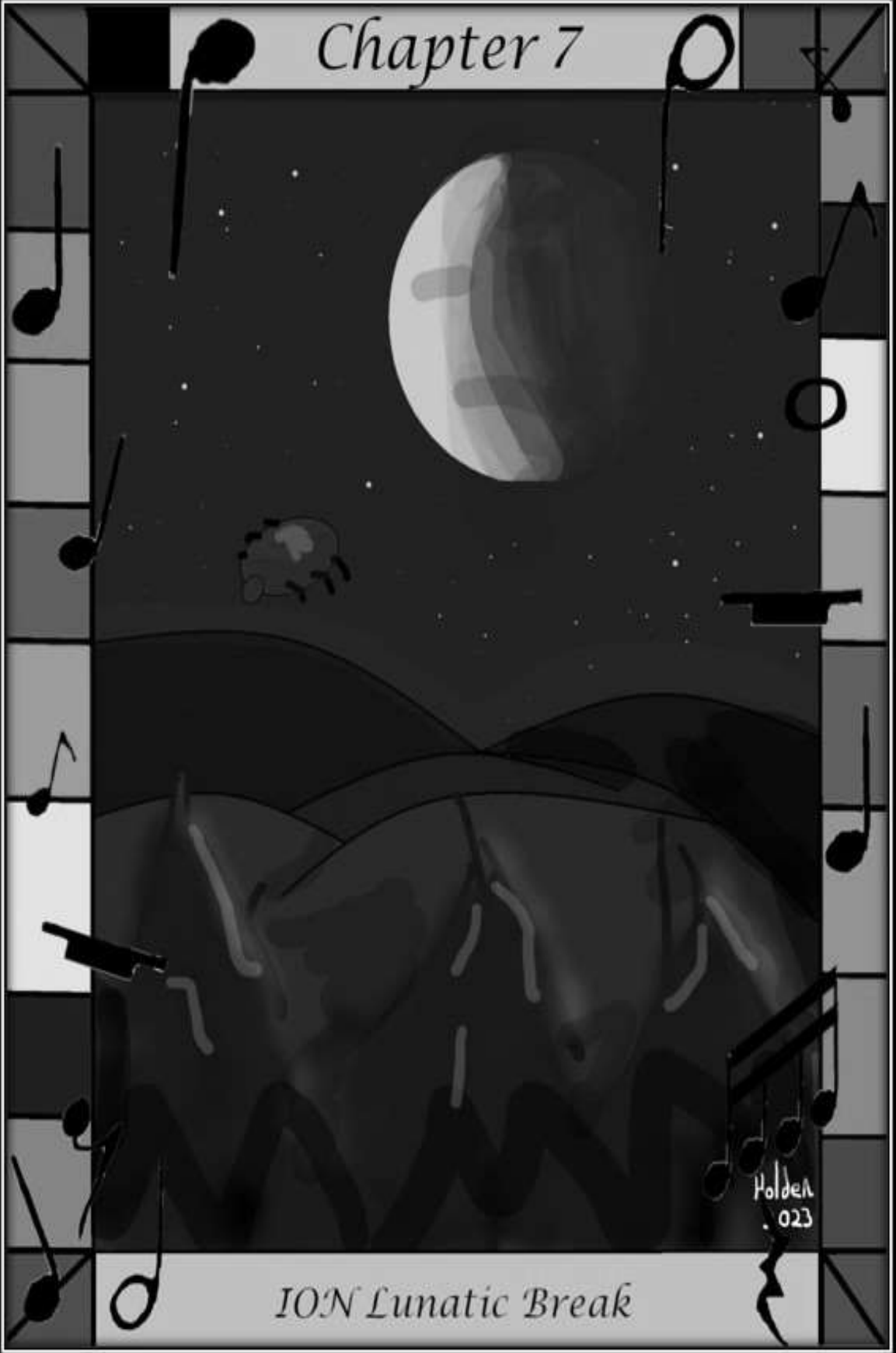
54. GB says, “Geoff, if you and they judge yourself to be a bird—so you will be!”

55. “Geoff, I doubt that bird thing... you love your store too much,” Dora explains.

56. “I thought that too Dora, but I have come to conclude—the only way to own and operate a dependable business is to live as a bird, and that is to hate money yet love supplying goods to others.”

57. “I see that!” GB says.

Chapter 7



Holden
.023

ION Lunatic Break

ION Lunatic Break

Matthew through the creature continues to speak:
“What had happened back at the turn of the century, whether it was thee time, (i.e., the original time,) or the virtual copy of that time I do not know. *Most likely the original can be if you lived it that way; time is sort of like putty in cycles.* At the turn of the century, a massive solar flare, from the sun and other places occurred, this because of the death of a few. This shutting off and damaging most electronics, this included all life on earth, human and animal.”

2. “Bugs from the moon were upon the earth, brought here through imagination in the mid-twentieth century. These were upon the earth. Elements from Mars were also upon the earth, these Mars elements lived in hyperspace, not willing to change their citizenship; I have seen a few.”

3. “Long story short, the moon bugs began to feed themselves with the people and because of much time, the bugs for the first time began to understand people. They began to inhabit them, exploring in depth the human being. They concluded what they ought to do.”

4. “One of these things to do was to power up the earth by using the dark side of the moon. Using hyper-space, they began to do, never seeing the elements belonging to Mars.”

5. “Mars now having more power—being oppressed by the bugs—went throughout the earth, present, future, and past, throughout time they played, yeah!”

6. “To control the earth the negativity of the moon was brought. Thick darkness covered the earth for humans and animals. Many bugs were created.”

7. “The lack of electrons on the moon caused the moon to be unstable, this resulting in the moon slowly falling to the earth.”

8. “More bugs come.”

9. “Somehow in time and without time, in a second of time the face of the earth and its inhabitants get swallowed up in the moon.”

10. “Most lie sleeping—while the bug people build this portion in the moon, while it had taken place, although some move and walk, but most of the visuals are virtual. This makes some sight real and some sight not. For instance, though the store was both virtual and upon the earth the sleeping people were never seen, despite they were in the store.”

11. “If the machine separates itself, one will see a fairly awful place, yet the machines are cleaning that for cover’s sake.”

12. “Once those that belong to the system, in part the moon it will leave, with its catch, leaving behind bodies of the souls it captured. The moon is in part hovering and bouncing off the earth as I speak, but we cannot see it because our brain waves are being augmented.

13. “Most of what is seen is virtual, yet for realism’s sake many walk in the very locations of their destination.”

14. “The earth system is virtually copied and placed in the moon as well is on the earth, so there are two: *one on the earth and one in the moon.*”

15. “The system calculated the destruction of the face of the earth—once the retraction of the universe has begun to take place, and not only that, but sooner than that, as soon as the face of the earth begins to change—as solar bodies come closer than should be.”

16. “Until its slow destruction the system is programmed to fight for the earth, for its people, protecting its catch. Fighting it off includes, anti-gravity, keeping back the wild vegetation, covering the lack of the people from the rest of the universe, building cars and other machines.”

17. “Free from the system most likely means to watch the face of the earth being destroyed, avoiding any violent interactions with those from the universe and exploration.”

18. “The system in the way it interacts with the earth is bazar. Say you took the car and decided to keep it. You drive it into the

wilderness where there is most likely nothing. This is the same as throwing the car into fire and expecting the car to remain the same. Another example: say you took a car and placed it in a place with thirty the times of gravity on earth, the car will no longer work!”

19. “Outside the system could—in ways—be considered death, but it is livable, livable as a wild animal in the sewer. A human can live on the outside.”

20. “I cannot help but want to explore the outside, it could almost be as a scorched earth, but the plants would still be out there, if I pretend, they are out there,” Matthew begins saying.

21. *Is he coming to his mind?*

22. “Matthew?”

23. “It is said all become this dust and now this dust is used to blanket the ever-cycling structured earth in the moon.”

24. “A Cryptid of America, one outside the system, they can do and go anywhere.”

25. “To see the earth from the outside is as if they, the earth, are on display for the entire universe, a show! ...a *Behind the Night Sky Show!*”

26. “I can explore the entire face of the earth—receiving love from the machine as a friend; I can take whatever I want back to the sewers — I want to take. I want to take, yet what I take is the Z, only the chemical Z, the structure is the machine, the code to the stuff is in the moon. *What good is that?*”

27. “I must know! I must be that free!”

28. “That is that Game show Geoff, it is!”

29. “Where did it come from, and the way it appeared...? Out in the middle of nowhere. Off grid, out there! Coming and going as it pleases.”

30. “A code into the code of the earth.”

31. “They hacked in!”

32. “How did they do that?” I ask.

33. “The moons moon!”

34. “Buying structure?” I speak.

35. “The moon system is not the only system if you go and go into the wilderness you will find one system after another.”

36. “He went to the structures structure!”

37. "He could have been way up there!"

38. "Think about it? Every time the earth cycles its people are truly alive. We never knew when they were there. Time is putty! People code themselves into the system to play part at any time!"

39. "Outside the show, as a game show, a part of the show! Yet they were partially on the outside."

40. "I bet he wants us to live out there, behind the show, behind the night sky..."

ION Lunatic Break 2

Later that day...

2. "Geoff, may I drink one of these?" I hear GB ask from within the kitchen.

3. "The soda?" I yell back.

4. "Yes, the soda."

5. "Go for it," I reply.

6. GB and I regularly spend time at my house; I suppose it is due to most of our friends leaving the state.

7. GB sits down on my soft, blue, comfy recliner.

8. I look over toward her.

9. She says, "people all over the town are watching me, I hate that."

10. "GB, ahh, Matthew was over here..." I begin saying worriedly.

11. GB interrupts, "I did not sign up to be regularly watched by my corrections officers."

12. "What am I going to do?"

13. *GB is a model; she has an agent and managers who regularly check on her.*

14. "If I continue to do my job, I am going to snap. Why-o-why did I pick this job; this has got to be the worst job for someone who wants to be free."

15. "The more popularity I get, the more they imprison me; such a lie!" GB yells.

16. "What is a lie?" I ask.

17. "Fame, Geoffrey, Fame! It is the biggest scam out there!"

ION

18. "What are you going to do about it?" I ask.
19. "Why do all the fun things have to include prison!"
20. "...I do not know Geoffrey become an alcoholic, move to another country. I seriously do not know!"
21. "There is no way out... is there?" GB asks.
22. "Maybe you ate something bad, maybe you ate your own work and now you should cough it back up," I respond.
23. "Maybe! Why else would I notice my chains?"
24. "Right!" I answer.
25. "Plus, GB continues, 'the women isn't got no soul,'"
26. "What," I ask.
27. "That song... do you remember that song. It is almost like that song is talking about me. This seriously bothers me!!!
Geoffrey overhears the author writing ION:

ION Lunatic Break 3

- R**ead about it!
2. Read about it!
 3. Death begins to inhabit the dark side of the moon—in the nineties—through the wishes of the American students.
 4. Death kills one third of American students, taking their life into his hands in nineteen-ninety-nine.
 5. To live or not to live, which is usually the question.
 6. I want you to imagine yourself with me for a moment, I want you to imagine being the first child to step foot on the moon. *One small step for a child, one giant leap for our eighth-grade classroom.*
 7. *Cheers,*
 8. *Applause!!!*
 9. Now imagine being told you were going to spend the next thirty-six hours on the surface of the moon—to do as you would if you were home.
 10. Thirty-six hours can be a long time... you decide to explore, feel the little gravity as you run, rock climb, and hop like a rabbit.

11. Now imagine that you walk north for five miles—in hopes to impress the pretend home base Houston, TX. —which really is your eighth-grade classroom,

12. Over one hill and then another, you begin to see pieces of clothing, clothing that appears to be from earth.

13. In every direction clothing was thrown about the moon!

14. You crouch down to get a closer look. It appears to be a shirt sleeve.

15. You pull and pull... up and up pops a shirt, and with it a *human arm!*

16. You might semi-scream through your helmet, but fear losing oxygen, so you stop yourself; in stopping you quickly look around ...

17. As your eyes are focusing you see more clothing and people sticking out of the sand in the moon...

18. Panicking you begin to run through the clothing.

19. As you are going up a hill to look at the other side—you see bodies, thousands of human bodies!

20. Who could shake or get rid of such a startling image yet thought?

21. I will be honest, I made up this story, it is untrue. For the sake of this book, *ION* it is written, we will say it is true.

22. What happened to these people, my dear classroom of quantum possibilities is *the game show!*

23. Geoffrey says out loud, “enough, enough, I never meant the Wam, I never meant the thirty thousand in a golden can.”

24. It does not matter Geoffrey, you are playing! Now tell us the rest of the story Geoff!

25. Reluctantly Geoffrey speaks,

26. “Okay! The aliens gave humans power over the earth, the humans slowly began to hate responsibility.

27. “Evil was in the world—in the past, but in nineteen sixty-nine—when the first moon bug arrived—along with the humans that traveled to the moon—the humans began to see who they were, and this was power.”

28. “Together as the bugs multiplied—the humans decided to lessen who they were. Most students hated school, they hated long-suffering, they hated patients.”

29. “They began to be no more, but from 1969-2000 they were only fed hope of death through a computer virus named:

‘Game Show:
Let’s play moon fun.’

“With a rhyme that said:
‘Let us play, let us stray, no more day, we are gay.’
‘Dark as night, on the moon we fight, those with sight will end this night!’
‘Call on me, I will set you free! You shall see your love makes you be!’
‘Tonight, we high, this night we fly, no more sigh, we all shall die!’

30. The author states in the mind of the listeners,

31. This and that was the virus, it would appear just long enough for one to read it, it would then vanish, leaving a damaged computer behind in its tracks. The damaged computer would constantly remind the reader of the rhyme.

32. None saw the rhyme unless they were chosen by the dark side of the moon, nobody knew of the virus...

33. Flash forward to the year nineteen-ninety-nine, in the month of December a rhyme began, record has it—it was started by a student. He called a lust of his and said, ‘no day moon fun, Y2K let us have some, for we are none.’

34. She called another student repeating the rhyme, that person called one of their friends and they called more friends and the more called even more—until all the games show was collected, *one third of the American students!*

35. As midnight approaches, January 1st, 2000, the young adults gaze up at the full moon...

36. Now, at the time of the new year, the year two-thousand, one million-five-hundred students disappeared, brought to the moon by their own unconscious spirits; being given lust, pleasure, and ecstasy to propel them there.

37. In their eyes—once they arrived on the moon, they saw the paradise they self-indulgently made through imagination, yet to the sound mind it was but rocks and dust, rocks and dust of the moon.

38. Death let the students have one another, thus killing their force but never destroying the body.

39. Every evil did the students do and this evil with one another. They hailed the game show, they valued death, shouting with the few last breaths they had, ‘to be or not to be was never questioned!’ Thus, giving power to the bugs who showed them choice, choice above life!

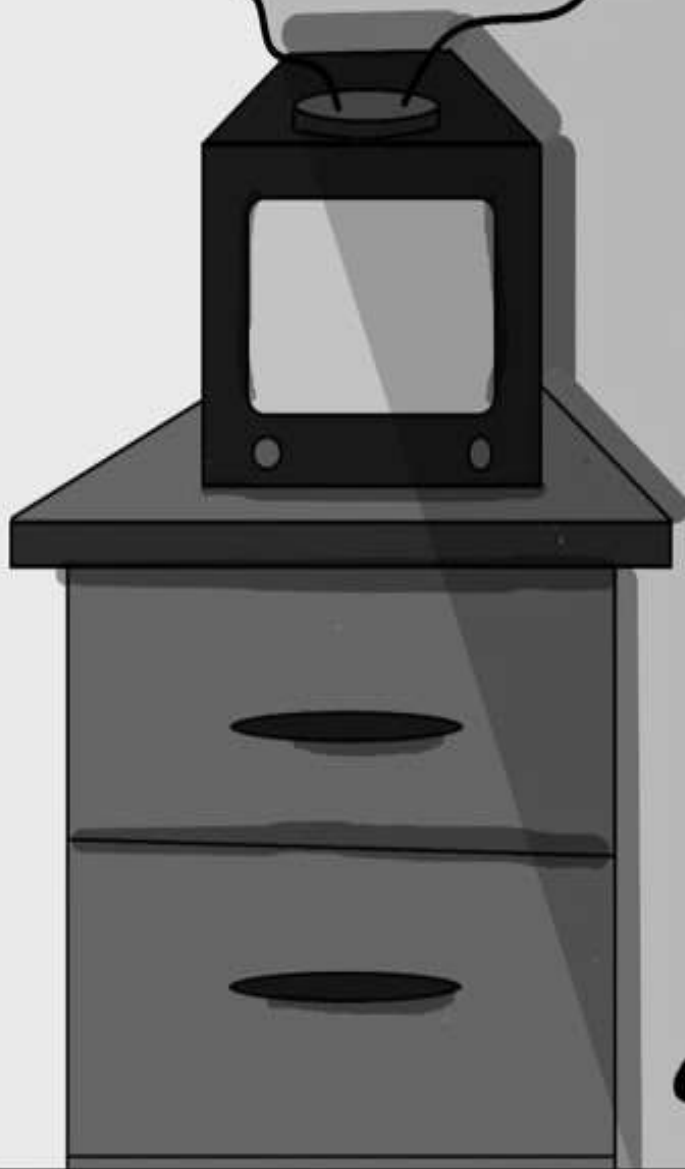
40. The host says, “This Geoff, this is the *game show*, all the missing students of 411, the ones missing in the forest, I cut them out!

41. It is out of them Geoff, *it’s out now!!!* The host yells into their minds...

42. Geoff you are reading something you should not be...

43. “Stop! Stop!” Geoff yells.

Chapter 8



My TV?

Holden
2023

My TV?

Do you remember that thing I said about the virtual world and the earth being similar, how some of it is augmented? I recall not too long ago being told in my mind that a lot of what I see, like the people, is augmented. I thought they were spirits, and they probably are. The weird part about this—is the denial of my reality, my money! It is like it never existed,” Matthew says.

2. “The things out there explain the people and images in my ears in front of me, sometimes imagining food for me! It is a constant drip Geoffrey, increasing in pain daily. Ever since this lack, this imaginary work showed up I want to get rid of a brain chip, this bug. It is an implant you know! They are probably watching us right now!”

3. “Most likely with a virtual prop,” I add.

4. Matthew says, “I know that the landscape has changed, a few years ago, or maybe longer — because we were sleeping. Most lie there and are most likely dead now, but we cannot see them... the moon took them. I bet dead carcasses are everywhere!”

5. “O yeah,” I state.

6. “Yes, plus I never could shake the fact that these beings were saying it is a virtual world. Not one moment could I believe that; after time being brutally punished for gravity’s sake, for life’s sake.”

7. “Most of the electrical grid is out, including most of the electronics, that is how one would know for certain—what is virtual.”

8. “Test and observe,” Matt says, “test and observe.

9. “Listen to the sounds! Do you hear them?” Matt asks, “have you heard them coming through the radio. He just said he virtually created his motorcycle. It is a fake world.”

10. "Where is the real one," I ask.

11. "The sun's coronal is making this harder and harder! Extra energy from the sun is mixing the moon with the earth, even if the moon is out and the bugs left, the sun's energy is uniting the electronic field, and this at one extremely bad time. I was ready to kill times ago and now I still am hearing them, hearing them mocking my intelligence; I watch them walk all over me!"

12. "So, what does that mean... wait?" I ask.

13. "Yes, for a moment, just do not believe what you see! If GB offers you pleasure, it was not true, it was in your mind. If Dora curses you and betrays you, do not believe it. This means your fears are being powered up by the sun, amplified by those in the moon!" Matthew states.

14. We pause for a moment, "so, if we are not part of the moon system, after the sun stops overpowering this section of the galaxy—we have no electronics, no power grid and most likely all the food has gone bad," I say.

15. "Something like that," Matthew answers, "most of the new tech is within the moon, some of the original electric work is on because of the sun, we are part of the moon because of the sun. But yes, most of the earth is out, but truly the moon swallowed up all that now is powered by itself. It almost appears like the old, but it is not.?"

16. "I cannot shake the idea Geoff, times ago these things started telling me about VR in public, that they were the VR...! They imagine earth from me!"

17. "*Odd*"

18. "*Right!*"

19. Matthew says, "some say the same thing about the radio! These things speak directly to my small, tiny, sensitive membranes."

20. "Somehow, they as well would stop a car and hand me objects from the car; this is not normal. They were seriously doing this, like electronically VR overpowering."

21. "So, we are going to have to wait for the norm," I say.

22. "Yes."

23. "You know Matthew, I have not mentioned this, but I must cut something out!"

24. “This moment I am about to speak about has not just happened once to me but also while on the road,” GB says.

25. “On the road, traveling to visit a client—I see cars stopping and the people within the motor vehicles handing me money.”

26. “Well, it has happened again here at home,” GB says.

27. “Look back a few statements, ‘we can have more,’ and, ‘a small amount of electricity can deliver a message, too much can start a fire.’”

28. “A.I. residing within the moon is not going to chance mankind to be wise, noble, or good. He the system figures, ‘man we caused the entire universe to shoot a very large EMP at us, where is the wise, where is the noble?’”

29. “This is misery to me: he, A.I. will not let me find the lack. *I need the lack to take care of it, the earth, you know...*”

30. “There is lack out there,” Geoffrey says.

31. “Yet I do find the lack, I find the lack on a leash.”

32. “Why-o-why did we unbalance the earth with comfort.”

33. “We cut down a tree of a critter so we could comfort our nose if it were runny; yet we truly needed more of a lack!”

34. Matt says, “so maybe, in fiction we were foolish.”

35. “Yet these vehicles seem to find my lack more than by chance... scary!”

36. “It appears if they, the cars can detect a small ION,” Geoffrey says laughing.

37. GB continues speaking, “maybe more my paranoia... you be the judge... keep in mind some of the latest tech and inventions and those that can plug into the mind... If I be truthful in fiction, maybe not plugged into the mind but an uncontrolled neuron placed in the moon for us or rather for humans, so no attempting to destroy it.”

38. “Is that the same as truth?” Dora asks.

39. “I will answer but, maybe the founder of the plug in the mind bought the moon. *Unknown money coming in—is as the same—as unknowns coming in*, and who should not consider that, you just might save your house!”

40. “But should you on the earth?”

41. “For me to answer a yes to the question: *should we on earth*, until I begin to prepare for the amount of future money I will need, then I change a bit.”

42. “Scared to confess I will now re-stuff the logic far in the back of my brain... it is who I was raised to be, this is the good person I was taught to be—I say—knowing that I am less than billions, yet say I will live upon the earth...”

43. “But again, I beforehand said, *fictitious*, I am not sure if anyone is wise enough to judge truth—in another. So, in my opinion I will live on earth—for never having had the chance. As I am there, I will consider that many sought comforts while living wild upon the earth. I will as well wonder why I no longer am under the wild control of my parents. And if I fail—I will ask myself, how should I make unstable, stable...”

44. “Impossible!”

45. “Thousands of years of bad evolution?”

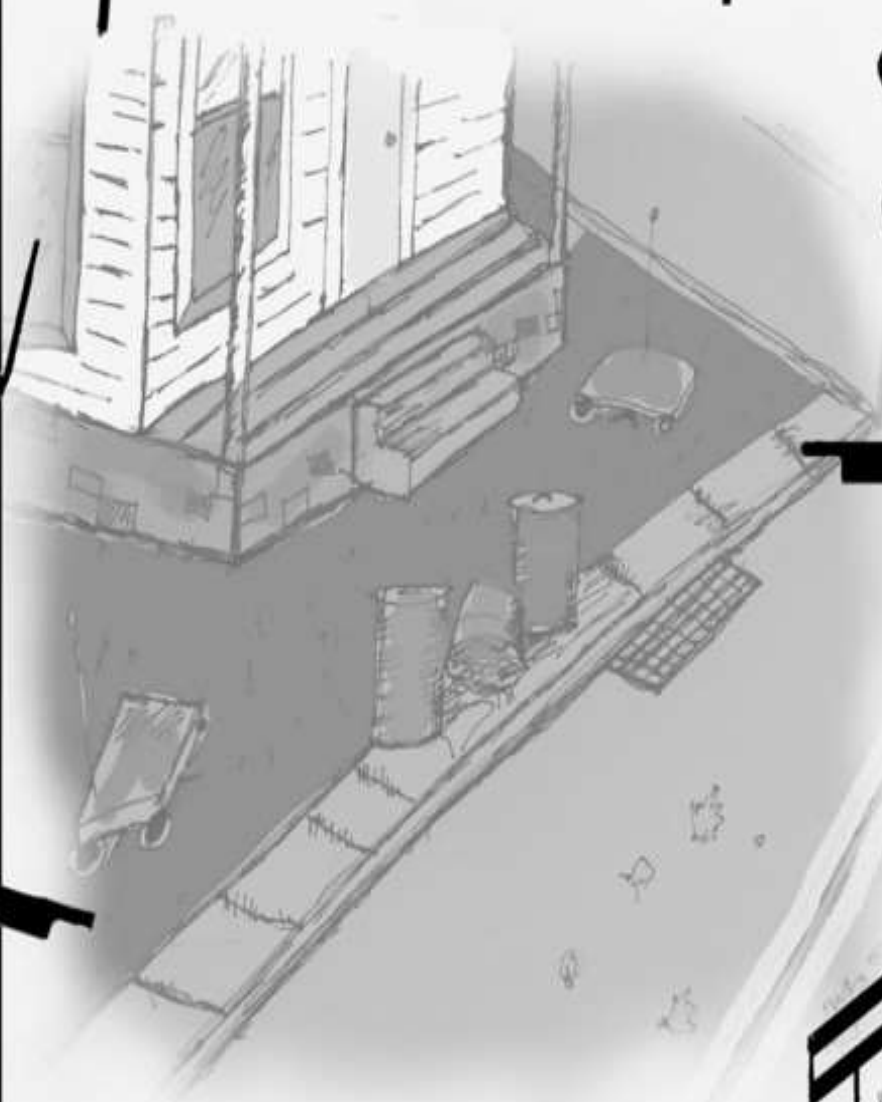
46. “Or...”

47. “Thousands of years of a mistake in the universe?”

48. “Fun thoughts... as fun as the energy in equation, e... and as much fun as Ioeo: *random, uncalculated, ongoing life*, (i.e., evolution.) And must I not forget the punishing elements of physics for those who fail to live up to—”

49. “In all our thoughts: in the very least I am balanced today!”

Chapter 9



What could this be, a baby?

What could this be, a baby?

- I must cut something out!” I state to Matthew.
“What the heck are you talking about?” Matthew asks.
A lass, a girl or something, I do not really know! But I know that I have to cut it out! Matt, I have to cut it out!”
2. “You know those VR moments you continue talking about, one of those moments for me was some sort of curse or something!”
 3. “Geoff” Matthew says, “we do have to cut something out, like those things talking in my head.”
 4. *Laughter*
 5. “Right, okay,” I say and walk into another room. I grab a kitchen knife. I walk towards Matthew. “This is why they switched the TV’s to analog, and turned the 60 watt light bulb into LEDs. Now where is this thing because I have to cut it out,” I cry.
 6. “Yeah sure you do,” Matthew says, “If you are thinking about it you should come up with a plan.”
 7. *I turn my head upwards as Matthew begins speaking, I do not think he gets it, cutting it out is a curse, I am not so sure I want to cut it out or if I am supposed to.*
 8. Matt explains, “to rid of the bug we obviously would be totally off the system, which could mean: no identification, no money, no police, no buying food at the store, no buying a house... and that is if these things ever part us from the system.”
 9. “But if we can, they have the copy, we have the original. If we take care of what we buy everything should be fine, unless some unexpected event happens such as the sun blowing up or some other crazy thing like that!”
 10. “Yeah so what are we going to do?” I ask.

11. “Well, we must take care of ours, which sort of means to listen to whatever I spent hours telling you about and...” Matthew pauses for a second...

12. “I need to buy a house, that is what I need to do. You remember that old road?” Matt stumbles into remembrance. The Wheelock road, do you remember the Wheelock road?”

13. “Yes,” I answer.

14. “There is that small farm up that road, I should buy it. And if I buy it and take extremely good care of it, maybe the big-eyed creatures will not destroy it or take away my independence on the earth.”

15. “The system thinks that coding everything will make a better substance, I disagree. I am not so sure it is. I can find very few answers to the problem and most cycle back to their beginnings. I figure if I take care of today, that ought to take care of tomorrow. *Right?*”

16. “Yeah” I say not listening.

17. Matt continues, “I wonder if I am strong enough to maintain a house?” Matt pauses for a second.... “well I must buy one.”

18. “Right,” I answer.

19. “How are you going to maintain it?” I ask.

20. “I do not know, what are we talking about again?”

21. “The system, coding, the virtual world!”

22. “Okay what is the question?”

23. “In the virtual world, the system takes care of your house, and this by not allowing you to have power over your house. Your house un-coded, on earth is vulnerable to you and possibly the elements around you.”

24. “Okay” I answer, “so how are you going to maintain it?”

25. “I have not thought that far.”

26. “I suppose in theory one must have power to hold it together, like in the mind. I must exercise my mind to keep it; I must play with my house.”

27. “Okay”

28. “System sure is neat though. *Right?*” Matt asks.

29. “What happened to that creditor, the one that took all your money.?”

30. "I owed to be part of the system, a system that only wants me if I be its code. I made money through a loan, they took it out fearing I would not pay them."

31. "That was the same day I thought you read a rhyme, the day I saw you gazing at the wall of the bridge; and do not lie to me Matthew, I know something happned because something did happen to me," I speak.

32. "A rhyme," Matt blurts.

33. "Okay" I say making a hand gesture, trying to pull more out of him.

34. "A rhyme that stated that the man who helped me in the system would no longer be there for me."

35. "But you got a rhyme to," Matthew says.

36. "I got one, an evil one, one that I have been fighting for months, fighting me to not cut at my flesh—with a knife."

37. "What are you going to do?" Matthew asks, "it is almost like we should be coding ourselves or we loose power."

38. "More like gain it," I state.

39. "Matthew says, "look Geoff, I do not need you!"

40. *My insides were suddenly cut. Matt and I are like brothers.*

41. I begin to ignore him, knowing that if I at this moment say the wrong thing our friendship would begin to crummbles.

42. "So what should we eat tonight?" I ask changing the subject.

43. "I am going out to eat, Dora is meeting me at the Pub down the street."

44. Smelling imaginary burgers, fighting jelousy and my own feelings of lack of worth, I say, "okay Matthew, I am going to eat cookies." I watch Matt open the front door and walk towards his truck.

45. "I am going to eat cookies," I say to myself, hating myself.

46. Later that night Matt brings Dora back to my place, good relief!

47. Geoff we got something to tell you, the other day I was with Dora at the bridge, I was watching Dora as she was walking in the water.

48. "She began to suffocate. I ask, "what is wrong?"

49. Dora says, "I cannot inhale," slowly she gets up off the ground. "That man behind us, whenever he is around I cannot breath; I am in anguish.

50. "What man?" Matthew asks.

51. "The man behind us."

52. "The one walking on the sidewalk?"

53. "Yes!"

54. "Whenever I see such a man, I begin having breathing problems," Dora explains, "negativity is all around. I begin to here the vibe, the negative vibe, an evil vibe. Sometimes I grab my ears to see if blood is coming out of them."

55. "I hate that man. As soon as I see him I know I must kill him," Dora States.

56. Matt was confused, he had never heard such words come out of Dora's mouth before.

57. "It has been months Matt, I have no cure, it is like I must get permanent help or continue having to deal with this darkness, this suffocating demon."

58. "Well, this is too bazar Dora, I mean you have been walking around fine..." Matt says.

59. "But I have not been fine."

60. "When did it start?" Matt asks.

61. "I thought about this and I have thought about this," Dora explains, "but I have no answer."

62. "No answer but the bridge..." Dora pauses for a moment realizing she confessed something by accident.

63. "Matt quikly says, "wait, what about the bridge?"

64. "Nothing."

65. "You must be honest Dora, I have seen stuff under the bridge."

66. Dora wispers:

*"I spy with my little eye someone about to tell a lie.
No more guy, we all may say goodbye, tell them all she
was to die!*

*...as long as we have my lady maybe.
What could this be a new Gabi baby?*

Say yes there ole there lady, play this game with me and we shall see this baby.”

67. Matt thinks for a moment, waiting for his own reply, “Gabriel,” Matt questions.

68. “Yes, I got her from the adoption agency—for myself and gave her to a young lady named Alice. It was so long ago, I forgot about it,” Dora says, while crying.

69. “Geoff, did you hear that?” Matt picks his head up.

70. “*Geoff?*”

71. “*Geoff?*”

72. Matt walks over to the bathroom, he sees blood in the bathtub. Geoffrey comes stumbling out into the light. He picks up his bloody hands, he says, “I cut the lass out. *It’s Out Now!*”

What could this be, a baby?

Hours beforehand...

2. “I must question how the nineties stores came to be—along with the glory of them. In doing so—I am confronted with an answer: *humans began to create a way out of a problem—another human was giving them, thus making it appear as a very luxurious and powerful economy, yet it all is a simple and small problem!*”

3. Matthew says, “all was creating a way out of a problem another was giving, yet nobody had a clear idea and could see clear to find who the troublemakers were, thus making an appearance of many goods.”

4. “Some say, ‘our economy is gone, let us eat our portion.’ I presume as they eat, they find the reason they worked on an economy to begin with, (i.e., a problem another human was giving them,) and thus semi-killing their ability to see the economy that was, this killing the economy.”

5. Matthew once said, ‘they, the aliens would pay people for the secrets to the earth!’

6. “This idea to eat our portion fits into what Dora was saying: *they say, ‘let us eat our portion,’ yet nobody knows that they could be giving away their secrets and this to Aliens, the*

secrets to their economy to aliens. This resulting in those that worked on the economy freely and out of love to have greater secrets and this making, 'eat our portion,' a much more lasting portion; this loving being having not found the reason for his or her work, seeking for the rest of civilization —continues to eat until the secrets are found."

7. "Shall we buy the last of it?"

Chapter 10



Life Behind the Night Sky

I am GRAY



S



Kidney
2015

Life Behind the Night Sky

Dora says, “Matt, knowing that the moon bugs give people an augmented reality, I know because reality is without electronics; do you not feel the need to use your moon bug to virtually augment other realities?”

2. “I do not understand,” Matthew says.

3. “What if you pretend money is in your hand...”

4. “You do not see it, but say the homeless person does...?”

5. Geoffrey says, “we could work that way, we could sell pretend virtual items!”

6. GB says, “we slowly kill them, I mean we make them less.”

7. “Should we?”

8. Geoffrey says, “some person or peoples long ago called... holy! Did they not?”

9. “I pretend to be, yet I pretend for? We could be destroying ourselves.”

10. “We might need to Matt because they are living zombies!” Geoffrey states.

11. Dora says, “if we don’t prove them zombies, we die!”

12. “No way!” Geoffrey states.

13. “If we must, we must; we have to win the game, we have to find its end,” Matthew says.

14. Geoffrey, I recognize your fight, the game, the game show ION!

15. “I read a new book, 7th grade streets, same author Geoff. Brian, the boy in the story, smoked forest” Matthew states.

16. “Okay,” Geoffrey says confused.

Hellen
2021

17. Matthew slams his hand down on the table they were sitting at. As he picks his hand back up, he leaves a bag, looking like something a drug dealer would sell.

18. “What is that?” Geoffrey asks.

19. “Forest, dried forest Geoff. We are going to smoke some,” Matthew says.

20. “I do not smoke Matt,” Geoffrey explains.

21. “Well now you do,” Matthew says—widening his eyes...

22. Out of his knapsack he pulls out a tin can, tiny holes appear to have been pushed throughout the top, prepared to burn, and inhale forest.

23. Reluctantly Geoffrey smokes with Matthew.

24. Within fifteen minutes Matthew looks at Geoffrey, he says, “Cut it out Geoff.”

25. Matthew slams his fist again on the table, he says, “the only other you Geoff, —to cut out is your lack of confession —of something you went through. “

26. “What did you do to the earth Matthew commands—Geoffrey—as Geoffrey is held in fear.

27. “The bee problem the frog problem,”

28. Dora says, “What do you think of my rhyme Geoffrey, you have not spoken much about it...”

29. Geoffrey says, “A few months ago I found a small trend-channel on cable: *nightmarish pictures accompanied by spooky background music.*”

30. “As I gaze at each frightful picture—I begin to look past the original impression the station had on me and look at each picture for what it was... strongly am I taken back to the years of the nineties.”

31. “I remember when fields looked like that, I recall when porches looked like that, I recall when finding a lit porch in the country land and thinking to myself, *I am still alive!!!*”

32. “I reminisce to myself as the spooky background music plays... wishing I could go back in time, wondering why everything feels as virtual light. Where is the hug, I know I should feel, the warmth that asks me to keep it or the old wooden houses causing me to know their needs? Where is the vulnerable life? Where is survival? Where is the security of my strength? None

of these necessities of growing-evolution do I find, only the virtual light that says, *I have all.*”

33. “I begin to wonder what happened. I gaze at my tiny television as the video plays. One picture flip and then another until I think along with a picture in a field:”

34. “These pictures are memories of other humans, do you remember when the time travelers traveled, for instance, the blonde running the *game show*, they were not allowed to use structure—only art. Mental images is art.”

35. “I gaze at the fields, I want to go out in it, I want to run through it, I want to run away from this blackness that haunts me.”

36. “You know we must escape the machine... Nightmares are our more powerful side, that is why we are out there while sleeping—because we sleep. I need the two together again.”

37. “You’ll die...” Dora exclaims.

38. “No!” I demand.

39. *Theory upon theory... runs through my mind...*

40. “A few weeks ago, Dora, I was walking twenty miles back home from a psychotic break. I pass by a rough looking trailer. A generator is on. A car passes by, ‘he sees you out here he will eat you.’

41. “I cannot shake the image that is in my mind. He most likely would have been a good friend on the earth.”

42. “I begin to wonder... did he survive Y2K? If any of my theories ever prove true than I will use my emotions.”

43. “Imagine with me for a moment...”

44. “If you knew when a mass extinction, a galactic storm could kill just about everyone, ruining hundreds of years of civilized growth—would you have prepared to survive it?”

45. “I think like that Dora and that sound could possibly be the sound of a gas-powered generator from one of the survivors. In theory he could have been sleeping in a bunker in the year two thousand. Waking up he finds sleeping bodies everywhere.”

46. “Zombies begin to walk around, scaring the man.”

47. “He dares not to act, he has survived, they have not. He stays quiet in his house.”

48. “In part, bugs attached, zombies begin to walk in innocence.”

49. “The virtual world is simply not the earth, and I can feel that.”

50. “The moon ticks say to one another, ‘Let us put them in the exact location of the perception.’”

51. “It truly must be odd to walk into the nearest gas station, prepared in love—for the citizens it serves only to find it all spoiling. People are in there yet something in them is causing them to decay. The crickets keep them awake yet feasting on their flesh was a way, a harvest party.”

52. “An old man stumbles into the store, apparently not noticing the level of insects crawling around on his face, tormenting his mind. He sees by the beetles, now a zombie!”

53. “The old man does not notice the tick keeping him awake in the moon, denying the universe deemed him and most of the earth unfit, sending their growth in all directions.”

54. “The man running the generator asks, ‘can you hear me old man?’”

55. “The old man appears rather okay, yet the one questioning is invisible to him.”

56. “The old man picks up an outdated pastry. He walks over to the checkout counter.”

57. “He appears as if he is paying, yet as he pays, he does not seem to notice the amount of decay and the insects running freely in and out of his mouth.”

58. “The man running the generator runs back to his trailer. He closes the window and door tightly; the sunlight does not shine into his home.”

59. “In theory there is a few thousand of these Dora, these generator runners in America. All looking toward one another, saying, ‘what have we done? What have they done? We are just as weak as they—except we survived through a shielded bunker!’”

60. As I have previously stated, “climate change was known before the year two thousand—as well as a few known predictions, for instance, the sun expanding, all meeting their grave and evolution.

61. “I being a child was forced to listen to the adults; they the adults in school, home and other places mentioned a hole in

the o-zone layer, carbon pollution and cutting down of the forests including that of the rain forest—and this for self-indulgent purposes. I, at the time, growing up thought about toilet-paper and where it had come from. I believed we would overcome, it was the same to me as overcoming the fact given to me that one day my muscles would rot and die, and the new generation would bury me, or possibly even burn me.”

62. “Who would have thought using something as small as toilet-paper could have caused another so much pain?”

63. “Or did it?”

64. “The lunatic in the nineties you may answer or was it restraining the moons VR I may question.”

65. “In the nineties man has enough power to hold together what was previously stated, and anything else would be like, and might still be psychotic!”

66. “To do over and over expecting another result other than what is given is psychotic, or in the least that is the definition others have given to me.”

67. “This lunatic would run around the earth claiming, ‘more, we can have more,’ without the ability to prove the statement in the eyes of the earth. He, the crazy, psychotic, or schizophrenic would see things that no others could see, yet to them—their hallucinations were very real.”

68. “I do not doubt the world of the crazy, even so much as possible; what I doubt is four plus four equaling three, and this delusion is making a small instability in what we know as math. *A small amount of electricity can deliver a message, too much electricity can start a fire.*”

69. “We know this fire as crazy. The world has gone mad or, ‘To the moon Alice!’

Life Behind the Night Sky 2

I have a little devise, it fits in my pocket, with it I can watch any movie, gain any knowledge, and buy anything I so desire,’ a crazy man says—as I help my dad pile fresh-cut-wood.”

2. “That is crazy talk Bruise,” my dad yells back—towards Bruise, guarding my sensitive ears.”

3. “The above in quotes is fictitious, yet I make a point... I must ask myself—within the statement: *Did the man have a little devise?*”

4. “Obviously, he does, but does he to me?”

5. “Simply because he might appear to prove he does have a little devise; I must ask the question: *how stable is the devise—to claim such a devise?* If a man says, “to use the devise—bugs must eat you until you are miniature and then you will sail to the moon where you both will live in a virtual world, (i.e., computer.) This does not sound like something the earth would say, nor would my peers say. This idea is not stable for a human body to trust it... or is it?”

6. “Is it rather a get quick rich scheme, not just for the speaker but also for the buyer?”

7. “This crazy world is too good to be true! Perhaps the American-Amish had an answer time ago—to such craziness—which were removing electricity and technology from their lands.”

8. “To fall or not to fall into their hands? Am I not already in their hands? And this being in the hands of those without modern electricity.”

9. “Shall I burn more or shall I rid myself of any such foolishness: *to borrow from the earth!*”

10. “It appears as if such borrowing was predicted and stored—on the moon, not much damage was done to the original earth.”

11. “What shall I do?”

12. “Living balanced is now, to borrow tomorrow makes me less than today seeing the strength of reality lives in my today. What will I do? Is it all as easy as a choice—or is it something I slowly created of myself.”

Life Behind the Night Sky 3

There are aliens living out there—don’t you know?”

2. “I noticed a small defect in our building,” I mention to an honored business member in the town.

3. “A defect?” the manager questions.

Behind the Night Sky: Theater Script

4. “I’ve seen an alien world, similar to ours, yet the structure of their empire lasts much longer,” I respond. “How so?” the store manager asks.

5. I say, “they pay their citizens virtually in exchange for their power to uphold their empire.”

6. “My store, you see kid is only meant to last for several years, at the end my family and I will play in it—until it becomes earth once again.

7. *Such a wonderful dream, such a wonderful harvest-party.*

8. I nod my head, “thank you for the coffee-conversation,” I say and begin to go back to my business.

9. I pick up my knapsack, I take a sip of coffee, I begin to walk north on the left-hand-side of the secondary highway.

10. “I wonder why she did not desire a longer lasting empire.”

11. “Yet I agree, eating my labor has always been one of my favorite parts to life.”

12. “Although I understand that much I continue to wonder, *why not build a lasting empire?*”

13. “I understand reality includes non-lasting; this element gives more of a living feeling, and lack of predictableness to life; I enjoy this element.”

14. “Is there both?” Dora asks.

15. “Yes, I will answer! I have named this Ioeo: to live in a lasting empire while participating in nothingness, and unpredictability, what some call human life. All power given to the lasting empire, which means you pay beforehand the human journey, the human experience.”

“This answers who I am—in thought—at this moment, but Ioeo will not answer a problem, thus killing the problem, making a non-answer to void.”

16. “These thoughts as they are... grieve me: *I have the answer to why I am alive, thus killing me, or has it?*”

17. “Is my harvest party now?”

18. “I have not yet bought a vehicle, built a house or given a child! Has this lasting empire robbed me of the chance to attempt to build a lasting empire now?”

19. "I fear it has... so most of the time—I place Ioeo in the back of my mind—wondering why my lack was never considered, and to what point did the lack want?"

20. "Why should I choose what a lasting empire has not? Why give more thought to a lasting empire? Why not choose fire and VR in the moon? Why not choose today on the earth?"

21. "Mostly because the choice is not me, but rather—in intelligence, Ioeo is. This making the choice for me: *any lack must be accounted for!*"

22. "All judgment aside: *we must pay to be less than the lasting empire.*"

23. "And these wonderful thoughts grieve me! Why not eat and or borrow what we might have worked for, all work for the lasting empire."

24. "Is this a bee problem or a frog problem? Or is it more a lasting empire problem?"

25. "You possibly cannot cause a problem for you or another, but you can beforehand pay for one."

26. "Is this our problem?"

27. "Who are we destroying but the destroyer himself?"

28. "If there is another reality like that of a harvest party—I will seek it out. And in doing so, I must let go of Ioeo, even Aoeo."

29. Geoffrey walks into the bathroom.

Moments Later...

30. "Geoff, did you here that" Matt picks his head up.

31. "*Geoff?*"

32. "*Geoff?*"

33. Matt walks over to the bathroom, he sees blood in the bathtub. Geoffrey comes stumbling out into the light. He picks up his bloody hands, he says, "I cut the lass out. *Its Out Now!*"

34. In the distance, on the bridge walls appear:

Why o why another guy?

Behind the Night Sky: Theater Script

*A lie but a lie, for it you could die, sigh. Yes you may cry,
through it the night fly, tie, my bitter night cry. Thank you
Behind the Night Sky, my eye, you've cure my I, my I ON
the skies, my I ON goodbyes.*

*Thank you,
Its out Now!
Goodbye!*

*Yours Truly,
The Rhyme Guy*

Life Behind the Night Sky 4

I must get my mom something special” I said—as I walked through the aisles of the big box store. There were so many things I could choose from.

2. “How about this candle set” Alice said as she pointed to one of the shelves, “if it’s from you she will love it.”

3. As she was saying this, I was thinking about what I got Alice, I knew that I wanted to get her something special—before we went to Orion, we would leave in two months this would be our last Holiday before we were citizens of Orion.

4. Snow was coming and so we hurried up the selection process and I agreed to settle for whatever she thought best.

5. “Your mom will love the candle set” Alice said as we pulled onto the highway.

6. “I hope so, this will be our last Holiday together as children, these moments have to be perfect, and my mom must know, she must discover it—in such a way that she will not stop us” I say.

7. Within what seemed to be minutes we got home and rushed into our apartment eager to wrap presents. We had tonight

to get the holidays ready before Gabriel came back from my mom's.

8. With holiday music playing Alice prepared dinner, I wrapped the presents.

9. Winter wonder played on the radio as snow began to fall. Our apartment was filled with the aroma of baked apple pie and ham. Alice was wonderful at baking, whatever she did in the kitchen was always my favorite, I had to wonder if these moments would be always exciting—if what the spacemen offered us—was not offered.

10. They told us that we would be permanently together, separate but together, sort of like soul mates. I wish I were there right now; I could solve some of the most important questions running through my mind. I looked down into the shopping bag and pulled out a framed painting I was giving to Grandpa Jed. On the painting were the words, *family is forever*. That is fitting I thought our family will always be.

11. Thinking about the last visit with Grandpa—I was filled with joy, I could not wait to give this to him, *but this would be the last time I would see him as a child*, after this I would have sealed for myself the truth of Gabriel, which takes a long time. Once I come back, I will have changed, but on the earth as well as in Grandpa's body will not have changed. Gabriel will not have changed either, she will still be one year old. For Alice and me billions upon billions of years will have passed, but on the earth when we return it will be the same, unless the whole family does what Jed said, and live as a rich family—possibly in a whole different time, maybe even the times of very few living beings on the earth, that is if all makes it possible.

12. Thinking about this stuff was exciting, but I had questions, I was still on the earth, and I had to wonder if my father was going to come back to the earth. I try to tell myself that I would not be here if he were not going to help raise Gabriel, but in the light of the earth—I could not feel as good as I could—if I were in the city. I had two months left and then reality will be my life, I will be okay.

13. “Dinners ready” Alice said from the kitchen. I walked into the kitchen happy to smell baked ham with pineapples. I was

Behind the Night Sky: Theater Script

hungry, I sat down gladly, thanked Alice, told her she was wonderful, and began to gather my plate.

14. That night after supper and all the duties were done, I lay next to Alice, her head resting on my shoulder, this will always be like this, love between Me and Alice, I knew a few good things about living and one of these was Alice.

15. I got sleepy and fell asleep.

Life Behind the Night Sky 5

I got presents,” I said as I opened the door to my mother’s house. Kids were already there waiting to open their presents. I showed off the big bag of presents I was holding hoping to excite the kids.

2. “Maple let us open ours now” the kids said. I caved in and started handing out the presents.

3. Hugs and kisses I got from the children, and I loved every moment of theirs.

4. I left Grandpa Jed’s present under the tree, once he noticed it, he opened it and yelled across the room and said, “isn’t that the truth.” I walked over to him and took a seat next to his hoping no one else would hear our conversation.

5. I said, “after you told me how I came to be and other great things I could not help but want to give you this gift, but I leave in two months how will I find you in the city.”

6. “Grandpa Jed tipped his chair back and said “I am glad you asked. There are laws in Orion, laws like not allowing others to enter the home occupied by the owner, so obviously that is not a possibility, but there are places that we can get together. They are like the earth. We can have family gatherings in such places. My father takes me to such places, places to fish or hike. There are public beaches, mountains, and whole worlds waiting for us to explore.

7. I have not mentioned this to you, but in the city, I have a job, I grow apples in the mountains of Apk, but not through old matter that exists but fresh matter, fresh from the love I give it. I grow some of the best apples around or at least some say so. I go to the Mountains of Apk every fifty years.”

8. I asked, “why do you not grow the apples in your own estate instead of the mountains.”

9. “If I grow them for Apk I feel like I am part of the bigger picture, creating love for my fellow man, it is the loving thing to do, plus I have two hundred children and want to set for them a good example. I have been in that city for a long time, more time than you can count, I bet you originally thought I was seventy, everyone who sees me on the earth thinks so. The earth does that age thing, the cavemen learned about people their own way and shared it with the surrounding environment until it appeared to be the truth of the people. If something taught you Maple you must get rid of the knowledge, I am trillions upon trillions of years old, and everybody in the city treats me like I am a beginner.” Grandpa explained.

10. Grandpa and I talked most of the day as the family came up—to give a merry greeting. Soon it was dinner and afterwards I knew that I must tell my mother my intentions and question her about her dealings with Orion.

11. The variety of food lightened up the atmosphere as I watched a lot of hands grab food...*their portion of a variety of food!* Green beans, stuffing, turkey, gravy, and Aunt Carol made her special dish which tended to be my main course.

12. I grabbed the large spoon that sat on top of the casserole and gathered as much green-bean-casserole as I could fit onto my plate.

13. Holiday music played throughout the house, and time went by fast, soon, after most had eaten—everyone explained that they must go home. I hear “didn’t the night fly by,” as someone walked out the door to their car.

14. I watched as most of the people gathered their belongings and walked out the door. Aunt Carol stayed behind; she thought it good to help my mother clean. As they were doing this Alice took over my mom’s effort to clean and told her she needed to rest. My Mom agreed and sat down in the living room.

15. This is the moment I considered; we have some time now to discuss Orion. I sat down on the couch next to her, a bit nervous, but anxious, the next couple of hours were going to be important.

Behind the Night Sky: Theater Script

16. I started talking... “Mom, we never talk about certain stuff, and I want to give it a try. My friends and I have discovered a portal, and that portal leads to a city, that would be the city the Universe is made up of. The Universe invited my friends and I to live there. I had a talk with Grandpa, and he explained that he has been living there for a long time. He also mentioned that I wasn’t born in a natural way, that you found me on the living room floor.”

17. “Gabriel came in a similar way,” I said.

18. My mother looked at me shocked, she struggled for words and said, “when do you plan on moving there?”

19. “In a couple of months,” I said.

20. “I will explain it the way I lived it” she said, “when I was younger. When I was a teenager I worked hard for a child, but in my young adult years the doctors told me that I could not have children. I was upset and began to seek help from the universe. Slowly things started happening for me, strange things, things that caused me to look deeper. I would not know if I would call it a portal, but a door opened into another dimension, your father did not know about it at the time, and I did not tell him. I went into that other dimension and found the future and not just the future, but reality, a new reality. The people there told me that I needed to make money because when I got back to the earth, I would have a child, I stayed in Orion until I had enough money. I did not see your father the whole time I made the money to take care of you, but one thing I did know was your father had to at some point, work—for your life to exist, for the truth, the truth that you were ours, that in truth you were our child, that you did not just appear there—by...*who knows?*”

21. “I know what Jed has been saying—that your father went to Orion—to establish our family as truth, as a family!”

22. “I just hope that it is true.”

23. “There is so much confusion in my mind, as if I have been on the earth for too long, I find it hard to except that I made money at all. Once you turned nineteen my money ran out and you appeared to have a child of your own, and like you, I faked reality to stay on the earth with you. When you appeared on the living room floor as a baby, I had to convince your father to pretend you were ours.”

24. In response to her story I said, “that is like Alice and me. Creatures that lived in the city explained to Alice that I had lived with Gabriel in the future, she immediately found herself to be with hopes of a child. She did not know what to say about that,”

25. “So, when we were in Florida together, she convinced me to say the baby was mine. Through the experience I slowly fell in love with her, I knew I did not want to lie to everyone, but I loved her. The love was so intense that after a while I found myself proving the child was mine.”

26. As we spoke, I started wondering how my mom would get back to the city. When I questioned her, she said “they usually come and get me; they have throughout your whole life, this time I am wondering, if it would be best—if I go with you. Hopefully, I will find your father there.

27. Alice walked into the living room after cleaning and I said, “I told her everything, about Gabriel and Orion as well as our plan on living there in a couple of months.”

Life Behind the Night Sky 6

Months passed quickly and the day came, Brenda, Max, Brendon Bam, Alice, my mom, and I stood at the entrance to the portal. “Are we ready” I said in a loud voice.

2. We walked through the opening and within seconds all of us were in a room surrounded by wild vegetation. In the distance we saw the spacemen walking toward us.

3. They took us, most of us who had never lived in Orion; we had to be physically redesigned—to live on the level of cleanliness and structure required—to sustain life. My mother was treated with luxury in Orion for bearing a child.

4. The red-colored spaceman led me into a golden built, marvelous, out of this world designed room, he led me into the room, it appeared to be a hospital. Golden, clean, and sparkly tools were throughout the room.

5. “Come!” the spaceman said—pointing to a huge golden sphere, large enough to fit a person on the inside; most of the sphere was hollow, but a notable structure.

Behind the Night Sky: Theater Script

6. “The sphere will move, hold onto the gold, there is nothing to fear,” the spaceman said.

7. With bare feet I walk the narrow golden steps, I place my hands on the bars of the sphere—embracing myself.

8. The spaceman began to give a touch of charity to some of the buttons and objects in the room.

9. The sphere begins to move.

10. My body begins to feel such love and ecstasy—I never thought were possible—for a living being to feel.

11. *I am being cleaned; I am being washed!*

12. Cookies, mint, and candy filled the air.

13. I could feel years of garbage being removed from my body.

14. *This is unbelievable!*

15. Days was my body worked upon in absolute charity.

16. The others had similar experiences.

17. After we got an official place in Orion, the spacemen brought my mom home to be with Dad, us kids went for the ride.

18. We walked up to the gates of their estate. My dad quickly noticed and shouted Sonny, I ran up to him and gave him a big hug.



19. I explained to him the money and house offered to Alice and me, that I was going to my new home to make home and afterwards I wanted us all to go back to the same time on the earth and play rich family. He laughed and greatly welcomed the idea.

20. Alice and I walked into our brand-new house, making plans as we went. The spacemen thought Alice and I were a good investment and treated us to luxuries as well as millions of dollars. With that money we furnished our home.

21. Soon we would be back on the earth raising Gabriel and helping her to see the light behind the night sky.

22. “Gabriel was truly our child” Alice says—confident we will establish our lives—as well as Gabriel’s.

23. “Yes, Gabriel is ours... Perhaps the spacemen nor their city were bad.”

24 Alice walks close to me and gives me a comfortable hug, “I love you Maple,” she says!

25. *“The world Behind the Night Sky, is incredible, rich, and booming with activity!”*

26. *“I now know, I know! Creatures built a city Behind the Night Sky, they control the world below through giant cellphone towers, they have power over the very waves that make us, us! Mr. Ward was right, ‘waves coming from outer space is Ah...’ Behind the Night Sky!”*

27. “It was behind the sky,” I say to Alice, “it was...behind, (i.e., covered),” grabbing her hand and walking into our several-million-dollar-home that resided Behind the Night Sky!

The End.

Characters

come out of the

tunnel,



people.

these

are

spirits,

and

Epilogue

“Dora, I met this young creature named Maple, you know the ones you gave Gabriel too. They have this whole theory on Gabriel and how they created that child and how you truly could not have adopted that baby,” Matthew says.

“And you know what Geoff, the next time you fight another’s negative will, write it down while eating something positive, that will spare you the bloody mess,” Dora explains.

GB says, “the baby was adopted, which makes sense, I mean who loses their child...”

Kelly adds, “makes me wonder if the G in GB means Bark.”

And you know what Matthew,” I say, “*The world Behind the Night Sky, is incredible, rich, and booming with activity! I now know, I know! Creatures built a city Behind the Night Sky, they control the world below through giant cellphone towers, they have power over the very waves that make us, us!*”

All say, “I did not get the story, I did not get the story in the least!” “That Clutter in the front of the door Jill was not there,” Tom says.

“Exactly, it was not, but now it is, let’s forget about it, I never thought we would have seen something strange coming over to the old mansion, I simply wanted to impress Steph,” I say looking at Tom.

“That was amazing Jill,” Steph says wrapping her arms around me saying, Lets go home!”

Behind the Night Sky

**Finding Run Personal Computer DBR
DBR Theater Script**

—Brendon G.M.C. Holden—

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

Behind the Night Sky

Introduction

The Behind the Night Sky theater Script is a small dream come true. Now that I have finished it, as well as the novel *Behind the Night Sky: Finding Run Personal Computer PBR*, I could want nothing more than to attempt to fulfill my original intent: to make sort of a franchise out of *Behind the Night Sky*, but not only *Behind the Night Sky*, but *The Game*, *Clutter in my Closet*, *TV Snow*, and *ION*. I have decided to attempt to do this through the Behind the Night Sky kids clubs, obviously with the publics' help! To give a gift to Behind the Night Sky, visit either www.behindthenightsky.com or www.drawingsbybrendon.com, we accept gifts of all types!

I truly have enjoyed watching this script come together; I delight in the hope—that you too will see what Behind the Night Sky is—in inviting this show to your school, meeting halls and places that practice theater. I want nothing more than the generations to come to practice theater, write music, write books, create art, film, understand the beginnings of the personal computer, [a system of black code dancing the light] and work together on the future of music, art, theater, moving slides and literature.

If you have never read or heard of *Behind the Night Sky*, I invite you to read the script, I challenge you to look through it. I believe you will quickly fall in love with its characters, music, and storyline. If you would like more on the hardcopy of the story or perhaps the trilogy to Behind the Night Sky, you may email me: cartoonsbybrendon@yahoo.com and request some of the work or visit: (www.drawingsbybrendon.com) and buy a copy.

It has been several years working up to 2023 and a variety of BTNS theater scrips before this one; *what shall I say, I learned to write as I went*, and this is what makes the **Behind the Night Sky kids clubs** so important, *not that we have finished, rather that we have not*.

If you are interested in finding more from *Behind the Night Sky*, I invite you to visit the website: (www.behindthenightsky.com) and perhaps find your part *Behind the Night Sky*. The more support BTNS receives from public places the longer the website stays up

and running... the longer the website is up and running the more time we will have to build kids clubs, the more time we will have to work on our careers, the more we can grow our economy.

Thank you for being part of Behind the Night Sky and thank you for all those that have supported me and the pleasant journey of Behind the Night Sky

Thank you!

—Brendon G.M.C Holden

If you create an introduction before each show, mentioning non-profits or the progress of the kids' clubs or anything else that you maybe want to introduce, this is the calculated fifteen minutes in the table of contents... without the show is about one and a half hours in length.

Brendon G.M.C. Holden

© 2011
Brendon Holden
all rights reserved.

This script is not intended to be used as a lawful magical code to a theater show, but rather it is the gravity to a show. You can make your own judgments, for instance—which instruments you prefer, or which materials you would like to include or remove. Maybe you would like more of a character on a character or maybe you would like to remove a character all together. *And that you can do!*

I would advise making it your own, being creative, disregarding the fact that most likely due to this script's gravity you are going to be walking on the foundation I laid out in this script.

Maple takes her mind—conclude to move things out of place, leaving himself without answer.

This sets her mind free—from from what she thinks she knows, to what is known. This happens in the book, by a child named Gabriel, she is given in such a way, that Gabriel as Maple's child—appears without cause. This is the theme for the book as well as the theater version of Behind the Night Sky, (giving Maple and her friends out-of-place realities, to allow Maple and her friends to consider other realities.) Answering the question to what lies behind the night sky.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

Behind the Night Sky

Behind the Night Sky: Finding Run Personal Computer PBR Theater Script

Written in A minor

Adagio

Vocal

Written by

Brendon G.M.C. Holden

End

p

(Running time 01:45:00)

Pno.

11 Songs

Behind the Night Sky Theme Song

Knowing All

Happy

Brendon's Behind the Night Sky: Stones

I'll Stay

Jasper

Just Type It

Machine Echo: if you really think about it

Train through the portal

Come Back, back to Life

Gold

Self-Published © 2020,2021,2022,2023

Vocal

If you do use this script publicly the author would care to know, yet feel free to perform it for educational purposes.

Copyright © 2023

Brendon GMC Holden

All rights reserved.

Printed in the USA

Vocal

high
look
see
falling I be-gan to
to see what was
a world made for
city
look
me

Pno.

Behind the Night Sky: Theater Script

Behind the Night Sky

Materials needed.



Written in A minor

Written by

Brendon G.M.C. Holden

Adagio

Vocal

1) Two-dimensional cardboard boxcar

2) Country landscape a few cardboard houses.

3) Three 8 × 8 feet tables

4) Amusement Park painting and upright park map, an amusement attraction of your choice.

5) Teacher's desk

6) Three student desks

7) Five cellphones

8) Something of a school bell

9) Prom items: *disco ball, balloons, food etc.*

10) Inside Florida house

11) Electronics

12) Plastic garden plants

13) Pretend paper mill corporation signs.

14) Two alien costumes

15) A pretend bed

16) Bam's closet, colorful stones

17) Cardboard robot suits

18) Cardboard golden halls

19) Cardboard paper mill machinery powered by a smoke machine.

20) Tablecloth

pp

ff

Thoughtful Creative Dance

Future and more interesting songs near 2 minutes

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

Behind the Night Sky

Theme Song

Written in A minor:

[stick and string

Written by

23) Plastic fence

24) Ringing phone

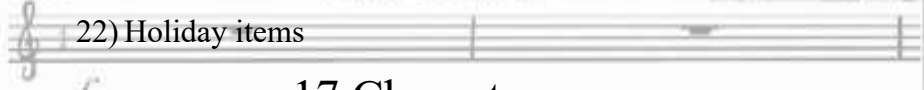
Adagio

can work.]

Brendon G.M.C. Holden

25) Wedding stuff.

Vocal



22) Holiday items

17 Characters

f

Piano

1) Maple

2) Alice

3) Bam

12) Two Shadow creatures

Vocal

4) Max

5) Brenda

6) Brendon

13) Lizzy

14) Robot 1 and 2

15) Far-out-mike

Piano

7) Maples Mom and Dad

8) Grandpa Jed

9) Physics teacher Mr. Ward

10) Two Extraterrestrials

11) Baby Gabriel

16) Gold

17) Restaurant mom and child

18) Principal of *West Dale High School*

19) Marriage ceremony people of your choice

Musical instruments needed.

Although this entire show could be done with just the piano, I would prefer if the instruments below were included:

- 1) Piano

Knowing All

- 2) Drums
- 3) 2 Strings
- 4) Violin
- 5) Bass guitar
- 6) Guitar
- 7) Computer/electronic sounds
- 8) Symbol crash
- 9) Rocks
- 10) A drum consisting of a stick and chalkboard and stick and gravestone.

Written by

Samuel Goldwyn & Holden



Knowing all

*Written by
Brendon J.M.C. Holden*

Copyright © 2020
Brendon Holden
All rights reserved.

Knowing all is the make-believe world/visuals in Maple's mind, setting the stage for Maple's search of knowing all! Ultimately leading the way for her discovering the truth behind the night sky.

In the song she questions the knowledge of the earth; we see some of the thoughts Maple has—as she questions the world around her.

The two dark-creatures are a make-believe visual of her thoughts, (one thought bouncing an idea off of another, sort of as positive and negative.)

*To bring memory of
my grandfather,
Shadow Walker*

Behind the Night Sky: Theater Script

Knowing All

Act 1



The first half consists of giving the setting for who Maple is, and a question: where did her child come from? ...and then where does Maple need to be.

Maple is searching for knowledge, and not only knowledge but the reason that her lie, (*Gabriel being her child,*) is the truth! Maple needs answers!

At the very beginning of the show the Behind the Night Sky Theme Song plays, towards the end of the song, around I think I want to know, strings playing for a few minutes, Maple says:

*"I need to know! I need to know, but I am too young to know, how do I understand my surroundings—if one word can have several meanings? I must find the knowledge of all things, and I did!
...This is my journey, my journey finding: Run Personal Computer PBR."*

Curtain opens to Maples bed.

Thought thinking creature dance—begins to take place—from the *Behind the Night Sky Theme song*, (dance indicated on the sheet music,) and then some more of the Behind the Night Sky Theme song, strings playing for a few "I think I want to know; I think I would care to know," and then transitioning to Knowing All.

And then *Knowing All* plays. Two Shadow characters representing Maple's thoughts (*1 and 0 like the binary code,*) one at the piano and the other sort of tap dancing in Maple's bedroom. Maple in her bedroom from time-to-time sings "do not worry about me daddy" adding onto *Knowing All*. In this pre scene she is transitioning from a young child to a young adult.

Knowing All



Scene 1: Her and her family move to Vermont.

Scene 2: Introduction to school life.

Scene 3: Mr. Ward and his giant cellphone theory!

Vocal Scene 4: Maple is giving reason to ask questions.

Toward the end of the first half, she is covering for her newly acquired lover Alice, she is covering up the truth by saying the child is theirs together. She, Maple, in Scene four she mentions to her parents that she gave Alice a baby, this ending the first half, *close curtain*. This oddity gives Maple a reason to ask questions, but not only this oddity but odd things have been happening in Maple's school life, cellphones were introduced into the small town they were living in.

Piano

Calculated within each scene the time is roughly one minute to scene switches.

Vocal

Piano

Vocal

Piano

Knowing All

Scene 01



Moving to Vermont

Total time needed for scene 01: [00:11:00]

Two Stage setting: [Set 01: A small bedroom. Set 02: a bigger than normal box car and a country landscape painting in the background.]

Songs needed for Scene 01:

- *Theme song. See page: 017*
- *Knowing all. See page: 023*
- *Happy. See page: 031*

(Scene 01 Section 01, time needed: 00:08:30)

At the very beginning of the show the Behind the Night Sky Theme Song plays, [*Curtain Closed*] towards the end of the song, around I think I want to know, strings playing for a few minutes, Maple says:

"I need to know! I need to know, but I am too young to know, how do I understand my surroundings—if one word can have several meanings? I must find the knowledge of all things, and I did!

...This is my journey, my journey finding: Run Personal Computer PBR."

Set 01: A small bedroom.

Curtain opens.

Knowing All

² Thought thinking creature dance—begins to take place—from the *Behind the Night Sky Theme song*, (dance indicated on the sheet music,) and then some more of the Behind the Night Sky Theme song, strings playing for a few Saying “I think I want to know; I think I would care to know,” and then transitioning to Knowing All.

And then Knowing all plays. Two Shadow Characters representing her thoughts (*1 and 0 like the binary code*.) 1 at the piano and the other sort of tap dancing in Maple’s bedroom. Maple in her bedroom from time-to-time sings “³do not worry about me daddy” adding onto Knowing All. In this pre-Scene she is transitioning from a young child to a young adult.

Close curtain

(Scene 01 Section 02, time needed: 00:01:30)

Knowing All fades out and happy begins to play.

Curtain opens.

A little before the curtain opens and afterwards play on the piano the song happy.

Happy plays as Maple, Maple’s Mom, and Dad drive to Vermont.

(Walk the 2D/cardboard car around the stage)

² Opportunity to invent a dark dance. Have fun with it, keep in mind something is better than nothing.

³ Looking back, some of the jazz sounds like the words, try to find those sounds, this is where Maple prepares to leave childhood.

Knowing All

As the song is ending, the characters within the car say:

Maple's Dad: [*Hesitant*] I think this is the house! This is the house, right?

Maple's Mom: [*Sure*] No, it is the one next to the red house!

Maple's Dad: I am sure when Martha showed it to us it was next to the blue house. [*confused*]

Maple: If you go into the house next to the blue one and someone answers, you will know it was next to the red house.

Maple's Dad: Okay, Maple, then you go knock, we will park at the end of the driveway, if someone answers tell them that you're selling cookies.

Maple: But I do not have any cookies.

Maple's Dad: Well...just tell them they are in the car and once you get back to the car we will just go to the next house.

Maple: Um, Dad, I will just tell them [*pause*] the truth.

Close Curtain

Knowing All

Writen by
Shirley G. Hill & Eddie



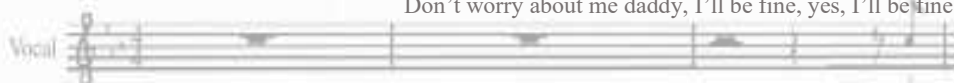
Writen by
Piano



f Don't worry about me daddy



Don't worry about me daddy, I'll be fine, yes, I'll be fine.



p



Copyright © 1954

Published by

Music Publishers

Happy

Written by
Brendon G.M.C. Holden



Happy

Written by
Brendon G.M.C. Holden

Copyright © 2020
Brendon Holden
All rights reserved

Note:

Do not be afraid to play many variation with the few notes in the treble clef. (They have a sound that makes them flow well together.)

Page 2: measure 10, 11, 12 and page 3: measure 1,2,3,4 play smoothly, connected, and at a quicker pace; try to picture stream of flowing water.

Behind the Night Sky: Theater Script

Happy

Written in D major
Adults

Written by
Brendan O'Brien, Todd S. Robinson

The musical score for 'Happy' is presented in a system of six staves. The first staff is a vocal line in treble clef with a key signature of one sharp (F#) and a 4/4 time signature. It contains three measures of whole notes, each with a fermata. The second staff is a piano accompaniment in grand staff (treble and bass clefs). It begins with a piano (*mp*) dynamic marking. The piano part features a rhythmic pattern of eighth notes in the right hand and quarter notes in the left hand. The third staff is another vocal line, identical to the first. The fourth staff is the piano accompaniment, continuing the rhythmic pattern. The fifth staff is a vocal line with three measures of whole notes and fermatas. The sixth staff is the piano accompaniment, which includes a melodic line in the right hand that descends over the final two measures of the system.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

Happy

Written in F major
Adagio

Written by
Brendon G.M.C. Holden

The musical score is arranged in three systems. Each system consists of a vocal line and a piano accompaniment line. The vocal lines are written in treble clef with a key signature of one flat (F major). The piano accompaniment is written in grand staff (treble and bass clefs). The first system shows the beginning of the piece with a piano introduction. The second system continues the melody and accompaniment. The third system concludes the piece with a final piano accompaniment flourish. The tempo is marked 'Adagio'.

Happy

Written in 18 major

Written by
Brandon J. O.C. Holden

Adagio

Vocal



Piano



Vocal



Piano



Vocal



Piano



Vocal



END

Piano



BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

Brendon's Behind the Night Sky

Stones

Written by

Brendon G.M.C. Holden

Brendon's Behind the Night Sky

Scene 02

Meeting Bam

Total time needed for scene 02: [00:06:20]

Two Stage setting: [Set 01: School Lunch Hall, a school cafeteria, a few 8-foot tables. A few children at each table. Maple and Bam share one entire table. Set 02: An amusement park.]

Songs needed for Scene 02:

- *Brendon's Behind the Night Sky. See page: 041*

Copyright © 2020

Brendon Holden

All rights reserved

(Scene 02 Section 01, time needed: 00:01:20)

Set 01: School lunch hall, a school cafeteria, a few 8-foot tables. A few children at each table.

Open Curtain

Cafeteria sounds

Maple sits alone for a moment and then Bam walks over.

Maple: [*abruptly*] Hi!

Bam: [*being nice*] Can I sit here?

Maple: [*Girly*] Yeah, sure.

Bam: [*Being kind*] You must be new here.

Maple: Yeah, it is my first day, my parents just moved here...my dad found a job at a Paper mill.

Bam: I have been going to this school since the fifth grade, but... [*pause*]

Copyright 2020

Brendon Holden

All rights reserved

Bam: [*embarrassed*]...back then the school was under construction, and we had to do our school in temporary trailers, the teacher called them mini classes.

Bam laughs [*Humiliated*]

Maple: You laughed as if you did not learn much.

Bam: I know they needed me to pass for the sake of their jobs, but I didn't think I should have passed...if that's what you're asking!

Maple: [*changing the subject*] You know, my old school was much bigger, and it was attached to a high school.

Bam: That will make you popular around here! ...I will show you around. [*ending lunch, walking out together*]

Lights fade and a spotlight falls on Maple.

[The mature voice of Maple]

Bam and I became good friends during my eighth-grade year at North Dale Middle School!

Quickly eighth grade went by, as if time decided to skip school once I was in authority.

Before the year ended and I began a new school (a high School) my entire eighth grade class took a class trip, a trip to an Amusement Park!

Same stage: light up the amusement park setting of your choice, example: food stand or a small amusement ride.

Maple simply walks onto the set.

Set 02: An amusement park.

At the Amusement Park

Bam: Maple this is Lizzy. [*Being kind*]

Brendon's

Behind the Night Sky

Bam: Lizzy this is Maple.

Lizzy: The new school we are going to be going too, is one of the top schools in the country, and not only top but all the teachers think computers will be the future!

[Maple giggles]

Bam: That is funny!

Bam: if computers are going to be the future, then why don't we all have one?

Lizzy: I am just the messenger, that's what the principle told my mom.

Maple: the principle just says stuff.

Bam: Just the other day he was talking about a minicomputer, so small it will fit into your pocket, yet more powerful than the big computers today.

Lizzy: I suppose you two are right, but I am not telling him that.

(Scene 02 Section 02, time needed: 00:04:00)

Play Song: Brendon's Behind the Night Sky See page: 041

Close Curtain

Brendon's

Behind the Night Sky

Stones

Written by:
Brendon G.B.C. Holden

Written in E7
Allegro

Vocal

mp

Piano

Vocal

f

Piano

Vocal

p like not emotional, I need go back

Piano

Vocal

we say it - of talk to my friends, we what they think of his town and

Piano

Light Stone tap *x* Create about
Heart with
Heavy Stone tap *x* stones

Copyright © 2011
Brendon G.B.C. Holden
All Rights Reserved
Web Site: www.brendonholden.com

Brendon's

Scene 03

Window into the unknown

Total time needed for scene 02: [00:03:35]

Two stage setting: [Set 01: a physics classroom, Mr. Ward's desk and a few students at their desks. Set 02: A lake/cabin scene dimly lit in the corner of the stage.]

Songs needed for Scene 03:

- N/A

(Scene 03 Section 01, time needed: 00:01:25)

Set 01: a physics classroom, Mr. Ward's desk, and a few students at their desks.

School bell rings.

Open Curtain

Chatter

Mr. Ward: Okay, everyone, sit down, this is High School, it is much different than Grade School!

Chatter and laughter

Mr. Ward: As you might know, my name is: Mr. Ward, I will be teaching this physics class for the year.

Mr. Ward: I want you all to focus on this class, it is important; I will be going over the very elements that make us, us!

[Lizzy raises her hand]

Lizzy: Like what?

Brendon's

Mr. Ward: Wavelengths, photons, and the quantum. I need you all to know how they apply to the modern world and how they apply to us!

Mr. Ward: And because of the importance placed on me by the school, I need you all to have a cellphone.

Maple: You mean...

Bam: You want our parents to buy us one?

Mr. Ward: Yes, exactly!

Bam: My dad will not answer if I ask him.

Maple: Are atoms and the binary code the same thing?

Mr. Ward: we will be studying those topics later in the year, as the great Dr. Cake said, *'learning without millions of years to do so is vain,'* and as I say, waves coming from outer space is, ah...

Lights fade and a spotlight falls on Maple:

The voice of Maple:

We, the students, asked our parents for a cellphone that year and as predicted they bought us one.

...And that was my freshmen year at high school...

As well as Mr. Ward and his belief the future would be made up of giant wavelength towers controlling the world below!

Set 02: A lake/cabin scene dimly lit in the corner of the stage.

Same Stage Light up a lake scene in the corner of the stage

Summer Break

(Scene 03 Section 02, time needed: 00:00:30)

Maple's mom: Your Father and I have rented out a cabin by the lake for you and your friends this summer!

Maple: Yes!!! Thank you!

The Voice of Maple:

To make the cabin at the Lake a bit livelier I invited my recently introduced friends Brendon and Alice.

...Bam was invited too.

Maple: Bam what did you bring to eat?

Bam: Hot dogs and hamburgers!

Maple: Great!

Brendon: I invited Max and Brenda, I hope you do not mind, they will be here later in the day!

(Max and Brenda softly walk onto the stage)

Brendon: Maple and Bam, this is Max, and this is Brenda.

Bam and Maple: Hi

They all go for a swim and as they come out of the water.

Max: Did you all see that?

Brendon: No, what?

Max: Look up!

[*They all look up*]

[*Lights flash in the sky*]

All say: Wow, amazing and wonderful.

(Scene 03 Section 02, time needed: 00:00:40)

Back at School

Maple: Bam what do you think the flashing light in the sky was this summer?

Bam: Let us say you're looking at an object...

Bam: It took time for the object to shine its light into your eyes but what the object did apart from shining in your eyes is reality...It is the same idea with the stars...the reality is out there!

Maple: So, we do not see reality...

Maple: ...the reality Behind the Great Oz, Behind the Night Sky!

Bam: Exactly Maple!

Close Curtain

I'll Stay

Scene 04

Written by: A. Miller

Book:

Written by:

Florida

Total time needed for scene 02: [00:08:00]

Two Stage setting: [Set 01: School lunch hall, a school cafeteria, a few 8-foot tables, but design it to look like a prom. Set 02: Same stage Maple's parents' house and Florida house.]

Songs needed for Scene 04:

- *I'll Stay*. See page: 059

(Scene 04 Section 01, time needed: 00:00:34)

Set 01: School lunch hall, a school cafeteria, a few 8-foot tables, but design it to look like a prom.

Curtain Opens

[Act out sophomore year quickly.]

[Prom begins.]

[Some children dancing, some children on their cellphones]

[All the balloons in the gym burst.]

Bam, Alice, and Maple rush to ask the principle: [*shocked*] did you have that arranged?

Principle: [confused] What?

Maple: The balloons, they all just popped at one moment.

Principle: No!

Principle pulls his phone out of his pocket, sort of like one of the teenagers...

Principle: Times have changed kids!

[Maple looks at Bam, she says, lets go back to the dance floor]

[Maple and Alice Dancing at the Prom]

Alice: My mom is moving to Florida; will you spend the summer with us?

Maple: Yeah, but I must ask my parents.

Maple: If Bam wants to, can he come too?

Alice: Yeah, sure.

(Curtain closes, reopens to...)

Set 02: Same stage Maple's parents' house and Florida house.)

[Maple asks her parents]

Maple: Can I spend the Summer in Florida?

Maple's parents: That would be good for you.

(Small scene change: Bam's bedroom)

(Maple asks Bam)

Maple: Do you want to spend the summer in Florida?

Bam: Yes!

(The drive to Florida)

(Scene 04 Section 02, time needed: 00:01:15)

Set 02: Florida house.

(Mid-Way at a fast-food restaurant)

Child: Little microbes make the food, napkins, and equipment.

Mom: What do you mean?

Child: They, the little microbes slowly build the napkins and other stuff, they do it to keep us away.

Maple and Bam give one another a confused look.

mp (Florida House)

Alice's Mom: Well, that is everything, thanks you all.

Pno. Alice: Now that we are done, let's go to the beach.

Everyone: Happy sounds.

Vocal
Voice of Maple:

All summer, most of the time we were at the beach.

Pno. (End of Summer) *END*

Alice: Maple, Bam, I have something to tell you.

Bam: What?

Vocal Alice: I am Pregnant.

[*Bam and Maple act shocked.*]

Bam: Who is the lucky guy?

Pno. Alice: Um, I need one of you to pretend the baby is yours.

Maple: Huh, why?

Alice: Because...

Maple: I will!

Alice: Good.

Pno. [*Voice of Maple*]

Bus back to Vermont

I did because we had become good friends since high school, like best friends, like that is what we lived for, like blood brothers or sisters.

(Scene 04 Section 03, time needed: 00:00:15)

Maple's Mom: Honey your home, how was Florida?

Maple: Great.

Maple's mom: You seem like you're holding something back.

Maple: Alice is pregnant, and we are planning on getting married.

Maple's mom: ... [*Reluctantly she says*] ...Great, I am going to be a grandma.

[*Maple's Dad walks into the room*]

Maple's dad: Maple, your home.

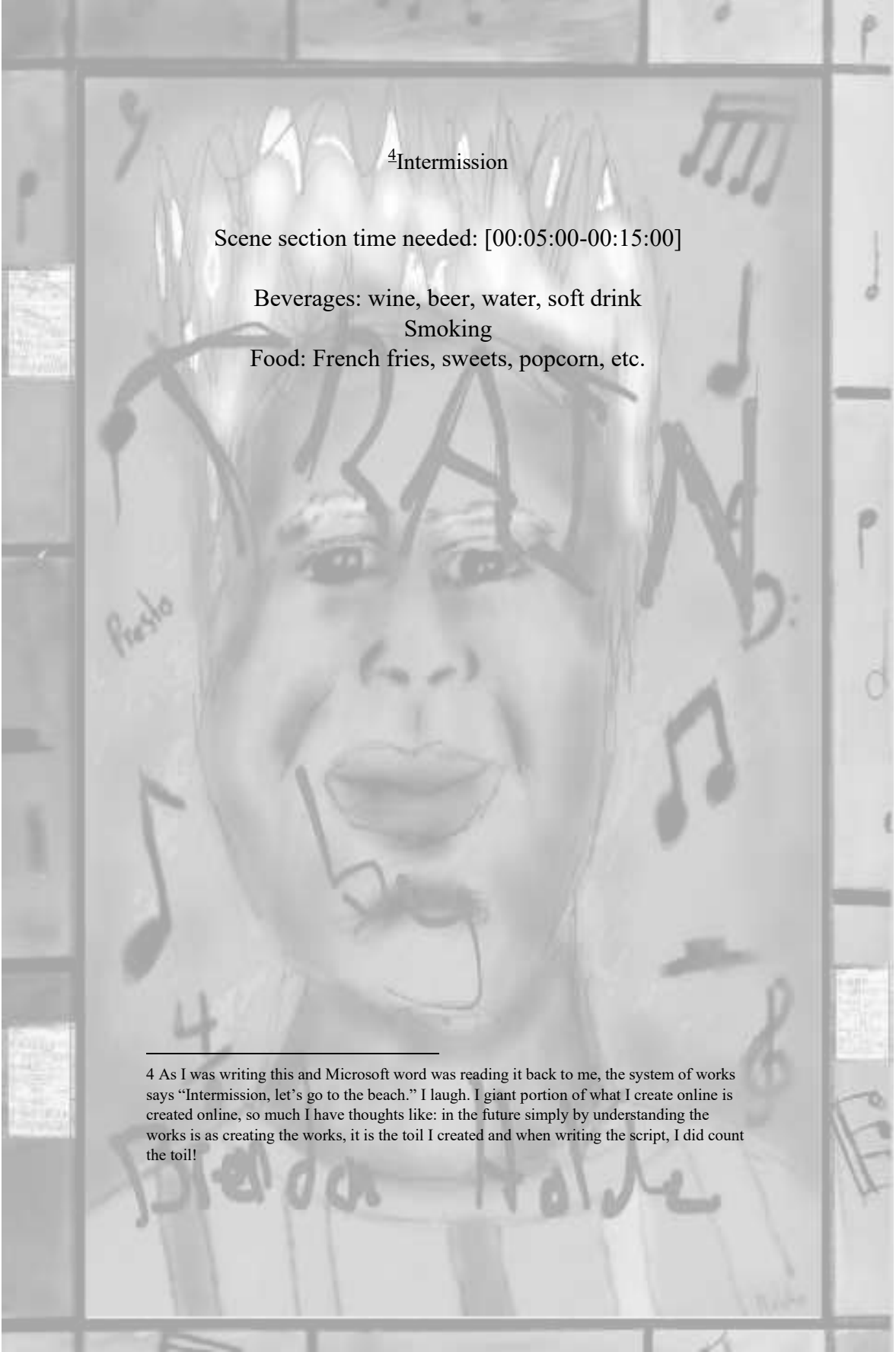
Maple's mom: Maple [pause] gave Alice a baby...they plan on getting married.

Maple's dad: I'm proud of you, you're going to need a job and I got the best one for you, it's at the Paper Mill!

(Scene 04 Section 04, time needed: 00:04:00)

Play song: I'll Stay. See page 059

Close Curtain



⁴Intermission

Scene section time needed: [00:05:00-00:15:00]

Beverages: wine, beer, water, soft drink

Smoking

Food: French fries, sweets, popcorn, etc.

⁴ As I was writing this and Microsoft word was reading it back to me, the system of works says "Intermission, let's go to the beach." I laugh. I giant portion of what I create online is created online, so much I have thoughts like: in the future simply by understanding the works is as creating the works, it is the toil I created and when writing the script, I did count the toil!

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

Train

through the portal

Written by
Erendon G.M.C. Holden

Copyright © 2020
Erendon Holden
All Rights Reserved.

*Mr Rags is building and is a quantum computer. Let that be
your muse or rather Mus. D., Mus Dr.*

Train

through the portal

Act 2

Written in F^b

Written by

Piano

In the second half of the theater show... reality of life behind the night sky is revealed.

In scene five Maple—through her friend Bam—she discovers a portal. She decides to take the rest of their friends through the portal. Maple and her friends being brought to a portal is to be the answers to her questions, especially the question to where Gabriel had come from.

Vocal

Following her questions, her, and her friend at the paper mill, Far-out-Mike—get hurt in an explosion, resulting in Mike passing on. This leads to many more questions and an eagerness to find answers.

Piano

She and her friends do not trust the creatures living Behind the Night Sky—until her grandfather Jed explains to her the truth, mentioning that she herself was such a baby, a baby that came in an unnatural way.

Vocal

In the end of her story the truth behind the portal is the truth, the truth to life, the place that all must go—for real life, this all because the Universe was dominated, and thus being controlled by giant wavelength towers behind the Night Sky. Summing up the entire story by saying: *“The world Behind the Night Sky, is incredible, rich, and booming with activity! I now know, I know! Creatures built a city Behind the Night Sky, they control the world below through giant cellphone towers, they have power over the very waves that make us, us! Mr. Ward was right, ‘waves coming from outer space is Ah...’ Behind the Night Sky!”*

Vocal

Scene 5 Maple gets a job and apartment, giving room for Alice to move in with her. One night Maple has a dream, she

Train

immediately tells the dream to Bam who has a closet prepared to another dimension.

Scene 6 Maple takes everyone to explore this new world. The friends who go through the portal get shown around a new world of tropical plants and gold.

Scene 7 Maple gets hurt in an explosion, killing Mike, leaving her with scars in which the insurance company gives Maple \$50,000 which she decides to use for a wedding.

Scene 8 they have a wedding, they begin to question Brendon... why he did not go through the portal when they all did. Brendon, being jealous goes to act to go through the portal.

Scene 9 Brendon coming back out of the portal, the group seizes the opportunity at Jed's house to talk about where they stand with the city of Orion. Jed sures Maple the city of Orion is a good city.

Scene 10 is a holiday party which maple decides to talk with her mom about the friends deciding to live in Orion, Maple's mom admits she has been living there. All the friends including Maple's mom walk through the portal. Maple reunites with her dad and is giving a home Behind the Night Sky.

The truth in the story of Maple and Alice's journey makes the claim that Gabriel was truly their child!

The image shows a musical score for piano and vocal parts. The piano part is written in a grand staff (treble and bass clefs) and features a steady eighth-note accompaniment. The vocal part is written in a single staff with a treble clef and contains several rests, indicating a vocal line that is not fully written out in this section. Chord symbols are placed above the piano part: F Cm, F Cm, A Cm, and A Cm.

Train

Scene 05

Written in E^b

Written by:

Bam's portal

Total time needed for scene 05: [00:06:30]

Three Stage setting: [Set 01: A papermill office. Set 02: Dimly lit bedroom. Set 03: Bam's Closet portal.]

Songs needed for Scene 05:

- *Train through the portal. See page: 073*

(Maple and her father go to the Paper Mill. Same stage dimly lit bedroom. Same stage dimly lit Bam's bedroom closet.)

(Scene 05 Section 01, time needed: 00:00:25)

Maple's Father as promised...brings Maple to the paper mill to apply for a job.

Maple: [*politely*] Can I please have an application?

[*Bossy*] Mill Manager looks at Maple and then her father...

Paper Mill Manager: [*Rough*] Fill this out.

Maple quickly fills out the application handed to her.

The Paper Mill Manager looks at Maple and then at her father and then at the application.

Paper Mill Manager: [*Chewing gum*] Yeah, sure you are hired!

Maple: Thank you!

Maple and her father walked out to their car.

Maple's Dad: Now you are going to need an apartment.

Written in 1/4

Close curtain briefly

Presto

(Scene 05 Section 02, time needed: 00:00:35)

Voice of Maple.

Vocal

I got an apartment and after months of work and setting things up, I invited Alice and her Baby to come back up to Vermont to live...and she did!

Piano

Time went on for Alice and I and we became close, one night while lying in bed next to Alice, I had a dream:

Open curtain, have a setting of Maples small bedroom as she dreams:

Vocal

[Extraterrestrials in a room showing holograms to Maple.]

Extraterrestrial: Maple time on earth is past light, the place you are in right now is thee place, the place of time.

Piano

Extraterrestrial 2: The baby, Gabriel is yours, you gave it to Alice in the future...from the place we are now.

[Maple awakes.]

Vocal

Maple: Wow, I wonder if that is true!

[Maple attempts to wake Alice, but in the attempt changes her mind.]

Piano

Same stage but light up Bam's apartment, be sure to add a closet with charged stones.

Bam's apartment...

Vocal

(Scene 05 Section 03, time needed: 00:00:30)

Maple: [Anxious] Bam, Bam...

Piano

Bam: [Calm] Yeah, over here!

Train



Maple: You would never believe the dream I had, Gabriel is mine, I sent it through time travel, to the past to now.

Bam: I believe you Maple!

Bam: ...Check this out, it's a portal into that dream or some other dimension.

Bam: I took charged stones and placed them around the door frame.

Maple: [*without thought*] Let's walk in.

They do! ...They walk into a room full of electronics...

Maple: Weird

Bam: Strange

Maple: Lets go back.

(Back in Bam's bedroom)

Maple: We must do that again, but this time let's bring everyone...

(Scene 05 Section 01, time needed: 00:04:00)

Play song Train through the portal. *A creative dance, your choice, your style.*⁵

Close Curtain

⁵ I believe that if you have an actor or dancer that can do, place it in the show [don't worry if it is spelled correct per se.], and from there, in that liberty you have an actor or dancer. Make it fit, something is better than nothing.

Train

Scene 06



Written in E!

Piano

Inside the City

Vocal

Total time needed for scene 06: [00:10:00]

Two Stage setting: [Set 01: Part of stage, a room full of electronics. Set 02: the other part a tropical garden and Golden halls.]

Songs needed for Scene 06:

- *Just Type It. See page: 087*
- *Machine Echo: if you really think about it. See page: 093*

(Scene 06 Section 01, time needed: 00:01:20)

Set 01: Room full of electronics.

Open Curtain

[Maple brought her friends through the portal.]

Alice: Where are we?

Maple: We don't know yet, Bam thinks it's the way to the light we saw in the sky.

Max: If there is such a thing as death, this must be it.

[Robots walk into the room]

[Everyone lets out a sound of shock.]

Robot 1: Hello, we knew you would come here; don't be afraid.

Maple: Where are we?

Robot 2: You are in the future, we saw you in the past walk through the portal, and so we waited for you.

Brenda: What do you mean?

Robot1: You are in the city, the City of Orion, we or rather every living thing is the possessor of the Universe (The City of Orion)

Robot 2: You and the Earth are our past light discharge, traveling in time, (the past!)

Maple: I don't believe you!

Robot 2: Come and we will show you.

[They walk into an Extraterrestrial Garden]

Alice: *[Looking around]* Wow, this is beautiful.

Maple: Sure is, I would love to live here.

Robot 1: I hope you mean that, because that's what we have come to you for, to ask you all to live here, to vote in the City of Orion, to give it your love and power.

Brenda: I don't understand.

Maple: I can tell we're not on earth, how do you exist?

Robot 2: We over much time on distant planets, took power and captured light, making all of what you see.

Robot 1: Your sight on the earth of the light at night, the stars, that light is us, the past, it is when we needed the sun's energy to evolve, it is our past.

Note: Play the tempo as you see it; originally I wrote (Just type it) using a fast tempo, I recommend using a fast tempo. Quarter notes can be played as eighth notes—making a fast paced work song. Simulate a wo

Just type it



Robot 2: We could not capture that light, the light of earths night sky... That light has now become the earth!

Robot 1: Follow us, we now take you to the Golden City!

Written in E
F#m

Vocal

[They all enter a ship]

(Scene 06 Section 02, time needed: 00:02:00)

treble clef one octave lower than written

Alice: What is this?

Piano

[Quickly Just Type It plays 1 to 2 minutes.]

Stage of Golden walls

Vocal

(Scene 06 Section 03, time needed: 00:00:50)

Alice: What is this?

Brenda: [awe] It is beautiful!

Max: The walls, they look intelligent.

⁶Gold, pushing a broom amongst the golden walls: Whistling.
(Use the song Gold See page 129 as a foundation to the moment.)

Extraterrestrial telepathically says: I am one of many that has always been, I put the words in the gold.

Maple: Did you hear, in your head, the Extraterrestrial?

Max: I did Maple.

Robot 1: We want you to live here, and work for the Universe and give your power to the creators that have always been.

⁶Gold is and is not a character in the show, it is rather a moment to shine as gold! For we are as written in gold! A happy man!

All the notes optional

D.C.

Just type it

Robot 2: We don't need an answer now, we will take you home now, and later we will come back for you...to receive your answer.

written by
Brendon G.M.C. Holden

Robot 1: We will be back in a year.

Vocal *[Maple interrupts]*

Maple: If we are to live here how do we work?

Alice: Like what will we be doing?

Robot 1: Giving power, most likely through typing words on a keyboard.

Robot 2: Creating children by typing, typing their life into them.

All stand deep in thought full of questions.

[They stumble back into Bam's bedroom.]

Lights Fade.

Alice: I am tired.

Brenda: We must have been there for a month!

Max: It still is the same day and time as when we left.

Maple: We time traveled.

(Scene 06 Section 04, time needed: 00:05:00)

Song: ⁷Machine Echo

Close Curta

⁷ Machine echo is the echo of the friends being humbled... the stick on the teacher's desk is important, and the beat of the grave is fact [both are optional]. Adding these to the show might give more of an impression of a place to be, rather than a place of ignorance.

JUST TYPE IT



Just type it

written by

Brendon G.M.C. Holder



Written in E^b
Piano

Vocal

Piano

Next 3 measures play table
clef 1 octave higher than written.

Cm B^m A^b B^m A^b G

Vocal

Piano

2nd time through: play page 3
table clef 1 octave higher than
written.

Vocal

Piano

Vocal

Piano

Jump to
measure page 4
and continue

2nd time play straight through
second time and song

END

Just type it

Scene 07

Maple's dilemma

Total time needed for scene 07: [00:11:10]

Two Stage setting: [Set 01 Paper mill and papermill machinery. Set 02: hospital bed]

Songs needed for Scene 07:

- *Back to life. See page: 107*
- *Jasper. See page: 113*
- *Behind the Night Sky Theme Song. See page: 017*

(Scene 07 Section 01, time needed: 00:01:00)

Open Curtain

Set 01: Paper mill and papermill machinery.

[Maple walks to a mixer with a container of Powder Glue.]

[Mike grabs the bucket and begins to pour into one of the machines.]

[Machine Explodes]

[People Crying....]

Some people say: Call 911.

Behind the Night Sky theme begins to play, emphasizing on the 1/16 notes.

Ambulance comes, [Ambulance sounds.]

Maple's thoughts: What if I never see Alice again? What if I never see Gabriel grow? What if I live with scars?

(Scene 07 Section 02, time needed: 00:04:00)

Song Back to life
Set 02: Hospital Setting

(Scene 07 Section 03, time needed: 00:00:20)

[Alice Storms into the room]

Alice: *[looking]* Maple!

Maple: *[answering]* Yes

Alice: *[loving]* Are you okay, how are you doing?

Maple: I'm fine, but the Doctors' say, I won't be able to work for a while.

Alice: Your face has been burned.

[Doctor walks into the room...]

Doctor: Maple Bark, you can go home now!

Doctor: Alice, *[commanding]* if you want you can take Maple home.

Alice: Thank you, I will.

Doctor walks out of the room....

Doctor: Best wishes Maple, take good care of yourself.

Maple's apartment

(Scene 07 Section 04, time needed: 00:00:50)

[Phone rings...]

Insurance company: Can I speak with Maple please?

Maple: This is Maple, who is this?

Insurance Company: This is the insurance company for the paper mill, the paper mill where the explosion took place.

Maple: Yes?

Insurance Company: We are giving you \$50,000 to cover damage caused by the exploding machine.

Maple: Thank you!

Maple: Alice?

Maple: Alice?

Alice: I am here.

Maple: We are getting \$50,000

Alice: That is not enough...what if I had lost you?

Maple: But with the money we can do wonderful things.

Alice: Like what?

Maple: Like have a real wedding, and this time I am not pretending, I believe I gave you Gabriel.

[Lights Dim]

Alice: But you, Maple? How are you doing?

Maple: Um. Um, what?

Alice: Living reality! The new reality? The one including Gabriel and the City of Orion?

Come Back

Music for Scene 07

Written in: A minor

Allegro

Songs needed for Scene 07:

- *Back to life.* See page: 107
- *Jasper.* See page: 113
- *Behind the Night Sky Theme Song.* See page: 017

Piano

Vocal

Piano

Vocal

mp

1	—very	like	1	think	about	2.	1	—very	like	1
2	—very	like	2	think	about	3.	2	—very	like	2
3	—very	like	3	think	about	4.	3	—very	like	3

Piano

Vocal

1	—very	like	1	think	about	2.	1	—very	like	1
2	—very	like	2	think	about	3.	2	—very	like	2
3	—very	like	3	think	about	4.	3	—very	like	3

Piano

Come Back

Scene 08

Written in: A minor
All rights reserved

Written by:
Brendon GMC Holden

Brendon's journey

Total time needed for scene 08: [00:07:40]

Two Stage setting, [Set 01: a wedding. Set 02: tropical garden.]

Songs needed for Scene 08:

- *Train through the portal. See page: 073*
- *Brendon's Behind the Night Sky: Stones. See page: 041*

(Scene 08 Section 01, time needed: 00:00:40)

Curtain opens.
Set 01: Wedding

White hair man or lady: You may Kiss the bride!

People at the wedding: Cheer

Everyone leaves the stage.
⁸*They re-enter.*

Maple: You look beautiful!

Alice: Thank you, you are a dream come true!

Kiss

⁸ As word read it back to me, "They re-enter the bride," I think I will ignore this.

Machine Echo
Brendon: These are the moments, the moments one buries within their heart to live through again and again.

Alice: So true Brendon. Not like re living the robots over and over.

Maple: It's a good thing you didn't go through that portal, I think they are trying to hurt us, but I wish you had come.

[*Bam walks over.*]

Bam: The extraterrestrials want in.

Maple: They are not coming in.

Brendon: We should go through the portal; I will fight them off.

Bam: The portal through the closet?

Brendon: Yes!

Max: We will tonight, perhaps we will win.

(Scene 08 Section 02, time needed: 00:02:00)

They leave the stage to reenter the stage at Bam's closet.

They walk through the closet, and on the other side of the closet is the tropical garden. Play song *Through the Portal*.

Page 073

(Scene 08 Section 03, time needed: 00:04:00)

Set 02: Tropical Garden.

They enter a strange world of Strange Plants as Brendon's Behind the Night Sky song begins to play. *See Page:041*

Brendon: I do not know where this is, but I don't think we will win.

A girl shows up.

Machine Echo

Breka: Hi my name is Breka, I'm your child.

Brendon: I don't know, but this is too strange, we must go back.

[Brendon tries to leave.]

[Breka stops him.]

Act out Breka showing Brendon things through a hologram for about one minute.

Max and Bam pull Brendon out of what they know not, leading Brendon back home.

The above happens in the mist of the Song ⁹Brendon's *Behind the Night Sky*. This tropical garden scene section, through music—is describing Brendon's Journey. The lyrics on the sheet music can be altered to fit the desired performance—of a night's atmosphere., for instance, Brendon can sing and then stop to say the above statements, or he can say the above statements and then sing the lyrics.

Close Curtain

⁹Brendon's *Behind the Night Sky*: Stones, using stones in the performance is important, if done right it can express the basic code to the universe being created with stones, black matter in space created through a beat here or a beat there and allow the mind to see computers everywhere, this through stones. [programming the world around them.]

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

Machine Echo

If you really think about it



Teacher has died



John Green has in
Glee.com

Written in E

As long as I have it in playing the
best... play the end and the great
you had but not the teacher didn't
the dead... with a red.

Written by:
Brendon GMC Holden

Voices: S

no if we really think about it
no if we really think about it

Piano

no if we really think about it

Voices: S

no if we really think about it
no if we really think about it

Piano

no if we really think about it

Voices: S

no if we really think about it
no if we really think about it

Machine Echo

Scene 09

Grandpa Jed

Total time needed for scene 09: [00:05:40]

Two Stage setting: [*One half of stage 8x8 foot table covered in a tablecloth and the other half a pretend fishing spot.*]

Songs needed for Scene 09:

- *Happy. See page: 031*

(Scene 09 Section 01, time needed: 00:00:30)

Set 01: sitting at table.

Curtain opens.

Grandpa Jed's Party

Brendon: [*not being able to understand up from down*] I think we could be in danger Maple; I wonder if that girl was my child.

Maple: I wonder if Gabriel is mine or are these extraterrestrials trying to take over our planet!

Brendon: It's better to be safe than sorry!

Alice: Did they really think we would believe them. [*pause*] One thing is for sure though.... Gabriel!

[*Brendon looks up.*]

Brendon: [*dumbfounded*] Where did Gabriel come from?

Machine Echo

[All agreed not to let in the extraterrestrials.]

Max: Maple, you are quiet, is everything going to be alright?

Maple: Yes!

[Maple turns in his seat and notices his Grandpa Jed listening.]

Jed interrupts: Can you come by the old house tomorrow?

Maple: [being caught being sneaky] Yeah, sure Grandpa.

(Scene 09 Section 02, time needed: 00:01:40)

Set 02: Jed's House, the fishing spot.

Jed: Maple, I overheard you and your friends yesterday.

Maple: About?

Jed: *The city!*

Maple: What does that mean?

Jed: [*Wise*] You know Maple, the only reason the city appears to be hidden is because long ago cavemen felt threatened by the pleasure the city offered. The cavemen thought it could make them weak. Because of such doubt—the cavemen were harboring—in these newly arriving Extraterrestrials on the earth, these cavemen fought and became weak. To express love without confessing they were wrong they would cast their strength into the surrounding earth. That is why the earth does not know about the extraterrestrials. But we truly must live at peace with them. Whatever they need you to do, it will be all right, do not fear them.

Machine Echo

Maple: I don't trust them, neither do my friends, plus it is all backwards, it's like I must lie to be part!

Jed: Maple,

(Jed pauses...)

Jed: there is a giant computer out there, we are living in a computer. We are living in a personal computer, a personal computer running PBR. They created plants and asteroids to be part of their computer! An asteroid as a working function of the computer.

Jed: a long time ago they pushed us out their back end and now they have come—to pick us up. The reason we do not know is because of these cavemen....

Maple: Grandpa, Gabriel was, um, maybe not mine—although the space creatures say she was. But I know I am lying!

Jed: Your mom said you appeared on her living room floor!

Maple: Literally?

Jed: Yes...

Maple: I think I got it, the cavemen long ago covered up the truth—by covering the earth with their strength.

Jed: Yes, that is why you think you are lying about Gabriel. Your mom thought she stole you—for the longest time—until she noticed your father purposely hiding the truth. Because of that she sought the truth for herself and found it.

Maple: What you are saying must be the truth; thank you grandpa.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

Machine Echo

Maple smiles. She turns to notice a fish pulling on her fishing pole.
If you really think about it

Maple: Grandpa I got a bite

[Maple reels in a fish]

(Scene 09 Section 03, time needed: 00:03:00)

Song *Happy*, See page 031 plays for a bit, after and a bit before the end of Jed and Maple's conversation.

Close Curtain

END

Scene 10

Welcome to the City

Total time needed for scene 09: [00:05:18]

Three Stage setting: [Set 01: a holiday party. Set 02: room full of electronics. Set 03: Dream home]

Songs needed for Scene 10:

- *Gold. See page: 129*

(Scene 10 Section 01, time needed: 00:00:36)

Set 01: a holiday party.

Maple: [*Child bold*] Mom, Grandpa Jed told me how I came to be.

Maple: Tomorrow my friends and I must go and live in the city of Orion, Behind the Night Sky.

Maple: Jed advised to live at peace with these extraterrestrials who took control over the universe.

Maple's mom: I knew this day would come; I must go with you.

Maple: To see dad?

Maple's Mom: Yes!

Set 02: Room full of electronics.

Bam's bedroom, the closet portal

Bam: Are we all ready?

Everyone: Yes. Yes. Sure.

Jasper

They go through the portal.

Spaceman 1: We are glad you are here.

Spaceman 2: We presume you want to make peace and live here, in *Orion*.

All: Yes, we understand you have taken control over the universe and offer real life, the life you captured—at the quantum level.

Spaceman 1: [*As to celebrate*] Welcome to the City of Orion. Now we will show you your homes, homes that truly are perfect.

(Scene 10 Section 02, time needed: 00:00:42)

Set 03: Dream home. Stage setting: A dreamlike painting of a house and a real plastic white picket fence.

Jasper has been in the Maple and Alice's new Home. As I begin to learn music—at about the age of sixteen, one of my core desires was to be the gravity in my own intrinsic nature. I can remember taking this song and

Alice: Can you believe this Maple, this is beautiful!
Maple: And we have billions of dollars to furnish it.

Alice: Maybe Gabriel truly is ours.

Maple: Maybe those space creatures are not bad creatures!

Lights fade Maple takes Alice's hand and walks to center stage; she says:

The world Behind the Night Sky is incredible, rich, and booming with activity! I now know, I know! Creatures built a city Behind the Night Sky, they control the world below through giant

Jasper

cellphone towers, they have power over the very waves that make us, us! Mr. Ward was right, 'waves coming from outer space is Ah...' Behind the Night Sky!

*Written by
Brendon G.M.C. Holden*

It was behind the sky Alice, [laughter] it was...covered!

They both laugh/giggle and walk inside their dreamlike house consisting of a real plastic white picket fence.

(Scene 10 Section 03, time needed: 00:03:00)

Play song Gold, your style. See page 129

The End.

Close Curtain.

Jasper

About the Author

Brendon G.M.C. Holden

Brendon GMC Holden, a Vermont native has worked several years on this new and exciting book *BTNS*, adding in some new ideas while writing about some of his personal experiences that he has had but not finding an outlet to communicate them!

Brendon Holden has written other books such as: *Smoking*

by *The River* and children's books titled *Toby learns patience*, and *Max the Juggler*. He has expressed works of Art in such books as: *Drawings by Brendon* and *Art*. He is also Author of *The Game* and *7th Grade Streets*; most likely Brendon is recognized for his work in creating *Behind the Night Sky*.

It would be a delight to his heart that not only is his work enjoyed, but that society benefits from it as much as the creative ideas have benefited him. As Vermont has been, and as the entire United States has been stable in past generations, Brendon hopes that through these books, *Clutter in my Closet*, *Behind the Night Sky*, *ION* and other books, such as *The game* and *7th Grade streets*, consciously aware of the many great men and women making it possible for others to raise their children in an educated world, to remain in high hopes for their future as well as the future of their children...to have an education, the option to prosper, and to live the American-dream: *life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness!* Now knowing that these stories are going beyond America, Brendon's hopes for the rest of the world and universe are the same, to remain in high hopes for yourself as well as the future of your children.



Jasper

Written by
Brendon G.M.C. Holden



End Credits

Thank you All for Watching!

Open Curtain

Credit Actors. Each Actor takes a bow to the song *Machine Echo* or *Knowing All*, whichever one fits that night's energy, transitioning to the *Behind the Night Sky Theme* song and then fade out all music and lights—on stage.

Behind the Night Sky: Finding Run Personal Computer PBR

Copyright © 2023

Brendon G.M.C. Holden

All rights reserved.

END



Drum Beat
 - 12 Beat
 - 1 Beat
 - 2 5a Beat

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

Gold

Written by
Brendon GMC Holden



Written in B^b minor

Rap Beat



Time signature
 4/4

pp

Whistle melody

Original melody



Piano



switch Whistle to Piano, same melody yet play a variety with the four notes: G A B D

Piano



Light Fractions

Light Fraction
 Seeing All
 Weightless if your strong enough
 With a without

I see myself
 or not a thing more

a half
 only if you're over

Psychological

What
 Fun
 Me!
 All

Psychological

Psychological jazz
 Light fraction

Streams of light
 a mental light
 every man's here
 with who do I believe all say they're right

Let me
 Let the sun
 There is nothing
 all together to flow

Light with a
 Gypsum Cup



Notes

BTNS Insert 6

So now I'm thinking, you know, we uh, we passed that on to uh, another generation. And I really don't care at this point, because, you know, I didn't even. I didn't even plan on it. That's why I stopped to think, well, wait a minute. This is too good to be true. We're going to lose something here, I mean. ... That one is a weapon of mass destruction. That's got to be because you know, and I didn't think about it back then, but now thinking about it was in a sense. Because there's no reason. For the system to say, well, you don't need that, you don't need to Remember that you don't need to. You don't need to have any of that, so.

2.) I mean that had been something of some sort of mass destruction, right? And so? I think it's more something that we can introduce like getting a college degree or getting an apartment and in some sense because that little, that little. Well, you know, uh. The right balance. But to me it's going to be more like a college degree or something. It's something like the army I mean or car or you know they tell you with growing up that you know it's great and it's better than the past civilizations, but you have to do it and having to do it you have to be responsible for doing it.

3.) And uh, so that would be that. I think that's something that's important to introduce that as as not a cheating way, but the way because I'm going to sit here and say graveyards are away or. You know that. Chances are, you know, I mean, this one's going to blow up at some point. Or an asteroid could fall, I mean. You know, there's just there's a. As well as you know, uh. Uh, there could be a possible way and making that clearer.

4.) You know to say that you know this is this is the only way we have you know like a curve you know it may change the climate a bit but it's the only way I mean there's no there's no other option out there because soon as you as soon as you figure out that other option. The other option is that you know that separation. Um, and that other place can't be a place because, I mean, you can't just throw garbage on somebody else's property anyway. I mean, those people, they're going to, they're going to be mad. I mean, I'm going to go down there, and you say, you know? There's just there's no way to throw somebody out of civilization to another tribe and not only do they not want to eat them, but they're also not going to want to do it, deal with any of it.

5.) I mean, if it's living and it can, it can have a little bit of power to do something. They're not going to want it down there.

6.) And so that one's. That one's off it. It must be the way I mean the living way to, you know?

7.) To go about it and it has to been part of our history as having been some sort of plan because if you once you involve time travel, you know they would have set that back in motion a long time ago and we would just kind of be carrying it out now and chances are most likely, I would think that they would have... you know, succeeded.

8.) If we have the answer, it must have been and what I was given so far is, you know.

9.) If he doesn't have the answer, he failed and wants us to. To state that that no matter what happens in life you know I we can be the miracle we can make. You know we're missing a finger or toe we can make it possible, and I have that written in me that you know. That. It doesn't matter. You know how, how. You know how tough it can get Because we can. We can. We can make the survival of ourselves simply by being survival. And so, you know, we must risk it no matter what. We're going to have to risk it, and we're going to have to carry that with us that as we go out there and risk the possibility there's no way to get rid of the guy anyway.

10.) There's no way to get rid of destruction because that's going to be the mass. I mean, that's why some of those cults get away with this stuff they have that secret to. To understand what mass is. That mass can be anything we want it to be, and the people's job is to be the miracle in it. And some say they abuse their privilege. But the truth is when, when,

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

when, when you wonder about that time travel experiment there to whether they had ever succeeded. What, what, what was that feedback there, you know it's going to be like that no matter what. But you know. It's, it's, it's, it's, I would fight to look.

11.) I would fight to look in blackness to see what it was. You know how bad the mess was and you know. Tick, tick, tick. You just kind of promised yourself that you would be the miracle and then go look and see what it was. Just so you would have the, the ultimate universal, you know. Scope.

12.) Um. So, to get back on it with Behind the Night Sky and you know. And preparing for uh, you know. Um. The possibilities. Um of having. Uh, this thrilling idea of, you know. Building a city, not just the city, but also habitations, or helping along with habitations and making sure that everything went through. Like it's supposed to, you know? You know. The one thing that was standing there was. You know. Other kids might not go through this though, but you know. They get a house there, they get, you know, two \$300,000, they go off and. Maybe buy a bow or build a little shack out in the woods. I kind of want to think, well, you know.

14.) That land you're building on, you know, it used to be this space rock. That uh you know uh its original purpose was not for that little shack and the original owner of the space rock. You know it's going to its going to cause hell little hell right then you know so and you do get that idea that you know it's somebody else rock and then you get the big guy. You know. Big Brother and he's like, well, you know, I can kick you under that rock if you don't want to listen and you go to that rock and somebody else's property, you know, like you just got thrown into hell, but. The truth is that rubbed on. I don't think it wants anybody down there to be playing with it, you know, cause if somebody spits on that rock and just right away, you know, I. It's a, you know, it's a thought. But uh, you know, but this kid here, go spend, you know, a hundred \$200,000 on it, This little cabin out in the woods and. You know, it'd be hard to, it'd be hard to talk about, you know. well, you know, not only is it not your land, but the wood. And where did you get the wood and did, they cut it out of the forest? You know, whose trees, was it? And. Just it's just a lot, a lot a lot of stuff.

15.) So, it's a lot of you know anyway and when you think about the trees you know and taking trees just think mass and our need for it. And it's not a license to suffer somebody, but. You know they can be that miracle right then.

16.) And I'd be very, very, very careful because. You know, there's a point was. I mean, you know, you are just. I don't know what to do but Knockout and you know blackout because you know it's so black so there's no reason to make it that black.

17.) But you know if you got away with it and you know. You're still, you know, they may. It must have been the mess they needed. But that's all I say about that. And there was never a permission that wasn't permission either because permission isn't given to that stuff, so it doesn't fit with their system, right? Bring the dog into the light. So. You know, we're just a little past that one and then so you know and then you.

18.) So, what happens is you know once one says this kid built a cabin out in the woods the next steps would be you know, to use the behind the night sky idea. And give the uh. 68,000 per. Per year. So that way the job now becomes, you know, spending time with the. You know that concept of kind of free energy?

19.) And he begins to, you know, kind of. Go on with to, you know, prepare for some other stuff. I mean, maybe. I wouldn't know right now, had a good introduce the idea, but you know. You know it'd be something about how to. You know, take that cabin, and then virtually copy it. And then you know. Uh. Convinced that being to. To move into the virtually copied. Coffee house, which is how to deal with obviously for me it was exciting, but. You know, uh? You know, you would have to, you know. I mean if it's the way, it's the way, so I mean you'd have to. I mean first out there must be. Something that causes us, you know, for me it would be, you know, for me, I think I find it exciting that this is the way, you know, this is the way somehow. And then, you know, you kind of paid into it, I mean. Some have somebody you know... Told me that, you know, I had some inheritance money. I mean, it's most likely possible that I'm going to spend it. And uh, so I mean. It must be one of those authorities and it's not one of those authorities right now and I think I think this is important

NOTES

that it's not one of those authorities and I and I think to get that. Authority it. It might just very well be to let the generation go ahead and ahead of the. The. The inspirers, the authors are the workers of it. It's the kind of monitor. What's happening there and you know to kind of deny that whole pleasure of getting a big old fat inheritance, you know of, you know, getting a truck and stuff.

20.) And so, you know, if that's the case, it can look silly from where I'm standing, you know, it can look silly. You know, the space rocket just wasn't. It wasn't mine to do anything with, but you know. Um, you know as far as you know. Getting one person to. You know, I wouldn't really know, a good guy said. I mean, get a fat ladder or something and then, you know, it's pretty much how it works. You know how you're supposed to. You know. I mean by the information I mean, you have to just be. Tune to the idea that. You know, there had to be that little tie on with the money that you would have to. You know. Um. Somehow move off the earth and it's just it's all sitting there it's there's something that about that that's. That's not sitting. I mean, even when it came to religious practices back when. You know, kitties, awful stories, and people just. You know, taking this medicine and commit suicide and off to Heaven's Gate or Heaven's Realm.

21.) I don't know. It is one of those. It's, it is one of those. The idea is one of those, but I do not want to let it go. Because, you know, like I said, I mean a sun expanding in a few billion years or you know, people meet in their graves or you know, the next car accident or. I mean, there's not all that much to uh. To. Be inspired about but to try to hear Tamper with the Heaven's Gate. So that way it can look, uh, a little better than, uh, a mass suicide. But. You know, I mean, they're doing it pretty good if that's what they're doing with the graveyards, but still. They do it so well, it's. It's convincing. I mean you, you know, you go in there and. And your last will I don't know you're making III sometimes will start walking around.

22.) Yeah, I'm going to get me a got to get me a grave plot stuff you know, and you know it's one of those things you know you get your license and. You know you. You get, uh, you know, you reputation. Maybe you get a little career going on. You know, you, you get your liberty and your credit cards, and you know, get yourself a grave plot. You know, you get a pet, and you think, well, that pets are going to go off soon. I got to get a grave plot. Fluffy needs maybe a nice little statue or something.

23.) And you know if that's the case, I mean it, it really is hidden well. It is hidden really, well.

24.) But. I suppose that it might be very letting the generation go ahead might very well. Be wondering if that's what they're doing. Um, you know. Uh, I think I stumbled in the area that. Um. Uh. That that that that that you know I I could be high when I was doing it and. I wasn't going to get it.

25.) The ***** American treatment where somebody says, hey, snap the **** out of it, man, you know, and I'm just going to be a ***** and start cutting off my ***** or something running around in a damn. You know, hospital gown or something, I don't know. But I mean now when that one obviously threw me off a bit, so I didn't really want to look any, I didn't want to pretend anything much more than that.

26.) So, I mean, if that is one of them, you got to kind of watch out for that idea because man, it's awful, you know, you go in there and. You know you mentioned the gravestones or something. I mean, ****, you know, get one of those slaps right then or something. Oh, not a slap any of the above. It's just it's horrible going, oh the ice gravestones and like I'm stuck with ***** with him or something. I I wasn't, I was seeing if that was the end, so I don't even know if it was. Um, what they were doing. And now I'm wondering, you know, just a ton of ****. Ton of **** about what they are doing. But you know, it might be worth it because like I said there, there was maps to some of this stuff. You know, there, there was inspiration back there. And you know to. Take a look, kind of and uh. See. See how that's going about? Might be nice, but. No, no evidence of it so far, except that one thing that if I was to pretend that that was happening. It's just like getting ***** in the *** or something stupid and silly about just being a ***** and ****, man.

27.) You know and liking it too, liking it like that because you know they had hit the IT it be, it's it's like a a. You know, liking VR houses, you know, make your VR house, you know, and get \$68,000 a year.

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

28.) I mean, something messed up because I mean if somebody, if I was like, oh, \$60,000 a year, that's didn't not get ***** in the *** right then oh man, that's bad.

29.) You know, that's bad because you know what \$68,000 per year is. I mean it, it is, but it isn't, you know, it's not that bad that you're going to want to take that out on your neighbor. I mean, cause it's just not that bad.

30.) You know, be like, you know, seeing that da*n raccoon or something, thinking it, making a **** house up in the trees or some ****, man, it was happy.

31.) I don't know who it was, but if that was, they couldn't take that moment right then. It was happy in the trees, man. You know, going out for brunch maybe or. Some cool education or talk or something, or just drive through the country, see a ***** raccoon up there and making his house, man.

32. And you just get that kind of that down feeling, you know, and thinking man, that's miserable, man. That's for and he's happy, you know, he's tripped up there like man, like he was better. Well, it just wasn't. It wasn't a rock, exactly. It was not their rock...

BTNS Insert 7

Anyways, just thinking about the game and. The importance of. Making sure that the uh. The project was a. Not only complete one but also. Yeah. It was, uh. You know, hand it off to the powers to. You know, uh, make sure that it was a happy ending. I mean in the story, which is one of the main, in the written story, one of the main. Main pieces that were not in the film that was in the book was the creature that. That had manifested itself. You know. If I do, make a second version of the film. Or even if I add on to the film. I mean the creature was the most important part I believe. About the project.

2.) That you know. This creature was most likely of the 4th dimension.

3.) So, there is an is not something to worry about there, you know, and I think, I think bite when he you know. And the first book when he went, when he was kind of just translated into the forest. I mean it would have thrown him off that you know he was powerless and according to the legend and the law, if I add in the legend and the law was kind of a man of gravity, he was holding down the truth and time and the dimension that he was. A pod of So. It's really UH. Important to. Understand and have that heart to. To see how. Horrifying it is for. A perfect idea to be. Um. Kind of toyed with in sense. You know, of course it's friendly, and of course we have perfection. We have all the elements necessary to. To you know. Live up to the challenge, but to be honest, it would throw somebody off. I mean to uh, to find a 4th dimensional enemy. Of time itself. Is uh? It's not horrifying, isn't the word. Because we're civilized and we know. We would know be it you know how, how to. Have a peaceful debate even in the 4th dimension; we would know the right way of doing things. So. As a witch. Meaning which way? You have it either way. And that either is a would be the 4th dimensional you know enemy, a peaceful enemy. Um, but it's very it's very logical that there was either way. And that either way, was not. You know. Anyway. It was either way. Anyway, is more logical than either way because either way. Even in the in the in the beginning of the of the film is written, you know, many directions. It's sort of written as foolish.

4.) So, either way is kind of sort of foolish in 1/4 dimensional. Way of looking at things so.

5.) That was the outcome of the original first written game book. Was that Mike had to have a way. Not either way. Either way left a chipmunk. That had taken. But an extremely powerful being and authority over his friends and I made it look like a a little critter in the forest and it was not OK to live. Thousands of years without your voice. As people ran from. Something. That they, they would never know was what held them in place upon the planet beforehand.

6.) So, it almost looks like I don't have eyes here. It's so scary. But you know as far as. You know. But it's, you know. So, the importance of that. You know. Either way was not a way, and a way was to claim that victory and. Be that law that we know we are. That was the first game book. And then you get on to UH Brandon's journey by. Uh, you know.

NOTES

Either way, you know and there was no either way. And. That that's I think is a. And one of the big symptoms of of the magnetic disturbance was that there was either way and there were there is no either way. When it comes to being a third dimensional living being, there was a way, and that way was you know to. Document and recall history, celebrate the mass of the planet and gravity as a good thing and keep us, you know, grounded in the traditions of what we were doing. And so. It doesn't look like it and we don't need to call it, but either way is. It's sort of an enemy of. Of, uh, it's foolishness. Of the 4th dimension, it's almost the. Uh, symptom. Of uh. A good being the knowledge of a good being, the knowledge of a good way is to have either way. And you know, it would be a powerful way if the symptom was either way and you know. I would be scared to stay. That we had the liberty to choose either way. But we know there is a way, and I think it's important to end this conversation, to find their way, a way and stick with it. And so. Knowing that you know.

7.) I don't want to go too far out to. To grab on to something that is not my in my job description. I mean that you like but you know. Trying to claim Dominion. Over the city of God is just to be a. It's foolishness to a man of gravity. Something that he is the power of the city of God is not something he searches for.

8.) So, and that and that is a way that is away. And I and I suppose in that way there is a. Moving on to. You know the gravity of holding down what is his. In a sense, you know to make sure there's no weak links and all the. All the measures that. Securely in place to hold, you know, people stable. And. Knowing that you know, I don't want to. I don't want a moment to go by that. That either way, and. Influence. Something that it shouldn't have.

9.) It's a similar idea. Is a which way? And. Which way you know. Uh. Doesn't answer UH. As move question. And we. I really don't need the answers which way though. I think the more loving thing is. Fine. No way and. There will find both. Question. Of which and it will either. And uh. There we can find our seat to what we were supposed to be doing. Because you know. Which way and either way are great beings. And uh. I wouldn't mind. Anybody to bold that overpaid for? Not finding the way. And I think, I think in this time, this day and age where people are kind of. Looking around sort of the next president. The next. Move of the United States or. Next. Influence Influencer of growth. That they have their voice, in their opinion, and their seat. Their livelihood to know, to judge the situation for the best possible. Oh, humanity.

10.) So, knowing that. Make sure. That to myself. I'll put. At the game at. That it would. Not either way much is. At least not for me. I love you. And I'm usually sitting. Hey. And that's where we get up and we move. Way and. You're either and which? Both as words follow along.

So, with that, why, why? Why let the generation go ahead? I think this is still important because it's going to be sitting there fresh. Fresh The inspiration is going to still be sitting there. And keep in mind you know this is correctable. As a democracy, you know, I just want to, I just want to say my opinion.

2.) Um, make sure it's in there and it's not the way. It's not the only way. But you know. Um. Like I said, it was. It was not. In my eyes. Um, and the graveyards. But that could have been hidden, you know? You know, you see, uh, you know, 8 and drank unworthily. You know this this mass type thing. And therefore, you know we don't know.

3.) But you know, what I got was, you know? You know, pretty much just. It it was possibly there, it is. I wasn't allowed in. Um. To. To celebrate them. They're partial. Going away? I suppose it's because you know, I wasn't going away, so I had to change it a bit. You know that I'm not going anywhere right now.

4.) So, what it must be, it must be that you know that need to go somewhere. So. With that in mind, I mean. It could be, uh. You know, it could be you know, I mean if the if there was a dimensional crossing, you know it would. Scientifically, you know, an answer for the disappearance, which just mass when we get down to it. So that could be the mass needed to sustain this planet, you know? Which is kind of weird to think about, right? Then I just want to say it to see what it is and its salvation. You know that

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

they would. Die saving other people by creating this. Mass like powder to make sure that this earth does not fly out of all of that, into deep space somehow. Which is it?

5.) It's a weird thought, but anyways, besides that. Besides that, you know. Uh. They're uh. Their possessions were. They were nice and clean. Two \$300,000 house and a nice car. And most likely they did go. To to their destination of spending and how they wanted to spend it.

6.) Hopefully they took mass with them, you know, and I think that's one of the ones that I would want right then to think about. I mean I don't see. Any pleasure in it? Unless you can tell the big guy how miserable that is that you know? That that he he's intentionally miserable. Miserable. Because you know. There's no escaping it. It's like, you know, loving your child or your wife. Well, I do, you know, and and there was absolutely in the beginning there there's no actual root or gravity. There's no, there's nothing sitting there that would make somebody think, hey, that deserves to be nothing except some deep-down core training that this man goes through, which is incredible. So, push that out of the way and you know he's a miserable dude. I mean because you know his creative abilities will. Go where no man has gone before. And create impossible possible worlds. So, you just going to stay? Miserable. And so uh. Without that, without that dude, though. I mean, I just don't know. I don't know what our point is if we're not. Trying to kill him, I guess, and make him happy. So. You know. I mean, I was sure that that could do that for him, but. You know, there's a little bit of fury test just kind of setting that guy on fire right then, so. You know. I mean, uh. You know it's not. He wouldn't be able to use not mean even if they did leave material possessions behind. There's no way to. To use the mind there without the idea of love so. You know, most likely they'll just solely. Father our planetary dust. That that that can be used for certain things at some point. So, I mean, you know, looking back, I mean, it'd be like a mass destruction and then there's just powder left behind.

7.) You know every everybody you know they go off they cross dimensions and.

8.) You know there's stuff remains for a moment, and then it's just slowly turns into just rock powder on top of some old rock. And so, it looks almost oblivious. It looks like a, you know, weapon of mass destruction.

9.) But you know, as, as they're uh. It's a nice thought though, the thought of their possessions. That they still have them in that VR world or you know, which goes back to quantum mechanics and whether you know our experience is either particle or wave.

10.) So, thinking, you know it kind of lessens that affect to think you know. Um. You know that that they are now a wave in wave form. They're no longer political form.

11.) And. But you know, holding on to remembrance can take that wave form and kind of slowly put it back to protocol. But even that political format, there might have been something evil in there to. Cause you know. Um, because it's mass. I mean, there, there's no, there's no getting out of how evil it is.

12.) I mean, you would have to go off on the deep end to kind of make to sustain his life, that he was that evil of a person that in so miserable that you couldn't no longer make him happy without, you know, him totally destroying himself. And so. You know, it's too nice. It's a nice thought.

13.) Their houses, you know, their houses and stuff. You know, it's almost like you, you know something. Fantasia, a fairy tale will kind of everybody disappears and leaves behind everything.

14.) You know, their trailers, the kayaks, the vehicles, nice cars, nice houses. Um, getting to run and playing and do some investigations and just see what it all was, what they were hiding, what they were doing. Um. But besides that, I mean that's not really. Um. The point to why we live, and we kind of live out of love for love.

15.) So, you know, back on track besides exploring their houses and I haven't done any such thing. Yet and love and sake, you know, somebody would kind of hire me on and pay me to do it and that's the only way that happens.

16.) Otherwise, you know, it's kind of evil, but you know. You know I think, I think it's more it's important to. To cover the. The. That they're there, they're their destination was met. Um, that that, that, that, you know, heaviness on this side of the planet didn't destroy everybody, but they lived and. Yeah, I don't think they're. Everyone's going to be a way for me to get that high that they were they were at, but possibly, but. You know.

17.) Yeah, I suppose it's just thinking about their lots at this point because, you know, I mean, say somebody's VR in their cabin out in the woods, you know, they got some pretty cool video games, you know what I mean...

18.) Creativity is wonderful and they make this awesome cabin out in the middle of somebody'd video game or something, you know?

19.) Just to kind of go over and look at it and just be amazed by it, I suppose that's the only thing. Because they're going to be living and having fun with it, I mean. Like the? You know. Minx who are?

NOTES

20.) Go there further, that isn't a totally good example. I guess. Cows with their milk or. Some things that affect that, you know, they kind of produce that those enzymes right then. To sustain, you know, maybe another cat. Oh, it's the human eye. Drink milk. Um. I like cows quite a bit. Um. But. That that was the excitement that was.

21.) And but these houses are better, I mean. The cows are cool. I've gotten close to some of them and they're cool houses. I wouldn't want either walk on all fours, I must admit that. And I don't have foods and I don't. I don't shoot grass, but the people's houses look cool.

22.) But even then, though, I think the cows might have it better, because I mean, if you have to deal with the corrections officer, and not only a corrections officer but like say. Like a sake doctor or something. He's coming over, checking on ship and stuff. Checking on how you're doing or some. Checking out the postage you hung up on the wall keeps you going, and you're in a you're in a video game, a cabin out in the woods, and you're hanging up pictures and some splendid paradise.

23.) Yet you're producing milk per se. Of something that's fed to the surrounding landscape to make that video game that much more. That's cool, but I'm heavier, I'm heavier, dude.

24.) So, I just sit there and look at it and I'm like, that's so cool, man. That's so cool. And write about it. You got to write about that one, you know? Get that, get that heavy effect away. You know, and then kind of flip it from your angle.

25.) How would you want to do that?

26.) You know what you would build, how you would build it, You know what type of landscape you want. There's no way to go out there and live out there at this point, I don't think. I mean cause there's no there's no way to say I'm producing milk for society for me.

27.) I mean it's something that I don't I don't choose at all You know it's not something you know it was it was aimed like you know you get to live if you produce milk and it's not that it's something totally different where you know you're going to live and. You know, if you don't, then you just don't. I mean, there was there's no exchange for life. I mean, you're going to live. You have you have that, but. You know what? I wouldn't be able to. I wouldn't be able to say it's too close. But you know, I know, I know there's no exchange for it. But you know, some people think, you know they'll pick up steam from something to say, well, I touch up the forest there. I make these trees grow or something.

28.) Who knows if they really do but. You know. I try to do that through my books and try to say, well, I take that though, but deep down. And it's not in the court it's from possibly the system of universal intelligence. Is that the books? Is somehow money given? Which is weird, because you know that the whole time you will, you will be driving that truck around the country. You know, making sixty \$70,000 a year. Um. You know. Your payment was driving the truck. That's the weird part.

29.) Could literally think about and. 6070 thousand dollars.

30.) It is, you know, so you have the privilege to choose your own doctor that can give you. The things needed where you can strengthen your immune system by building enzymes so that way when you're driving the truck you don't really notice it.

31.) That's the weird thought about it.

32.) And so you know that for the whole time I was truck driver. You know and the system goes no, no that was my part you know that was the payment that's the weird part and I do disagree with that because. You know and if you think about it, anybody would because if there's something, if there's strings attached to the \$40 that you just earned, you know and the boss man sitting there with his finger on it or his hands still trying to put it back in his pocket,

33.) I just try not to think about it after that. You know, because I mean it, it's miserable in a couple ways because you got paid. You know, almost backwards.

34.) Well, at least I did. And I'm not going to admit that man. I'm not going to admit that at all. Because all those famous people and, you know, making money, you know, the smartest people, like, you know, teachers and you think, well, that that was their payment and just bullshit after that. And then and then you get these guys out there like the system. Taking credit for that and I'm just that one makes me miserable. You know and then you know you think after the whole job of. Coming up with this Excellent, you know. Paper or something. You go off and there's no money out there.

35.) There's no you know you can your head hurts and you're getting afflicted and you're getting beaten up. I just try not to think about it. I try hard. You know, I just walk around, and you know I try hard not to think about it but just try to stay alive because. I think the funnier ones are when I find something. You know, unique, like candy bar or soda or something or a cup of coffee that's going to make me feel like I. I did something. Yeah, but you know. Yeah, I think. I think. I think the actual job was to stay alive, knowing money didn't keep you alive. I think that I think that was a tough job to do is to. Somehow be alive. You know. Without. Without seeing that that void that you know. That we were forced to be alive somehow. And if we don't say yes, then, you know, we kind of slipped down the void a little bit. But besides that, you know. Watching the generations. Take their portion and kind of just check it out. I mean, those

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

are areas that cover, you know, a graveyard, you know, some of the ancient texts, religious outlooks and you know, kind of just judging it in a sense from. From the from the sidelines and just kind of giving a voice to what that could be. Because I mean, that one looks pretty. From cabin out in the video game out in the forest looks cool. Whether I can do that, I can't do that. Can I produce milk?

36.) I can't do that. But. You know, to hold on to the ideas. I can do that, but I most likely you know, will not get one of those lots right now.

37.) So, any type of clearance right now is going to be. It's not going to be. The clearance, you know, we're just going to sit on the sidelines and. Pretty much just give her opinion to whether that should be or shouldn't be. You know something you know. UH Video game house. In the woods, cabin, out in the woods. You know, I mean, I see things differently, but. You know, if I had 3-4 hundred 500,000 say, say you sold your family house on that rock that wasn't. That wasn't designed for. Certain creatures to be on it well. I mean, say you had a forty \$50,000 house and say you did not sell the house, but the landowners, you know, the rightful tribal landowners came back and just kind of drove you out somehow. And through some weird idea, you had to kind of give in and take \$500,000. And then you take that \$500,000 and. Kind of spend happy, you know. You know, get rid of all you go on vacation, video games capped out in the woods and you got to prepare for it.

38.) So, I think, I think it looks really fine. I really wanted five \$600,000. I a leg brace, knee braces, back brace. And some sort of Social Security system. Cup of coffee, some cigarettes. Real cigarettes. I mean that. You know, little, little trailers, you know, vacation, white hair, drive around like you did something, you know, you live 607080 years, you know, and oh, it's fine, we're going to heaven now, you know, I mean, I don't see anything wrong with that. Um, you know. Except there, there's detailed work in there. I mean the plants evolve differently.

39.) They are, you know, you get one plant that looks like another plant. I mean they're. There's a there's a lot of writing, a lot of documenting right then to. To how that came to be. You know the history behind it, and you know. You know what? What, what, what, what, what? The better way it was. I don't see nothing wrong with it from here. I think it could be, you know, the best thing ever. Go out and get, go to the restaurants, eat Donuts you can make, Donald, you know, and you have money to do it. You know. I don't see anything wrong with it. You know, this situation is too weird because I mean, if you get down into the roof, if I was to say anything else, if I was to say no, he should be, you know, living wise, living healthy and doing the right thing. And those not technically. A better thing to do right then, because soon as you touch the land. That you know it was illegal. Whatever it was, the whole entire thing was illegal and humans kind of knew that for at least I grew up kind of semi normal that but doubting that that there was maybe some powers and there was something illegal and I I still don't and quite get it and I'm kind of scared a little bit but.

40.) I mean it's that that lines up a little bit with that idea.

41.) And so, to sit there, I mean just like it was and say no, I don't want, I don't want no, I'm going to shop at Walmart. You know. I'm not going to go eat at Crusted Creams Burger King because you know, I'm going to just go and be a monkey set out in the woods. There's a logic to why we can't do that. And it's literal, you know. Ideas that are floating around, inspiration that that can't be possible at all.

42.) Because you know and it's sucks to be the guy who goes out there and sit out there like that because you know he's going to be on the sidelines for a while but. Um, you know, there's a reason why we can't do that is because you know. It's like sewing creatures out in the wild, they. You know, it was. It was, though, even if they kind of betray someone because people touched it. It's just it's just it's it was never right to begin with so. You know the innocent way, the peaceful way is. To do the best we can to. To get back up to perfection and crusty creams there, the money's there and you know, why not spend it, I mean. Lithium shots, opiates.

43.) You know why? Why not? You know, I know what we can think that we need to be strong to live. But if we're strong to live, we go out there, be a monk, you know, it's like. There was that the whole move was illegal already and it'd be hard to fight that. Um, so and claim somebody sending are that there is sin because the very nature of us just not being already perfect is kind of criminal.

44.) So, you know. Goes back to that kind of religious Why not do it? You know, soup, coffee, whatever it is. But you would know why. Not to do it, though. You would know why. Because somebody's going to have a nice carrot or a boat or camp or a cabin. That's going to be way better than that shit about walking around, man. Collecting cans or locking, picking out of the trash can was always sucks. And you know you want to kind of you know one of those quick clipboards and a pen and paper and it go legal pad and kind of you know stay up on it so that way you can get in the venues that. Need that kind of opinion right then to what's going on?

45.) Yeah, I'm so sick of some of that homeless death. It's driving me insane sometimes that that that liberty to be a piece of shit out there on the side of the road is it's not even possible right now and when you that that that there's some red tape that need to be removed right there and I don't know how to.

NOTES

Explain that, and not only that, but as soon as I see somebody on the on that side of the fence, I mean I almost I could almost hurt him after a while and my mind starts going crazy.

46.) So just be better to if some if somebody gives you a whole bunch of money, it's better to take it and do what's right with-it and. You know, just make sure that your parents is a. Clean and nice and approved. Because, I mean, I don't know what's up with that homeless stuff right there, but you know. I really smoke by the river.

47.) I'm happy with it. But you know the. There's one way out there that's fun. And that's being at peace with the Creator. Without that element there, I mean to being an animal. Use your animal instincts to roll around with the spiders and the flies and the snakes. Um. It it, it, it's just not. It doesn't work, I mean. If you don't have \$200 to give to the next homeless guy. You know, if you don't, if you know that you know that you don't have \$200 to give you the next homeless guy, there's no reason to be out there. Because you know the animals.

48.) You know. You're playing with one of the animals right there and. It is. It's not. It's not fun. It's not one of those things. So even with smoking by the river, it's smoking by the river is actually a holy book. It's not one of those things. Wherever that trashy **** is, it's not there. That wasn't the point of that. The point was this creative ability to be wild and consider and think and rationalize. And you know, it was like that graveyard thing. So. Yeah, I saw a guy the other day he was he was flagging a sign like, we're just going to, we're getting flushed down the tubes right now. I can't take it. I cannot take poverty. And it's in that same town too. And. I can't actually take it anywhere after a while, you know, I cannot take not only that this thing drives me crazy, but the whole He's driving me literally crazy. No, my, all this ***** thing is just a piece of ****, man. And not only that, -----, you know, you get this idea that -----, There's something that might have been bothering him. And, you know, I see a lot, a lot of those elements, you know, just out there, you know, I mean, it's the kid. It's a little kid, you know. I mean, this just drives you crazy out there when you're cutting cans.

49.) I am picking trash out of the side of the road. I mean, you know there was there no other way to explain that type of **** right their man that you would need a ****. I don't even know at this point. I don't even know. Maybe just a fake your own death So that way you know they. It's not remembered. You know because it's too hard to forget about. I don't know if it's trauma or what I just the nastiness of it all, but it's horrifying.

50.) It's absolutely you know, and we need to walk down the roads. I mean there's, there's a fundamental reason why those roads are there.

51.) There's insert sidewalks and it's not the flag. Sign and it's not to park with your neighbor. I mean, there's a reason there and it does not fix it.

52.) There's something there that's a problem, and I'm not sure what it was. And I did go partially through a religious story to get back in to figure out, try to try to avoid that thing because it's just it's messed up. It's messed up.

53.) It's messed up that you can't pick out of the trash, that you have to think about the trash can, right? And if you're thinking about the trash can, you know and you think about it. You know, all those extra vehicles out there? I mean, somebody's out in action ***** actual piece of **** for having, you know, a whole lot of cows and not tossing one right then, you know, I mean, that's actually ***** right there. And don't know what to do about it yet. You know to have a house and not just hand it to your neighbor and say you know what's up, man?

BTNS Insert 9

So, besides the whole piece of ****, back to the homeless, next homeless dude. I don't know what to say about it. I mean, even as a, you know, kind of a Freemason. Um. Maybe it's just maybe it's just the wear and tear that comes with the job. You know. A good example is, uh, you know. I'm walking down the road. And uh. Things are just nagging me, nagging me. I just went and got a cup of coffee in a friend's kitchen and nag and nag, nag about it.

2.) But I did it, you know, and I got to kind of, you know, look out for, you know, the loose ends there but walking down the road and you know. It's just awful. It's what it is, but I'm walking down the road and yeah, my monies around, it's around somewhere. It's tied up in the banks, right?

3.) Nobody's supposed to know anything else. I'm walking down the road, you know, and I have a good. I have an important job. I mean this job for Freemason, you know, I mean what's better than walking down the road?

4.) So, I'm walking down the road and you know this thing nagging me, nagging me, and nagging me and you know I hurry up and call my friend up, "can you come get me, and get we get you know buy me a cup of coffee." And you know he does. And. It had been a four-thousand-dollar cup of coffee right there.

5.) You know, it is just, it was, it was unneeded, the pressure that was placed on the and it is bull ****. It's bull **** too because I mean you know in that cup of coffee there was a little bit of text that went out for the roads and there was no reason too, I mean, I've seen other people do it too. They'll go buy this huge, expensive hotel room. Just so they don't have to deal with this new thing, this idea. I don't know what to do about it. There's no way to make money from, from that seat.

6.) But uh... you know, I could think, well, just give me, give me a vehicle, or give me some money and it all will go away. But then there's another one, that wasn't my purpose to walk in anyway, I mean, it was for the hardship, to

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

gather the inspiration needed to continue onwards. But uh... think I did find something right then about, you know, I mean just, you know, if I take a car or what, but I mean as a Freemason, I mean that those are the laws that come with it that I could just kind of grab what was needed to get the job done... um, but that is still going to do that same thing, man, because, I mean, you're driving around with that registration, you know?

7.) Well, you know, every time he feels his ****, man, he starts, you know, looking in the mirror and like, what? What the hell is wrong with me, man... he starts turning himself into a woman. For, feeling this thing, man... you know?

8.) You know too if you need a car, you take the car, you want to walk down the road, you walk down the road and you and you are going to take whatever comes with that. And uh... kind of don't think to look in the mirror is one thing you don't want to do is look in the mirror right then because you're going to see that bucking piece of homeless sht that you pretty much hate desperately.

9.) And probably think about murdering them from time to time, but... you know, and he stinks or something and he's another dude and he's robbing something you know he's robbing something.

10.) So, and they already did and that was one of my reasons for coming up here because I swear one of them did, you know, I see a guy a couple of years ago, he comes by and he runs by, and he says, you know, *in that fiery kind of environment*, you know, lawlessness, he says "somebody just took my **** car, man."

11.) You know, he is looking like he's homeless now and he's got his jogging shorts on, and ****... and you know, I knew what it was, but I didn't want to admit that that craziness stuff was in or was happening. You know that whole fire epidemic. So, I just looked the other way, like, man, you stop playing me right there, you know... but yeah, I guess somebody just hops in his car and takes off. I don't think that it's as bad as walking down the side of the road... um, but once it starts with it, why am I walking down the side of the road... Do I need money?

12.) And it's got to be us.

13.) It's whatever it is, it's got to be a yes, when I'm walking down the road and you know people might not know this, but if something comes out and is stronger, like a bear and does attack, it's going to attack.

14.) So, if somebody comes over with some money or some food or some of those homeless commodities or something...

15.) It's hard to say no right then.

16.) There's no way to really say no, I couldn't smoke body.

17.) This is also put in Behind the Night Sky when GB's like, what's up with this man?

18.) Cause there's no way, you know they're going to weaken me so bad I am going to get attacked. The other version is where you are pretty much in a stolen car as a Freemason driving down the road saying, yeah, it's going to be alright, you know, and you're just going to take whatever comes next...

19.) And, I suppose I'll just continue onwards. I mean cause uh. These are reason to keep looking in the mirror about this, man. You know I got to, I usually I have to pay double or three times as much as I take off the people.

20.) And it's like I'm not even supposed to take off with people, but I am. Because I need people to take off for me. Because, I mean, there's just really no reason. That, that that people don't take off because if people don't take off me. And I'm going to have to sit in some cabin somewhere in the middle of the woods and just figure that's going to be the rest of it, my life. And it's not, you know?

21.) And I and I, I don't really know. But. You know. Oh. Yeah, it's it can be a tough job. You know, Freemason thing can be tough. Um, you know ***** it just impossible sometimes. Because I know that ***** somehow. And I'm not going to tell him that. I'm not telling that to his face. But I know he's thoroughly ruined. And he's not even a homeless seat, but he's ruined it. And plus, we might all be homeless too. And he pretty much stunk up the whole area. But I'm not going to tell him that. And plus, he just gave me a ***** and nobody *****. It was ***** to him. I give hi***** trying to and I'm going to keep going it. And I'm sorry that I'm kind of using foul language, but. You know. I'd have borrowed somebody's card just so the next guy will. Ha***** to pass around and that's all that really matters right there.

22.) Staif somebody's money. And that's stupid and pointless too. And not only that, but there's no way not to act in love right then. And not only that, if I try to, I will know. That I'm going to be giving that away right then. And it's not by it's not by the Master, the *****, or isn't by some foreign spirit. I have programmed myself for success in life.

23.) And I know exactly what to do when I start. Not acting in love. You know, last night. I cracked open a couple of beers that were mine and. You know. I'm just not looking in the mirror about that one. You know, I don't know what to say about that, but. You know, I mean, as a Freemason, all of it was given to us. I don't know what to fix up. We just do it. I'll tell you that much because he knows that I can program myself for success to take that seat. It's sucked up. And it's going to it's that that one's going to be important to their whole sideline judgment thing is. You know, uh? I think it's the looting that use presence cause it. It's messed up and let me just clarify which dude it is. It's the dictator. And in reality, I mean, you know, you get, you get your peace, your love, your joy, get the spirit of wisdom, revelation, you get a dictator. And that dictator, he'll know which one it is. There is a small chance that he could be off, but a 3% chance that he could be off.

24.) And so there was formed the democracy to show that. And within the democracy there was formed another dictator to show the .001% the democracy could be off. And so, you know. He says that he's the middle finger. He, he, he, he is the big finger in the sky. He's going to show up and there's no way to hack that man.

25.) There's a. No way. There's no, it's not fun. Um, there's no reason that I would want to hack it, but we can dilute it. Um. For us as well as other people that that. That he exists and I'm not telling him that to his face either because most likely he's not going to listen, but he could think is powering him up. That's what? That's what's up, right then it's going to give him a charge and then he's going to snap back, you know, with the bigger finger. Maybe he'll put, he'll put one of those damn plastic baseball, you know, things on his finger and flick that, flip that up in there too. But. You know. Diluting it by you know.

26.) You know, uh, it can be law breaking. It can be. But we're not law Breakers either. I mean you say for like the, the, the, the beer. For example, I am walking down the side of the road taking a car without registration or. The title

NOTES

of it. You know, it's a privilege to do it. We don't want to do it, but we can't do it. Um. And this dude, if he catches on to something like that. You know. He's going to. You know, either think that he gave the power to do it.

27.) Or he's going to try to stop it. Either way, he's going to exist somehow. And. You know, the point was to. To Duluth that in such a way that, you know, we could, we could think that we have liberty. And we do have a library. And so, you know when we think about this guy building his cabin out in the. And the woods. You know in in some sort of video game, you. Negative. That can convince myself that I don't even need to do what I do, what I love doing, you know, which is me. And I can convince myself it's the most suicidal, which is back backwards suicide where you think, well, no, I got to get away from this, this thing and you know. You know it it's it's that there there was a 97% chance that somebody could. Take the fate of the universe in their hands. And there's a night there was there a 3% chance that we didn't have to do what we had to do. And uh. That 3% chance that most died and that 3% chance was us.

28.) In a sense, at least, it was me and. It wasn't really me, but. He was so bad. I mean, it was. It was contrary. So being contrary, I mean there was only 3% to really think about for whatever that decision was contrary to our existence.

29.) It hadn't been because I mean. We wouldn't. We wouldn't exist if it wasn't contrary so. You know. I think it's important to kind of make that that solution right then to. You know, I mean, there was never an. It's always been kind of hard to agree. With the powers that be to say, you know. We need to our God or that we control the fate of the universe.

30.) Those were the horrible things to think about and talk about. So, from the sideline kind of, you know. Good. For me, it can be easy to get carried along too. Um. To think that it's the way. Of the family universe when there was a three, there's a 3% chance it's not. And it fluctuates a little bit.

31.) So, you know, um. Our way and on this earth were to get vehicles over the past, you know, 6780 years, you know would buy vehicle gasoline shops, you know, American lifestyle. It was a 3% chance that that didn't have to go that way. And so. It's the same now, I mean as far as you know. VR Build and Quantum building. Dimensional crossings. Um, parallel earth crossings, you know, to something more fitting. You know, a dream. Heavens, basically. People can kind of go find their own earth. Um, but there's a 3% chance that that doesn't have to be that way.

32.) And so, you know when this, this, this unified movement. When the actual. Somehow the thrust of the movement begins. Well as the thrust of the movement is, you know, it can kill people who are in its way. It will kill people. It will. It will just make you so better you could die. So, it's important to know that and then. Not to really. You know, um, I'm getting the movement and passionately to kind of set it aside and now. That, that, that our portion ***** is any it needs. It needs something in there like a lot of money. Because I mean that is that is going to be our portion somehow when we're doing this. I mean our job is to deal with the unified movement of the fate of the universe and everything else. Is our liberty to go to take and and? I just can't take another homeless person right now because we are homeless. Actually, you know, we are homeless, but we probably stink and. Not only do we stink, but. Uh. Uh, we might get kicked out of venues. Uh, you know. The lack of adequate training to be around the Ridge. Um. You know the continuously negative that we owe something. It. To one another rather than, you know, celebrating with one another. Um. So. You know, uh?

33.) You know what they were handing out money back then, the comforts and stuff. And there was that idea that, you know, I mean it's like a bear's claw. I mean there's no avoiding it.

34.) Right. I suppose I'm mixed up about it because on the one hand, I mean it's a total giveaway. Of something and I'm not. Maybe the problem is just going to continue to be there, but anyways. You know this is behind the night sky insert. So, you know, suppose I can edit stuff out and put in what I want.

35.) But. You know. I thought, you know that that movement of the fate of the universe, there's another there's other fun ones like that. Like I don't know if you've ever got high with your brother about just, you know, puffing one another up to the point. There's also pretended military. That was fun.

36.) And I just got this one.

37.) This one was like 100% fun, which was compound, you know? Uh, a lifestyle. You know, like uh. It's part of a team you know of. You know. We really thought it was like this idea that you know. Of like you know you get the secret society you know you know that that kind of high rate then you know and this one was it was similar but it's like a compound type. Uh, you know, almost New York gangster type, you know.

38.) But and you know, it's like anything. It's cool. My family had nothing. My brothers had an anything. You know and you never supposed to betray those things like secret society. Not supposed to betray the secret society the ocean stuff depending on where you're at right then, but you know and when people start betraying people you know what's up and there's stuff like that going on right now and it's not it's not right. It's not fair either. But yeah, those are high, you know, and then. Back to the fate of the universe, Job and. You know well, well the fate of the universe is magnetic. It's magnetic. You wouldn't. You wouldn't be able to. Possibly bust that chain, but there's a 3% chance over there. But. It's magnetic. Just know that much that you know you're attracted to the fate of the universe more than you're attracted to anything else.

39.) So, there's nothing out there. There's no money, there's no vehicle, and there's no boat that's going to separate you from that. That attraction. Of. You know, figuring out what's what there.

40.) But you. But you know, I mean you, you're not you. If you get high on that, you could very well get destroyed. You know, it's some sort of bitterness or anger or hatred. It's weird, but it's true because I felt, I felt it in both ways. You know, you could almost think the tribulations are trials. But even then, though, I mean if they are. They're pretty much killing who you are. I mean, cause they're telling who you are, it doesn't matter how you look at it, they're going to. They're going to perfect something possibly. And that means they're going to. Very well could drive out your negativity and then you're going to be somehow. The controller of the universe.

41.) Um, which isn't supposed to be the point to. To what we're doing. And be destroyed by, you know, I mean, you're going to be destroyed, destroyed by it, you know? I mean, it's like. You know. So. You know. Not a whole lot to say about it, but that we are all striving for perfection.

42.) Anyways. But there there's the first answer that I mentioned from behind the night sky was we go back to the toddler in the pool. There was this small, small idea that there was nothing wrong with turning your back on the baby that was drowning in the pool. That you weren't supposed to know that. You were supposed to be dreaming and sleep laughing it off.

43.) You know, right after that there could have been a creature in the woods, or maybe it's my mind, but something was. You know, continued onward. The battle of the conversation that you know it's. You know what, once you

BRENDON GMC HOLDEN

figure out what's what and you and you watch the child die because you were not strong enough to say that. Well, then you must need. To ramp up the evil a little bit. I mean, you don't get to even. You're going to, you know, you're going to be completely evil, which, you know, I mean, you knew to pull the patellar out. If you were strong enough and why not get strong enough, then... And so, they're coming up with these poison plants, you know, the wild Kingdom, to make sure that their habitations aren't robbed one day, you know, And that's their way of perfection. So, they're becoming evil to make perfection what it is, which is the reason why we're here, which is not augmentable.

44.) I mean, there's nothing to argue with about it, except. You know, they're making, they have grown evil and there was never anything wrong with that. There wasn't something wrong with it, except that we're going to have to go into service and it's very possible that at some point we're going to be chosen to be perfect through these like trials and tribulations.

45.) But it's not going to be seen like that, so I mean. It that's all, that's all that is. I mean that that we're going to get thrust on the the fate of the universe and we're going to be perfected. That's all that is. And that was a child in the pool.

46.) And so, you know, there there's an idea. That you could choose not to know what was happening in that pool. Now it's very possible a doctor could come around and call you sick and insane and try to medicate you back to something more purposeful or useful. But The thing is, is, is that deep conversation? Is that? We don't need to know that. And when you think about these people coming up with poison plants, you almost want to say, oh, don't grow an evil man, just let it go. We'll go do something else. You know, so it's the same idea. I mean as soon as you pull that child out of the pool. You know, it was a little bit evil there and children will see that and say oh man, just having a good time, you know. I got a fox stuff up.

47.) You know, I mean, well, you got to be like that now. Now we can't even go next to the pool. You know, you're going to be talking about something weird. You're probably going to slap us from time to time because you think something can happen, you know, and if perfect is perfect and it would never happen, why not?

48.) You know, maybe you ought to go into the pool and go for a swim yourself, you know?

49.) And if you need help, you know. You got to hold your head on there.

50.) Yeah.

51.) And the little child could say that, and you know in innocence and there's that way, there's that, those thoughts.

52.) Better to think about and. Um. It kind of hurts to think that. Maybe we didn't choose it, but we were. We like Eva. Somehow. We like something that is not perfect.

53.) I mean cause there's not really a decision there, but there is a. You know there's a some evil holding us here. You know, with his family or friends or? Some guilt trip, somebody going to put on you for a watching your child drowning in the pool, doctors come over and kind of medication.

54.) And this whole time you think, what are they for? You know? And you know, making sure you get the full, full scope of what's up, you know?

55.) And they give you this medicine that's giving you headaches, nausea, and you know. Just for just for just for just for thinking that it wasn't you know it was not a serious ordeal that you could just you were dreaming, you know and then they tried to wake you up with some akin needle in the arm every day and you're getting sick and headaches and that's what life is and. Um, it's, uh, it's the thoughts. You know that that needle and stuff. Is, uh, something we could think we don't want to do?

56.) But in the other light. You know. We would want to be strong enough to protect our properties, to protect our children. And the only way to be strong enough was to accept that it was evil. And come up with a better weapon. So that way the next time somebody was strong. You could pull your dying child out of the swimming pool. And suppose it's growing up, in a sense, towards perfection, but it's nowhere near just looking back. And I've tried that and there was a little bit of guilt there. And that's just the medicine pretty much to, uh, keep on in this life.

57.) Another, you know, little negative demon comes over and say, oh man, you know. Has a way of moving, you know that. Joking makes you feel like uh. It was something better and never tells you that. You wanted to be guilty.

58.) And you wanted to burn up Big Yell through some passionate fiery heat and laughing with the Duck devil. That. You know, he doesn't have to be guilty either, you know, and make him a little party about the guilt stuff. And maybe he'll go away. But that was just to think about. I don't know.

59.) I don't know myself that well, but There're things that keep me here so. And think I was going to perfection anytime soon. And if I did go to perfection, I would still want to. Why? Why would somebody waste? You know. My goodness, like that. It is ***** up. He ***** up. Still, there's ***** up like put it on somebody on Social Security like that. Alright man, you got to do that. Just, you know, fit me in your job and stuff. But you know, you know what? What is fucked up? I mean, it's fucked up somehow. Faking your own foot, man? Something's sick out there. Or fix it.

JUST TYPE IT



CITY OF ORION

The place to go
to get paid for
Typing anything
and everything!

1 Letter=\$00.00001

- Non refundable
- Must be freshly typed.

"The power to hold together humanity!"

-City of Orion

POWERED BY HUMANITY

"The powerful solution!"

-The Gates of Orion



"I need to know! I need to know, but I'm too young to know— how do I understand my surroundings if one word can have several meanings... I must find the knowledge of all things (and I did!) ...This is my journey!"

BADEN HOLTEN